

PEDIGREE CHART

Averill Ancestors

Norma Hansen Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same person as No. 421 on chart No. A2

City, State Greenfield, WI
Date 9 Oct 1991

(11) Elizabeth Ann 1635 1015 Wick
(1684) Thomas Emerson 1015 Wick
bapt. 26 July 1894 (Father of No. 2)
p.b. Sedgfield Parish, Durham, England
m. 1 July 1611 - St Michael's Church
p.m. Bishops Stortford, Herts.
d. 1 May 1666
p.d. Ipswich, Essex, MA

(10) (Rev) John Emerson
bapt 26 Feb 1625 (Father of No. 1)
p.b. Bishops Stortford, Herts, Eng.
m. Mar 1659
d. 12 Dec 1700
p.d. Gloucester, Essex, MA

(165) Elizabeth Brewster
(Mother of No. 2)
b. ca 1572
p.b. (? Searcy, Notts?)
d. after 1666
p.d. Ipswich, Essex, MA

(9) Martha Emerson
b. 28 Nov. 1662
p.b. Gloucester, Essex, MA
m. 9 Oct 1685
p.m. Ipswich, Essex, MA
d. 4 Apr 1708
p.d. Ipswich

(1686) (Rep. Gov.) Samuel Symonds
(Father of No. 3)
bapt 9 June 1595
p.b. Great Yeldham, Essex, Eng
m. 1637
p.m. Salisbury, MA Bay Colony
d. 12 Oct 1678 - Boston
p.d. Buried Ipswich

(843) Ruth Symonds
(Mother of No. 1)
b. ca 1640
p.b. Ipswich
d. 23 Feb 1702
p.d. Gloucester Essex, MA

(1687) Martha Reade (Daniel Epes)
(Mother of No. 3)
b. 1602
p.b. Wickford, Essex, Eng.
d. 1662
p.d. Ipswich

(420) William Cogsweel, Jr.
(Spouse of No. 1)
b. 4 Dec 1659 d. 4 Apr 1709
p.b. Ipswich MA p.d. Ipswich MA

(12) Robert Emerson
b. ca 1536? (Father of No. 4)
p.b. Bishops Stortford, Hertfordshire
m. 24 Nov 1578
p.m. Bishops Stortford
d. 16 Jan 1620 (buried)
p.d. Bishops Stortford

(3369) Susan Crabbe
(Mother of No. 4)
b. ca 1556?
p.b. Herts, Eng.?
d. 20 Nov 1626
p.d. Bishops Stortford, Herts.

(3370) Brewster
(Father of No. 5)
b. The Emerson Genealogy
m. Postulates Elizabeth was
p.m. child of Mary & John Wintney
d. Brewster. They did have a
p.d. daughter Elizabeth thought to
have died in Holland

(3371) Sister that was then a
(Mother of No. 5)
b. rather common surname
p.b. No proof at all was
d. offered
p.d. offered

(3772) Richard Symonds
(Father of No. 6)
b. 1560
p.b. Newport emslop, Shropshire
m. 9 Jan 1581
p.m. Great Yeldham Church, Essex
d. 8 July 1627
p.d. Gr Yeldham, Essex - "Pole Hall"

(3373) Elizabeth Plum (ca Plumm)
(Mother of No. 6)
b. 9 Dec. 1560
p.b. Yeldham Hall, Gr. Yeldham, Essex
d. 24 Jan 1610/11
p.d. Gr. Yeldham - "Pole Hall"

(3374) (Colonel) Edmund Reade, Gent.
(Father of No. 7)
b. 23 May 1563
p.b. Wickford, Essex, England
m. 2 Aug 1594
p.m. Wickford
d. 10 Dec 1623
p.d. Wickford

(3375) Elizabeth Cocheal *
(Mother of No. 7)
b. 15
p.b. Pebmarsh, Essex, Eng
d. 1637 (as Mrs Peters)
p.d. probably Essex, Eng. (possibly Sudham MA)

(13) Thomas Emerson
b. before 1540
m. Ramford
d. at Great Dunmow, Essex

(14) Rolf Emerson?
of Foston, Eng.
Paid arms in 1535 (according to Genealogy)

(17) Crabbe
(Father of No. 9)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(18) Crabbe
(Mother of No. 9)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(19) Crabbe
(Mother of No. 9)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(20) Brewster
(Father of No. 10)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(21) Brewster
(Mother of No. 10)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(22) Brewster
(Father of No. 11)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(23) Brewster
(Mother of No. 11)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(24) John Symonds
(Father of No. 12)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(25) John Benbow
(Father of No. 13)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(26) Robert Plumm
(Father of No. 14)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(27) Elizabeth Parcas (Pincas)
(Mother of No. 13)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(28) William Reade
(Father of No. 14)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(29) William Reade
(Father of No. 14)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(30) William Reade
(Father of No. 14)
Cont. on chart No. A8 (16)

(31) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(32) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

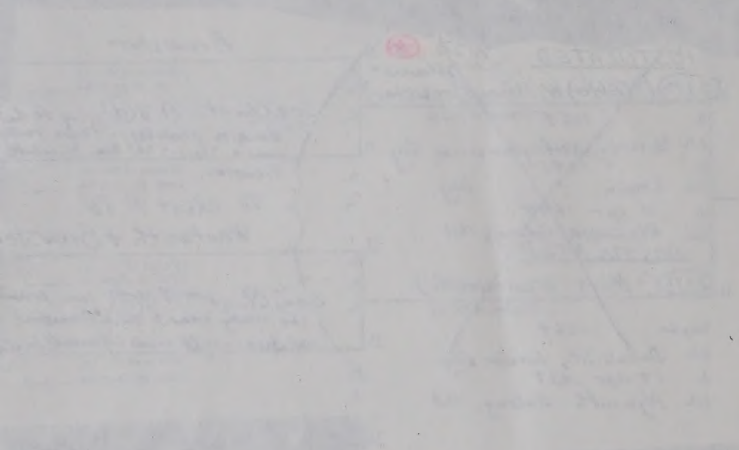
(33) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(34) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(35) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(36) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____

(37) Susan Brand
(Mother of No. 15)
Cont. on chart No. _____



Family Record

(Aveill Ancestors)
Family No.
Emerson (in England)
Surname

Father - Robert EMERSON

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1580?	Great Dunmow	Essex	England	There 2 towns 7 miles apart	
Birth	16pt 25	Oct	1581?				(a town bapt of Gr. J in 1562 & a town " " in 1565)	
Buried	6	Jan	1620	Bishop's Stortford	Hertfordshire	"	his siblings? - ch. of Thos. J. R.	
Married	24	Nov	1578	"	"	(age ca 18?)		
Occupation	called "carrier" (may mean			Military	Church			
Places Lived	Oswestry on the great part system - "master of horse") - owned field called "Muggles Dale" - earlier called (Muggles)							
Other Wives	"Maggie Deane"							
(If Thomas was his father, he married very young, a girl slightly older)				His Father's Name		? Thomas Emerson		(early settled of Rufford, Essex)
				His Mother's Maiden Name		Joan		

Mother - Susan CRABB

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1586		Hertfordshire?	England		
Death		(age about 70)						
Buried	20	Nov	1626	Bishop's Stortford	Herts	"		
Occupation				Military	Church			
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								
Her Father's Name						Crabb		
Her Mother's Maiden Name								

(known)
Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Alice Emerson	Birth	22	Nov	1579	Bishop's Stortford	Herts	England	
	Spouse - no further record	Death							
		Married							
2.	Margaret Emerson	Birth	21	Feb	1581-2	Bishop's S.			
	Spouse - T. Browne	Death				Southwark			
		Married							
3.	Thomas Emerson	Birth	26	July	1584	Bishop's S.			
	Spouse - Elizabeth Browne	Death							
		Married	1	July	1611	Bishop's S.			
4.	Anne Emerson	Birth							
	Spouse - J. Rogers	Death			16				
		Married	1	July	1611				
5.	Robert Emerson, Jr.	Birth	12	Apr	1586	Bishop S.			
	Spouse - (not in file, wife)	Death			before 1625?				
		Married							
6.	John Emerson (in wife)	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death			Living 1620				
		Married							
7.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

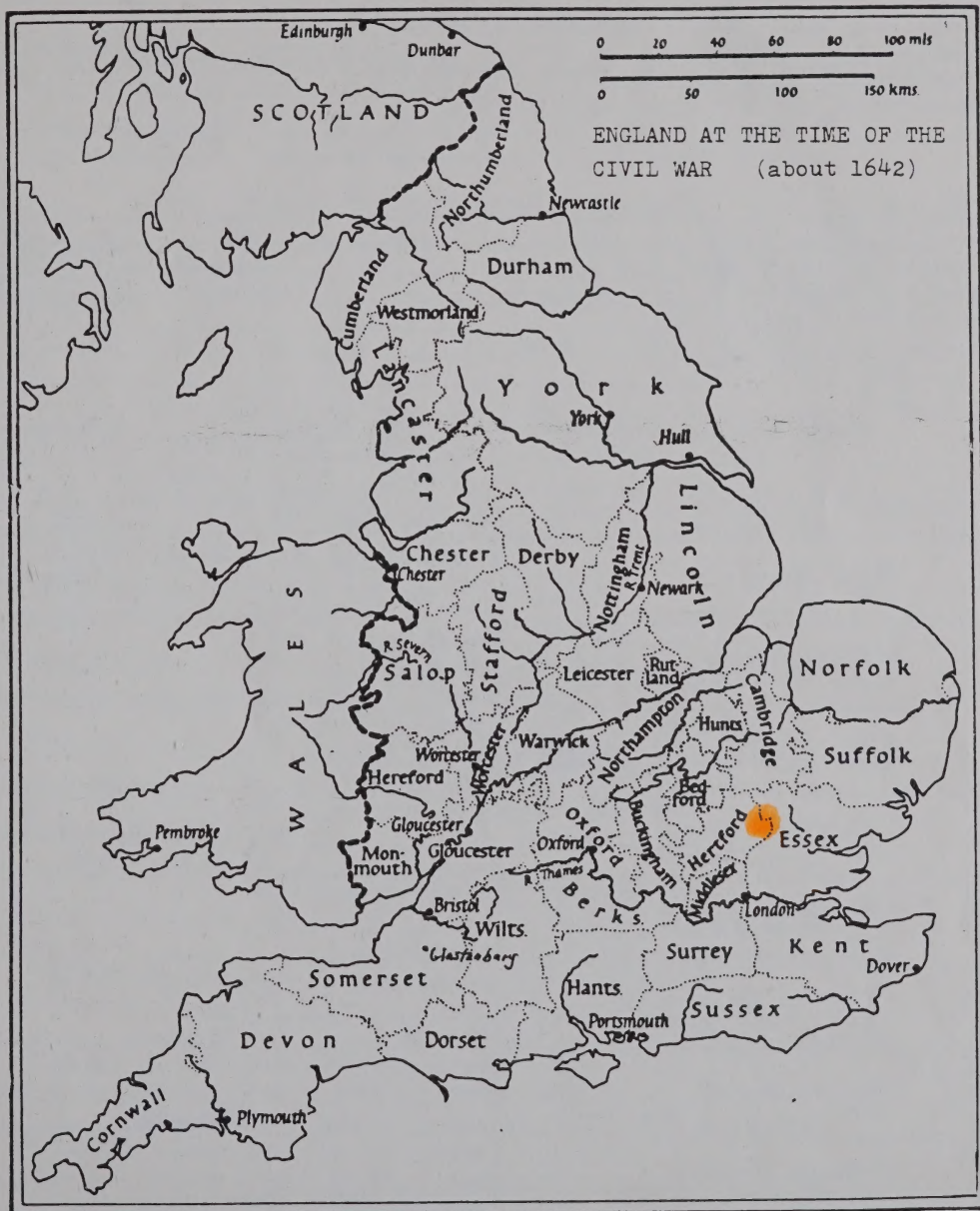
Additional children listed on the reverse side.







Thomas Emerson and his parents and probable grandparents lived in the shaded area, about 30 miles north of London. Though a sister married a Mr Browne & moved to Southwark (Surrey) a London suburb, it is hard to imagine that his great grandparents came from Durham or Northern Yorkshire, as postulated by early genealogies. What would have been the reason to move so far? There was also speculation his wife was somehow connected with the Mayflower-Brewsters of Scrooby (Nottingham area). Without proof of strong motivation, these things do not seem logical to me. ny





REPORT - NAME: EMERSON

DATE: 1/1/20

Emerson was a leading figure of the Transcendentalist movement in the early 19th century. He was a writer, lecturer, and philosopher who emphasized the individual's connection with nature and the divine. His works, including "Nature," "The Over-soul," and "Self-Reliance," have inspired generations of readers. Emerson's philosophy of self-reliance and the importance of the individual's inner life is a central theme in his writing.

Emerson's influence on American literature and thought is profound. He is often credited with the development of the American Romantic movement. His ideas about the individual's relationship with nature and the divine have been central to the American literary tradition. Emerson's works continue to be read and studied today, and his philosophy remains a source of inspiration for many people.

Topic	Notes
Emerson's early life	Emerson was born on September 3, 1803, in Concord, Massachusetts. He was the son of a farmer and a schoolteacher. He was educated at the Concord Academy and Harvard University.
Emerson's education	Emerson attended the Concord Academy and Harvard University. He graduated from Harvard in 1825 with a degree in divinity.
Emerson's career	Emerson worked as a teacher, a minister, and a lecturer. He was also a writer and a philosopher. He is best known for his essays and lectures on the Transcendentalist movement.
Emerson's philosophy	Emerson's philosophy is based on the idea of the individual's connection with nature and the divine. He believed that the individual should rely on their own inner strength and intuition, rather than on external authority.
Emerson's influence	Emerson's influence on American literature and thought is profound. He is often credited with the development of the American Romantic movement. His ideas about the individual's relationship with nature and the divine have been central to the American literary tradition.
Emerson's works	Emerson's works include "Nature," "The Over-soul," "Self-Reliance," and many other essays and lectures. His works have been translated into many languages and are still widely read today.

Family Record

(Averill Ancestors)

Family No.

Emerson

①

Surname

Father - Thomas EMERSON (Emmerson)

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	26	July	1784	Bishop's Stortford	Hertfordshire	England		
Death	1	May	1866	Ipswich	Essex	Mass. Bay Colony		
Buried								
Married	1	July	1611	St. Michael's Ch., Bishop's Stortford				
Occupation	Schocktopian 1646, German			Military		Church	Puritan	
Places Lived	(Sometimes called "baker" - seems to have been much too prosperous for that?)							
Other Wives								

His Father's Name Robert Emerson

His Mother's Maiden Name Susan Crabb

Mother - Elizabeth BREWSTER

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Age	Notes	No.
Birth		ca.	1590			England		Magdalen Doc 16 - p. 10 re: call of Robert Haverley dated 11 Apr 1601 (Haverley's first son, son of Elizabeth Brewster - probably not cons.)	
Death		after	1666	Ipswich?					
Buried									
Occupation	Military					Church	Pastor		
Places Lived									
Other Husbands									

Her Father's Name Brewster

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children - All nine baptized at Bishop's Stortford

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Robert Emerson	Birth	29	May	1612	Bishop's Stortford			
	Spouse - Elizabeth Crabb	Death			16			(Stayed in England)	
		Married	22	Oct	1635	"			
2.	Benjamin Emerson	Birth	20	Oct	1648	"			
	Spouse - 1 week old	Death	27	"	"	"			
		Married			-				
3.	Ralph Emerson	Birth	19	Oct	1615	"			
	Spouse - age 11 - killed by falling from tree	Death		June	1626	"			
		Married			-				
4.	(Lt Col.) James Emerson (See Lydia in book)	Birth	16	Feb	1617	"			
	Spouse - Lydia (? Roberts)	Death			1664	(did not come to America)		Tangiers	
		Married			16	Bishop's Stortford			
5.	(Rev) Joseph Emerson (lived York, Me, Mendon, etc.)	Birth	25	June	1620	"			
	Spouse - ① Elizabeth Woodmansey	Death	3	Jan	1680	Concord		MA	
	② Elizabeth Buckleway	Married	②	7	Dec	1665	Concord		
6.	Elizabeth Brewster	Birth	14	Jan	1623	Bishop's Stortford			
	Spouse - ① John Fawcett (1666)	Death	①	ca	1642	Ipswich		MA	
	② Thomas Perria	Married	②	ca	1670	Ipswich		"	
7.	(Rev) John Emerson	Birth	26	Feb	1625	Bishop's Stortford			
	Spouse - Ruth Symonds (1646-1702)	Death	2	Dec	1700	Gloicester			
		Married		Mar	1659	Ipswich			
8.	Nathaniel Emerson	Birth	18	July	1630	Bishop's Stortford			
	Spouse - ① Sarah	Death	18	Dec	1719	Ipswich			
	② Lydia (Monsieur) Wallis (sister Nathaniel)	Married	②	ca	1656	Sturbridge			
				ca	1684				
9.	Susan Emerson (is this Sarah?)	Birth	17	Mar	1612	Bishop's Stortford			
	Spouse - child age 8 May be confused pertaining with Susan Fawcett	Death	28	Dec	1640			(see Boston records - called Sarah) Pope's Pinneus mentions Susan F. as being in wedd - mistake?	
		Married			-				
10.	Elizabeth (s daughter) in Thomas F's will	Birth							
		Death							
	Spouse -	Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information -- then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

(Averill Emerson).

Emerson

Signature

Father - (Rev) John Emerson

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	bp	26	Feb	1625	Bishop's Stortford,	Hertfordshire	England	Sapientist - believed in extras
Death	2	Dec	1700	Gloucester		Massachusetts	also that French & Indians being	
Buried	Mar	16	59				around was really devils in disguise.	
Married								
Occupation	Parson Minister - Graduate Military: Fanner Ipswich 19 Dec 1648 Church: Parson							
Places Lived	Harvard College 1652 - ordained 6 Oct 1663 In addition to his property in Gloucester, including all or part of 3000, he							
Other Wives	owned 3 farms in Ipswich. He was first minister of Gloucester. (In July 1661 his salary was £60 yr "in con. peace &c.")							
				His Father's Name		Thomas Emerson		
				His Mother's Maiden Name		Elizabeth Brester		

Mother - Ruth SYMONDS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1640			Mass Bay Colony	Her father died the couple 250 acres	
Death	22	Feb	1702	Gloucester		MA	& land at Cape Porpoise (Kennebec Bay)	
Buried							Maine ca. 16 Nov 1652, her brother	
Occupation					Military		Harlekenon Symonds died then another	
Places Lived						Church	600A in Maine in 1693.	
Other Husbands								

for children of William & Marthe (Emerson) Cogswell.

Her Father's Name (Deputy Gov) Samuel Symonds

Her Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Reed

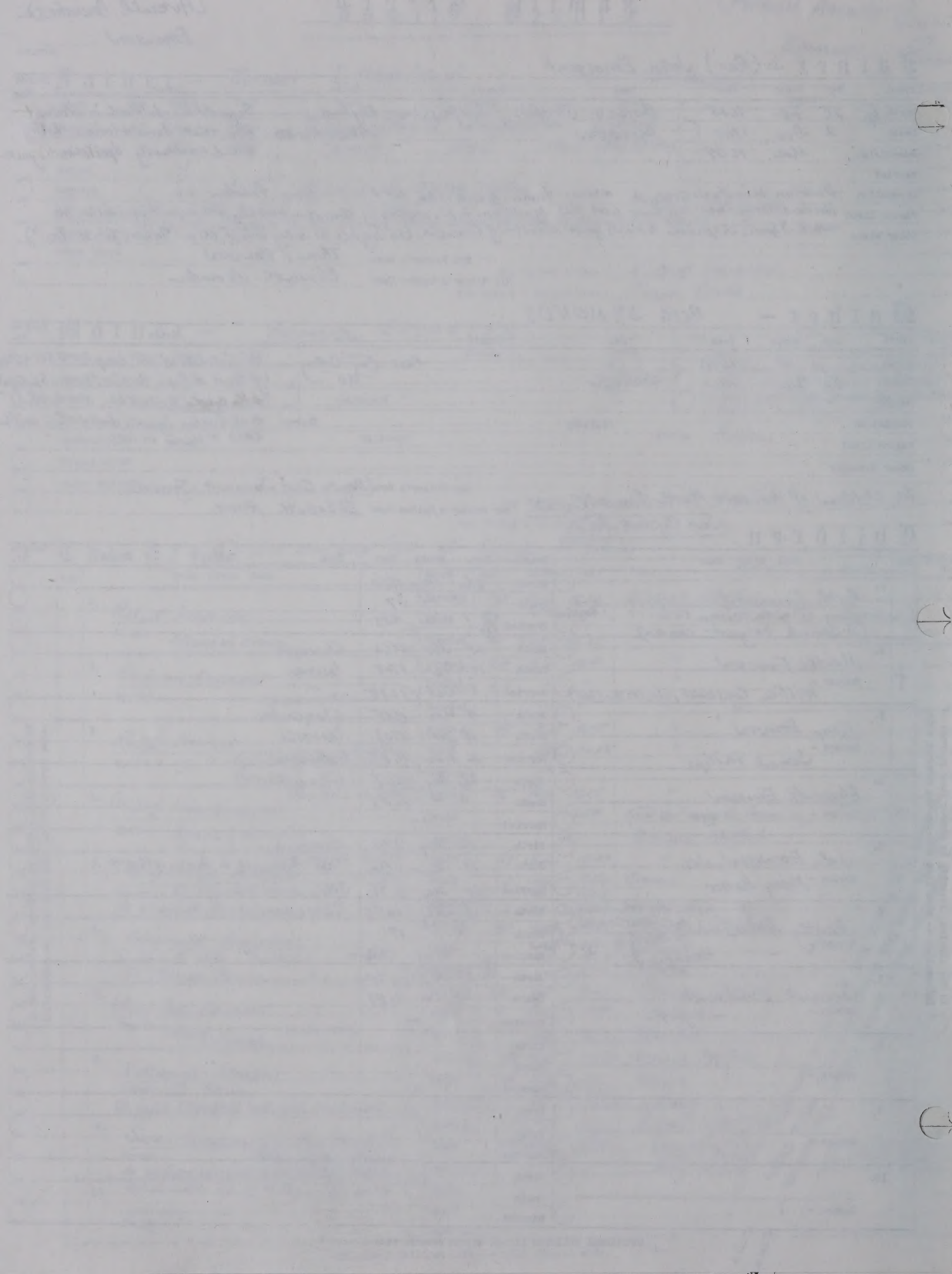
Children See Cogswell Family

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Ruth Emerson	Birth	26	Aug	1660				
	Spouse - (1) Jan Newman (1660-17) Haverhill	Death			17				
	(2) Samuel Sergeant (son-in-law)	Married	21	Dec	1683				
2.	Marthe Emerson	Birth	28	Nov	1662	Gloucester			
	Spouse - William Cogswell, Jr. (1659-1708)	Death	14	Apr	1708	Ipswich			
		Married	9	Oct	1685	"			
3.	Mary Emerson	Birth	7	Mar	1665	Gloucester			
	Spouse - Samuel Phillips	Death	4	Oct	1703	Ipswich			
		Married	26	Mar	1687	Waterbury			
4.	Elizabeth Emerson	Birth	26	Aug	1667	Gloucester			
	Spouse - - age 16 -	Death			1683	"			
		Married							
5.	John Emerson, Jr.	Birth	14	May	1670	Gloucester			
	Spouse - Mary Bather	Death	21	June	1732	1660 Newcastle & Portsmouth NH			
		Married	14	May	1696	Salem			
6.	Deatly Emerson	Birth	6	July	1675	Gloucester			
	In 1702 her mother conveyed her interest in Haverhill to Deatly E. Singleton	Death			17				
	Spouse - Henchman	Married			after 1702				
7.	Samuel Emerson	Birth	30	Nov	1678	"			
	Spouse - - age 9 -	Death			4 Dec 1687				
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
		Birth							
		Death							
10.									
	Spouse -								

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Jury of trials: Tho. Bishop, Andrew Hodges, Tho. Emerson, John Dane, Tho. Scott, Dan. Hovey, Hugh Smith, Willm. Tenye, Hen. Short, Rich. Browne, Rich. Doell and Jo. Remington.

Emerson side. 25-7.





The Emerson House - Ipswich, Massachusetts - Turkey Shore Farm
Built in 1650 by Thomas Emerson
Father of Reverend John Emerson

Sketch of house from Grosvenor-Haldeman
Genealogy.



Map in
Ipswich Historical
Soc. Publ. #19

(John Tattle was
also our ancestor in
another line.)

Page from: Every Town in Massachusetts by John Warner Barber (1894)

band, and lodged in a hemlock tree. Turning round, he saw four men advancing toward him with guns on their shoulders. There were others who saw where the bullet had lodged and cut off the pine bush. For three weeks the alarm was so great that two regiments were raised, and a company of sixty men from Ipswich, under the command of Major Appleton, was sent to their succor. The Rev. John Emerson, the clergyman of the town, says "all rational persons will be satisfied that Gloucester was not alarmed for a fortnight together by real Frenchmen and Indians, but that the devil and his agents were the cause of all that befel the town." Another writer asks "whether Satan did not set ambushments against the good people of Gloucester, with demons, in the shape of armed Indians and Frenchmen, appearing to a considerable number of the inhabitants, and mutually firing upon them for the best part of a month together."

The following is taken from a pamphlet, entitled "Report of a Committee of the Linnæan Society of New England, relative to a large Marine Animal, supposed to be a Serpent, seen near Cape Ann, Massachusetts, August, 1817." The letter is from the Hon. Lonson Nash, of Gloucester.

Gloucester, Sept. 9, 1817.

SIR: Your favor of the second inst. has been received. The vote of thanks of the Linnæan Society for my services was highly gratifying to me, not simply on account of the high consideration I entertain for the members of that laudable institution, but likewise for the agreeable manner and respectable channel through which their vote of thanks was communicated to me.

I have seen and conversed with the woman who was said to have seen the serpent dormant on the rocks, near the water, to whom you refer in yours; but she can give no material evidence. She says that she saw something resembling a large log of wood on the rocks, on the extreme eastern point of Ten Pound Island, (a small island in our harbor,) resting partly on the rocks and partly in the water. The distance was about half a mile. She took a glass, looked at the object, and saw it move. Her attention was for a short time arrested by some domestic avocation, and when she looked for the object again it had disappeared.

You request a detailed account of my observations relative to the serpent. I saw him on the fourteenth ultimo, and when nearest I judged him to be about two hundred and fifty yards from me. At that distance I judged him in the larger part about the size of a half barrel, gradually tapering towards the two extremes. Twice I saw him with a glass, only for a short time, and at other times with the naked eye for nearly half an hour. His color appeared nearly black—his motion nearly vertical. When he moved on the surface of the water, the track in his rear was visible for at least half a mile.

His velocity, when moving on the surface of the water, I judged was at the rate of a mile in about four minutes. When immersed in the water, his speed was greater, moving, I should say, at the rate of a mile in two, or at most in three minutes. When moving under water, you could often trace him by the motion of the water on the surface, and from this circumstance I conclude he did not swim deep. He apparently went as straight through the water as you could draw a line. When he changed his course, it diminished his velocity but little—the two extremes that were visible appeared rapidly moving in opposite directions, and when they came parallel they appeared not more than a yard apart. With a glass I could not take in at one view the two extremes of the animal that were visible. I have looked at a vessel at about the same distance, and could distinctly see forty-five feet. If he should be taken, I have no doubt that his length would be found seventy feet, at least, and I should not be surprised if he should be found one hundred feet long. When I saw him I was standing on an eminence on the sea-shore, elevated about thirty feet above the surface of the water, and the sea was smooth. If I saw his head I could not distinguish it from his body, though there were sea-faring men near me who said they could distinctly see his head. I believe they spoke truth, but, not having been much accustomed to look through a glass, I was not so fortunate.

I never saw more than seven or eight distinct portions of him above the water at any one time, and he appeared rough, though I suppose this appearance was produced by his motion. When he disappeared he apparently sunk directly down like a rock. Capt. Beach has been in Boston for a week past, and I am informed that he is still there.

But this page shows
he was not the only
person in Gloucester
who saw things.

(This last 25 years
later)

a hig
7

IPSWICH VILLAGE AND THE OLD ROWLEY ROAD.

Pages 62-3

The Thomas Emerson Farm.

Under date of January 1st, 1638, the entry occurs in the Town Records:

"Granted to Thomas Emerson sixty foure acres of upland adjoining to Goodman Mussies farne and sixteen acres of meadow as near as may be found."

February 10, 1640. "Agreed that what lands Thomas Emberson shall want of his 80 acres (yielded to the Towne upon Rowley business) after the marsh is laid out to him, Mr. William Payne and George Giddings shall allow him in some convenient place."

February 23, 1643. "The committie apoynted to laye out Goodman Emerson's farne did report to the Towne that they left two rod between it and the lyne that runs between Rowley and us for a highway for those farms that are shut from the Common."

Thomas Emerson of Ipswich, a baker by trade, sold to Joseph Jewett of Rowley, his farm, "granted by the Town of Ipswich, four score acres on the south side of Prospect hill, bounded southeast by Richard Kimball and John Pickard, northeast by John Cross, northwest by a highway 2 rod broad lying between the Towne of Rowley and said farm, southwest by the Cow common of Ipswich." June 13, 1650. (Ipswich Deeds 1:71.)

Pages 22-3

Lot No. 3.

An old lot, about 10 acres, was drawn by

"Perkins Abraham $\frac{1}{2}$ one at y^e Island & Jewett Nehemiah Esqr^r $\frac{1}{2}$ one by the Town each one half Drew No. 3."

Ephraim Jewett sold the half drawn by Nehemiah Jewett to Stephen Perkins, March 28, 1727 (49:175), and Hannah Perkins, widow and executrix of Beamsley Perkins, mariner. Stephen Glazier, fisherman, one of the children of sd Hannah Perkins and legatee of Beamsley, Benjamin Glazier of Ipswich, another child of Hannah and legatee, Thomas Treadwell 3^d and Sarah, his wife, which Thomas is a cordwainer, Hannah and Martha Perkins, spinsters and children of Beamsley, sold half of No. 3 to Stephen Perkins, shopkeeper, Jan. 25, 1727-8 (50:132).

The other half had been drawn by Abraham Perkins, father of Capt. Beamsley. The deed recalls an interesting episode. On May 27, 1700, Abraham Perkins complained that Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester had married his son, Beamsley, some two years before to Hannah Glazier "in private." She was the daughter of Nathaniel Emerson Sen. of Ipswich, and had married Zacharias Glazier April 24, 16[86?]. The Quarter Sessions Court passed a severe sentence on June 25th, 1700.

"Mr. John Emerson of Gloucester, minister, being complained of by John Appleton, County Treasurer, for marrying Beamsley Perkins and Hannah Glasier, both of Ipswich, sometime in the year 1697, contrary to the law of the Province, was sentenced to pay £50 fine and to be forever hereafter disabled to joyn persons in marriage & pay costs." He appealed to the next Superior Court, but he died on Dec. 2nd.



Robert evidently married, first, ANNA, identified as the mother of his daughter Anna who married John Cutler (George Madison Bodge, *Soldiers in King Philip's War* [Boston, 1906], 285). Research in England suggests the possibility that she was Anna Richardson (see below), but further evidence is needed. By 1644, Robert was married to MARGARET who survived him.

It has been claimed that Robert Woodmansee came to America with the Winthrop Fleet in 1630, and that he was the father of Gabriel Woodmansee of New London (Frederick Adams Virkus, *The Compendium of American Genealogy*, vol. 7 [1942, repr., Baltimore, 1968], 249). The writer has been unable to find any documentation whatsoever of these statements. Theodora Blanche Burroughs, in "The Burroughs Family of Enfield" (typescript, 1942-1969, copy at Fort Wayne Public Library, 113) carries this apparent guesswork a step further, stating that not only did Robert Woodmansee come with the Winthrop Fleet, but also that he was born at Groton, co. Suffolk (from which a large number of the Winthrop passengers are known to have come). A genealogist commissioned to examine the Groton parish registers and bishop's transcripts found not a single Woodmansee baptismal entry (including variant spellings) at Groton in the period 1590-1635, nor a marriage between 1620 and 1635.

It has also been alleged that Robert Woodmansee of Boston was Robert Woodmansey of Cherry Burton, Yorkshire (Marjorie Webster Schunke in *Rhode Island Genealogical Register* [hereinafter *RIGR*], 4[1981]:349, citing LDS Archival sheets). However, the registers of that parish (Arthur T. Winn, *The Registers of the Parish Church of Cherry Burton, Co. York, 1652-1740*, Yorkshire Parish Register Society [1903]), indicate that the Robert Woodmansey living there from 1622/3, when his son Daniel was baptized (p. 7), was himself buried there 1 February 1657/8 (p. 83).

The best clue found to date is from the parish registers of Kirk Ella, Yorkshire, which contain the marriage record of Robert Woodmansey and Anna Richardson, 29 November 1621 (*The Register of Kirk Ella, Co. York* [London, 1897], 38). An Anna Richardson, daughter of Thomas, was baptized there 1 May 1589 (*ibid.*, 16), but if this was the same Anna who married Robert in 1621 she was a 32-year old bride, married to a man perhaps four years her junior, and thus 37 or 38 when daughter Anna was born in 1626 or 1627. There are no other entries in the Kirk Ella registers relating to Robert Woodmansey.

The name Gabriel Woodmansee has not been found anywhere in early English records.** It is virtually certain that Robert never lived in New

* Other possibilities for Robert Woodmansee are (1) Robert, son of John, bp. 9 July 1587 in Maulden, co. Bedford (F. G. Emmison, *Bedfordshire Parish Registers*, 22 [1940], A3), but he seems too old; and (2) Robert, father of a Mary Woodmansee bp. 26 Sept. 1624 at St. Andrew, Norwich, co. Norfolk (St. Andrew PRs, on FHL microfilm 993,970), but no other clues point to Norfolk.

** Considerable effort has been expended to try to trace Robert and Gabriel Woodmansee back to their origins in Britain. A search of the International Genealogical Index (IGI) shows the name Woodmansee and spelling variants in thirteen counties of England, but in many

NE 46R 147 (This regards Rev. John's to Rev. Long)

London, Connecticut, and there is no record whatsoever of Gabriel having been in Massachusetts. While it is theoretically possible that Gabriel grew up in Massachusetts without leaving any records there, and then moved on to Maryland and/or Connecticut as a young man in 1663-1665, no evidence has been found to connect him with Robert Woodmansee.

Robert's move with his family from Ipswich to Boston in 1643 is substantiated by the record of his son Seth's birth in Boston, 26 1st mo. [March] 1644 (*Ninth Report of the Record Commissioners, Containing Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths, 1630-1699* [Boston, 1883] [hereinafter *BRC* 9], 18). The baptismal record of his son Joseph calls Robert "a member of the Church at Ipswich," but he evidently lived in Boston until his death.

In his will, dated at Boston 5 July 1667, witnessed by John Hull and Gregory Clement, and proved 15 November 1667 (Suffolk Co. Probate, 1:523) Robert Woodmansey named only two of his children. Calling himself "weake of Body ... having before me the thoughts of my departure out of this world," he bequeathed "my little estate I have left unto me wch lyeth in monyes debts & household stuff and is specified in an inventorie ... to my Beloved wife Margaret and my two daughters Martha and Bathia ... wife Margaret sole executrix ... one halfe to my sd two daughters the rest unto my sd wife excepting some particulars which I have caused to be putt into writing & to be disposed off by my sd executrix according to my sd desire therein"

Of the three sons shown above, only John left records at Boston (or elsewhere that have been discovered).

Children; surname Woodmansee:

By first wife, Anna:

- i. ANNA, b. in England, 1626 or 1627 (calc.), d. 20 Aug. 1683 ("in her 57th yr."); called daughter of Robert and Anna Woodmansee, m. prob. at Charlestown, Mass., say 1651, JOHN CUTLER (Bodge, *Soldiers in King Philip's War*, 285).

Uncertain by which wife:

- ii. ELIZABETH, b. in England, say 1628; d. 1663-1665 (Lola B. Emerson, *Thomas Emerson of Ipswich* [1978], 21-28), m. prob. at Ipswich, Mass., ca. 1646, JOSEPH EMERSON. On 14 Sept. 1652, Joseph Emerson "...with the consent of Elizabeth Emerson, my wife..." conveyed land "...given to me by my father-in-law Mr. Robert Woodmansey ... as a marriage portion with his daughter Elizabeth ..." (Ipswich Deeds, at Essex Co. Court House, Salem, 1:333-34).
- iii. MARY, b. say 1629; d. 21 May 1707 ("aged 78 years") (Thomas Bridgman, *Memorials of the Dead in Boston* [Boston, 1853], 35); m. (1) at Boston, 20 6th month [Aug.] 1654, JOHN TAPPIN (*BRC* 9:48); m. (2), before 8 Nov. 1679, DR. WILLIAM AVERY (New York Genealogical and Biographical Society, Samuel Putnam Avery [1847-1920] Pedigrees [1925], 215-16).

cases the name appears only a few times or only in times more recent than the 17th century. The exception is Yorkshire, where there are many listings, and indeed a village named Woodmansey.

The New England town system, under which land was granted to the town as a corporation, and by it conveyed to members for personal improvement, took that commodity largely out of the domain of speculation and prevented, at least during the seventeenth century, the building up of large land fortunes such as characterized New York.⁶⁶

Ipswich does lack, at least until 1660, the building up of large land fortunes. But this does not mean that large holdings were non-existent. It has already been pointed out that a few prominent citizens amassed sizeable real estate holdings. However, they did not use these lands for speculative purposes or, if they did, they did so in a manner which is not revealed in the records.

Ipswich Landholders

The inhabitants of Ipswich can be divided into definite groups on the basis of landholding. These divisions were: the larger landholders, defined as those men who held 100 or more acres; the small landholders, defined as those holding less than 100 acres; the commoners which included most men in both of the above groups and others not within those two groups; the house lot owners, defined as those who owned only a house lot but no additional acreage; and finally, the non-landowners which consisted mainly of servants and were easily the smallest group.

The large landholders were the most important group in the town. They were the leading politicians and business men of the community. There was definitely some connection between landholding and political, economic, and social status in the town. These men clearly dominated town affairs. There were 71 men who qualified, on the basis of owning 100 or more acres, as large landholders. Out of these 71, 15 owned 400 or more acres. They were:⁶⁷

Richard Saltonstall	2100 acres
✓ Samuel Symonds	1700 acres
William Hubbard	1600 acres
Daniel Denison	1200 acres

66. Thomas Jefferson Wertenbaker, *The First Americans 1607-1690* (New York, 1929), p. 59.

67. This list and the ones to follow were compiled from a study of deeds and land grant records. Acreage is based upon the maximum amount of land held at any one time (n. 21).

Jonathan Wade	1000 acres —
	real estate valued £6000
Jeremy Belcher	900 acres
William Symonds	700 acres
✓ Daniel Epps	700 acres
John Winthrop, Jr.	600 acres
William Paine	600 acres
Samuel Appleton	500 acres
John Whipple	460 acres
William Goodhue	425 acres
Thomas Kimball	422 acres
✓ John Perkins, Jr.	400 acres

All but two of these men (Thomas Kimball and William Symonds) held a major political position in the town at one time or another before 1660. Six of them ranked among the top 11 of freeholders in the town.⁶⁸

The remaining large landholders and the acreage they owned were:

✓ John Shatswell	330	William White	240
Nicholas Easton	320	Humphrey Bradstreet	230
✓ John Cogswell	320	James Howe	225
John Spencer	320	Matthew Whipple	225
John Whittingham	300	William Knight	200
Thomas Whittingham	300	William Fellows	200
John Symonds	300	✓ Thomas Emerson	200
✓ John Tuttle	300	Robert Coles	200
William Whitred	260	Simon Bradstreet	200
Thomas Dudley	250	John Norton	180
Thomas Knowlton	170	John Emerson	120
Robert Paine	170	Edward Bragg	120
✓ John Perkins, Sr.	160	Henry Archer	120
✓ George Giddings	160	William Bartholomew	120
Robert Lord	150	William Warner	120
Philip Fowler	150	Robert Muzzey	116
Richard Brabrooke	150	Thomas Scott	110
Thomas Bishop	150	Richard Kimball	110
Corp. John Andrews	150	Samuel Dudley	110
Edward Harinden	150	Thomas Howlett	100
Daniel Ringe	150	Thomas Howlett, Jr.	100
Thomas Firmin	140	Reginald Foster	100
✓ Thomas Boorman, Sr.	140	John Andrews, Sr.	100
John Cross	130	John Dillingham	100
✓ Robert Andrews	130	Robert Cross	100

68. The six men were: Symonds, Hubbard, Denison, Wade, Whipple, and Perkins.

TABLE IV
LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH
MASSACHUSETTS*

William Adams	William Knight
John Annable	John Knowlton
Samuel Appleton	Thomas Knowlton
✓ William Averill	William Knowlton
Henry Bachellor	William Lampson
Robert Beacham	Roger Lancton
Thomas Beery	John Lee
Jeremy Belcher	Thomas Lee
Richard Bisgood	Edward Lumas
Thomas Bishop	Richard Lumkin
✓ Thomas Boarman, Sr.	✓ Thomas Manning
Thomas Bracey	Joseph Medcalfe
Humphrey Bradstreet	Joseph Morse
Simon Bradstreet	Robert Muzzey
Thomas Brewer	Thomas Newman
✓ John Brown	John Norton
Mathias Button	Christopher Osgood
Lionel Chute	William Paine
John Clark, Jr.	Moses Pengry
John Clark, Sr.	✓ John Perkins
Thomas Clark	✓ John Perkins, Jr.
Isaac Comings	✓ John Perkins, Sr.
John Cowley	Allen Perley
Robert Cross	John Pettis
Francis Dane	Henry Pindarr
John Dane, Jr.	Samuel Podd
John Dane, Sr.	John Proctor
John Davis	Mark Quilter
Robert Day	Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Thomas Dorman	Joseph Redding
William Duglas	Nathaniel Rogers
✓ Thomas Emerson	Thomas Safford
William Fellows	Richard Saltonstall
Giles Firmin	Richard Schofield
Thomas Firmin	Thomas Scott
Reginald Foster	John Shatswell
Thomas French	✓ Theophilus Shatswell
John Gage	Richard Smith
Edmund Gardner	Thomas Smith
✓ George Giddings	Simon Stace
William Goodhue	Mark Symonds
Henry Greene	✓ Samuel Symonds
Thomas Hart	✓ John Tuttle
Richard Hatley	Jonathan Wade
Andrew Hodges	Daniel Warner

James Howe	Richard Wattles
Thomas Howlett	Thomas Wells
William Hubbard	John Whipple
✓ John Jackson	✓ Matthew Whipple
Richard Jacob	✓ William White
Francis Jordan	Robert Whitman
Richard Kimball	John Whittingham
Henry Kingsbury	Theophilus Wilson
✓ Robert Kinsman	Robert Woodmansee
Alexander Knight	John Wyatt
	Samuel Younglove

*Ipswich Grants, p. 84.

Within five years need arose for more commonage. The commoners voted in 1665 to divide 800 acres which included Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck. It was to be divided among those with common rights according to the proportion of 4, 6, and 8 based on the amount of taxes paid as follows:⁷⁶

- 4 - those not exceeding 6s. 8d. in a county rate
- 6 - those not exceeding 16s.
- 8 - those exceeding 16s. together with magistrates, and elders

It was decided that a single share would be 3 acres—that is to say that those under the “4” proportion would receive 3 acres; under the “6” proportion 4½ acres; under the “8” proportion 6 acres.⁷⁷ This manner of dividing resulted in the creation of 28 double shares, 70 divisions of 1½ shares, and 105 single-share lots. That meant a total of 203 commoners in the town in 1665, although some of the commoners were not persons. For example, the meetinghouse was given a double share.

The most significant thing about the dividing of the commons in 1665 was the manner in which it was done. By basing it on taxation these records fill the gap caused by the lack of early tax lists. The list of commoners made in 1665 also served as a ranking of material wealth and to some extent social standing. It might be said that the double shareholders were the wealthy and leading citizens. The next group, those receiving 1½ shares, could be considered to be those of upper or middle status. Listed in the first group were the Symonds, the Hubbards, the Appletons, the Paines, the Cogswells, and most of the other names which constantly occur in any discussion of public life in the town.

⁷⁶ Town Records, p. 16.

⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 17.

Nearly two years before the date last given, the town had voted unanimously "to seek out in convenient time for a meete person to come and preach the word of God," and had also voted to raise fifty pounds a year for the maintenance of a minister or elder. From the allusion to Mr. Emerson in the court order, it is reasonable to conclude that the committee, composed of Mr. Stevens and Mr. Bartholomew, who were appointed to seek a minister, had already given him an invitation to settle here. A committee was chosen, in 1659, to treat with him; but it does not appear from any action of the town that he commenced his labors here before 1661. In July of that year, his salary was fixed at sixty pounds per annum as long as he should continue in the ministry; and he was to receive it in Indian corn, pease, barley, fish, mackerel, beef, or pork. From this time, therefore, Rev. John Emerson may be considered the settled pastor of the church.

Mr. Emerson was son of Thomas Emerson of Ipswich. He graduated at Harvard College in 1656; and was ordained as pastor of our church, Oct. 6, 1663. Rev. Mr. Higginson of Salem, with Messrs. Lothrop and Allen of his church, attended the ordination.

In 1672, the town voted that Mr. Emerson should have one-eighth of his salary in money; and afterwards, for several successive years, by a similar vote, he received one-fourth of it in money. In 1679, an addition of eight pounds was made to his salary, to provide him firewood; for which he was to preach a lecture every three weeks, from March to September. He had similar grants in after years, with like conditions annexed. It is not improbable that disputes sometimes arose in regard to the articles in which he received the largest part of his salary: so much, at least, may be inferred from a vote of the town, passed in 1684, appointing John Fitch, Thomas Judkin, and Joseph Allen, "to judge of any pay brought to Mr. Emerson for his salary, whether it be merchantable, and fit to pass from man to man." In 1673, the town voted that he should have eighty pounds to provide himself a house to dwell in. The place of his residence was on the south side of the highway leading from

Brother Rev Thomas Emerson

the Meeting-house Green to Fox Hill. He had thirty acres of land about his homestead, and thirty acres near the burying-place, besides other smaller lots. He was not indifferent to the secular concerns of life; for he became the sole or chief owner of the three principal mills in town: and, though not favorably located for the accumulation of property, he died possessed of a considerable estate. In addition to his property in Gloucester, he owned farms in Ipswich, which probably came to him by inheritance from his father. From the various sources of his worldly prosperity, he derived the pecuniary ability to settle one hundred pounds on his daughter Mary on the day of her marriage.

Mr. Emerson died Dec. 2, 1700, aged seventy-five. No information has come down to us concerning the rank he held among the ministers of his time; but, in the absence of all evidence to the contrary, it may be taken for granted that his character was such as to secure him a large place in the affections of the little flock, whom, to use the language of one of his successors, "he served more than forty years in the gospel of God's dear Son." But one article from his pen is known to be extant, — the account furnished by him, in a letter to Rev. Cotton Mather, of the strange and wonderful occurrences here in 1692. If we call to mind the witchcraft delusion of that year, by which a neighboring town was made the theatre of the most awful tragedy ever enacted in New England, we shall indulge in no astonishment that Mr. Emerson ascribed the cause of the excitement here to diabolical agency.

Mr. Emerson's wife was Ruth, daughter of Deputy-Gov. Symonds. She died Feb. 23, 1702. His children were — Ruth, born in 1660, married, first, John Newman, Esq., Dec. 1, 1683, and next, probably, Samuel Sargent; Martha, 1662, married William Cogswell* of Ipswich; Mary, 1664, married Samuel Phillips of Salem, May 26, 1687, and died Oct. 4, 1703; Elizabeth, 1667, died in 1683; John, 1670; Dorothy, 1675, married a Henchman; and Samuel, 1678, who died in 1687.

* William Cogswell is placed in the list of early settlers; but there appears to be no other reason for putting him there than that he had a son Edward born here Aug. 13, 1686.

Emerson

JOHN, son of our minister, was a graduate of the first class of Harvard College that contained a native of Gloucester. He and John Eveleth, another native of the town, were both graduates of the class of 1689. He appears to have spent the first few years, after graduating, at home with his father; probably in preparation for the ministry. He preached a short time in Manchester; and, in 1701, was residing in Salem, from which place he removed to Ipswich, and in 1703, in a deed, called himself "gentleman" of that town. In May of the last-named year, he received an invitation to settle in the ministry at Newcastle, N.H., and was soon after ordained in that town; where he remained till 1712, when his pastoral connection with the church there was dissolved. He went from Newcastle to Portsmouth, where he was installed in 1715; and continued there till his death, June 21, 1732. Mr. Emerson made a voyage to England in 1708, spent some time in the city of London, and was handsomely noticed by Queen Ann. He married Mary, daughter of Edmund Batter of Salem, by whom he had six daughters who survived him, and several other children who died young.*

*These may Certify whom it doth
concerns that Neighbor Riggs
Rath paye all his Rates to the Minisr
for former years as also for the
years Eighty Nine. John Emerson
Jan: 8. 1689.*

* Who was the Mr. John Emerson, "a worthy preacher at Berwick," that narrowly escaped the sad fate of Major Waldron and twenty others, who were slain by the Indians at the destruction of the garrison at Dover, on the night of the 27th June, 1689, by declining an urgent invitation to lodge there that night? Belknap's History of New Hampshire, vol. i. p. 253, says he was the future minister of Newcastle and Portsmouth; but he was then only just nineteen, and had not graduated. Our State archives contain a document in these words: "1689, — This may certify, that, being sent eastward by the Governor and Council, when I came to Newichewannock (Berwick), Mr. John Emerson being about leaving that place, being helpful to us in his advice and council, and finding himself both house and furniture, served 11 weeks, — from 7th Sept., 1689, to Nov. 23, 1689." The same archives show that "Mr. Emerson, with Mr. Wise, Mr. Hale, and Mr. Rawson," were desired by vote of the Governor and Council, July, 1690, to accompany the general and forces in the expedition against Canada, — to carry on the worship of God in that expedition.

About the time of Mr. Emerson's settlement, a new meeting-house was erected, and was probably the third one built in the town. In 1660, the inhabitants agreed to gather by rate the sum of sixty pounds to build it, besides the boards that should be used upon it; and chose Robert Elwell and Clement Coldam to set forward the work. It was completed before 1664; as, in May of that year, the timber of the old one was in possession of John Kettle, who sold it, with a house and land in the vicinity of the Meeting-house, to Harlakenden Symonds. The building erected stood less than forty years. In 1686, the town voted to build two galleries in it, — one in the eastern, and one in the western end. Of its form, size, or the exact spot it occupied, no knowledge can now be obtained. It is known that it was located on the Meeting-house Plain; and the following item of expenditures upon it, in the year 1698, shows that it was furnished with a bell:—

"Building a galerie and ground ceiling some of ye house,
and under pinning ye house 7. 7. 0.
Ringing the bell and sweeping the house 1. 4. 0.
A man halfe a day to bargain with a carpenter, and drink
at ye same time 3. 0.
A paire of hinges for ye door cost money 1. 10."

No further occasion for allusion to the religious concerns of the town will present itself during the remainder of this century. Mr. Emerson's peaceful ministry expired with the closing month of this period. His congregation, small and weak at the time of his settlement, had about trebled in number; and was left by him in a state of increasing growth and prosperity, which enabled it, in the course of a few years, to send forth companies of worshippers to set up their own places of public religious devotion in remote sections of the town.

(See life on reverse - CAVEAT)

Allied Families

EMERSON FAMILY

EMERSON, THOMAS, Ipswich, Mass.:

Arms: per fess indented or and vert on a bend engrailed azure 3 lions pass arg.

Crest: a lion rampant vert bezantee holding a battle axe gu headed argent.

Motto: In te Domine speravi (In Thee, O Lord, I have placed my hope).

Ref.: *Heraldic Journal* 1:90

Vermont's American Heraldry, Pp. 21, 22, 165, 45, 68.

The name comes from the Saxon name Emar, from Ethelmar, noble, son of the noble. The family traces back to Arméric, arch-deacon of Carlisle and Durham, 1196-1214. The first to use the name was Johannes Emeryson of Branelpeth parish, County of Durham, England, who was born before the year 1300. In the thirteenth century appears the name of Richardus fil Emerici. THOMAS, baker, son of Robert, son of Thomas, a resident of Great Dunmow, Essex, born Bishops Stortford, England, 1584, settled at Ipswich, Massachusetts, 1638.

Reference: *Dir. of Anc. Heads of New Eng. Families, 1620-1700*, Cpl. Frank Holmes, Amer. Hist. Soc., Inc., N.Y., 1923. C. C. Lib. 929 H73 Lib. #75912

I. RALPH EMERSON

RALPH EMERSON was of Foxton and had a coat-of-arms granted in 1535. He descends from Radas (Ralf, Raffé, or Rauff), Emerson of Foxton, Durham, England, but no pedigree is registered with it. In 1569 the general muster of Durham shows 41 Emersons.

II. THOMAS EMERSON

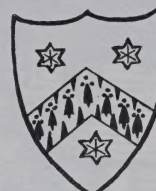
THOMAS EMERSON was born 1540 at Great Dunmow, Essex, England. He had Robert, Joan, and John. He is assumed to be identical with Thomas of Runford, Essex, seven miles from Dunmow and near Bishop's Stortford in Herts where is found the marriage record Nov. 24, 1578, of Robert Emerson to Susan Crabbe.

III. ROBERT EMERSON

ROBERT EMERSON was buried January 6, 1620, at Bishop's Stortford. He married November 24, 1578, at Bishop's Stortford, Susan Crabbe.

IV. THOMAS EMERSON

THOMAS EMERSON, b. Seddsfield Parish, Durham, England; baptized July 26, 1584, Bishop's Stortford, England; married July 1, 1611, ELIZABETH BREWSTER.



BREWSTER

BREWSTER:

Arms: Sa, a chevron, ermine, between 3 stars, arg.

Ref.: *America Heraldica*, p. 31, plate IV

Elizabeth (Brewster) Emerson, according to Stearnes, was the daughter of William Brewster, the Elder of Scrooby. But no mention of her is found in the Brewster records nor in Mayflower lineages, possibly because she had married and was now an Emerson. She may have been related to the Elder, 1567-1644, whose dates coincide closely enough to make it possible that she might be, if not his daughter, perhaps his niece. Thomas Emerson was collector for

Re: encircled items

There is no proof at all that our branch of the Emerson family was connected to the Dacomb or Yorkshire branch, though they used similar given names. Our Thomas naming a son Ralph is highly suggestive but could be coincidence.

Though it is conceivable our Elizabeth (Breaster) Emerson had some connection to the Scrooby crew, and that there seems to have been a missing daughter Elizabeth (who received a small legacy) of Elder William Breaster and his wife Mary - that may have been the child buried in Leyden. Scrooby is an awfully long way from Bishop's Stamford!

(This is such a sweet little brook if it is
Shame to burst the bubble!)

the poor in 1630 according to record in the church warden's book, at St. Michael's church. In 1638 Thomas Emerson of Ipswich, Mass. received a deed for 120 acres from Samuel Greenfield, weaver, and this was "Turkey Shore Farm" which has been in the family for generations since. In 1646 he was one of the "seven men" or selectmen. Inventory was for £225. 3 s. Thomas Emerson built at least a part of the Emerson house, located on Turkey Shore Road at Ipswich. Called the Emerson-Howard House, it was built in 1650. Ipswich, first called "Agawam," an Indian name, was settled in 1630. Thomas Emerson was the father of the Rev. Joseph Emerson, minister of the Congregational Church at Malden, and of the Rev. John Emerson (A.B. Harvard, 1656), minister at Gloucester, Mass., and father of Martha Emerson who married William Cogswell, Jr. The Rev. Joseph Emerson was the great-great-grandfather of Ralph Waldo Emerson. English records show that the Emersons were non-conformists. He probably found difficulty in getting out of England and assumed the occupation of baker which is recorded in Ipswich records, to make his removal less difficult. (Note: Stearnes adds four children to the list given below: Robert, Benjamin, Ralph, and Susan.)

THOMAS EMERSON, born Sedsfield Parish, Durham, England; baptized July 26, 1584; married July 1, 1611, ELIZABETH BREWSTER of Scrooby. Their children were:

1. Elizabeth, m. John Fuller
2. Thomas, m. Elizabeth
3. Rev. Joseph, pastor at Malden, Mass., b. ab. 1620; m. (1) Elizabeth Woodmansey; (2) Dec. 1665, Elizabeth Bulkeley, b. 1638, d. Sept. 4, 1693; he d. Jan. 3, 1680. *Generations descended from Joseph were:*
 - I. Edward, m. Rebecca Waldo; he was b. April 26, 1670, d. May 9, 1743
 - II. Joseph, b. April 20, 1700, d. July 13, 1767; m. Mary Moody, was pastor at Malden, Mass.
 - III. William, b. June 30, 1743, d. Oct. 20, 1776; m. Phebe Bliss
 - IV. William, b. June 5, 1769, d. May 12, 1811; m. Ruth Hoskins
 - V. Ralph Waldo, b. May 25, 1803; noted American poet and essayist.
4. REV. JOHN EMERSON, pastor at Gloucester, Mass., b. 1625, Bishops Stortford, England, d. Dec. 2, 1700; m. RUTH SYMONDS. He was ordained in 1663; died in Gloucester.
5. James (author states there is no proof that he came to America)
6. Nathaniel, m. (1) Sarah, (2) Lydia
7. Sarah, b. Aug. 12, 1640 (Boston record)



The Emerson House - Ipswich, Massachusetts - Turkey Shore Farm

Built in 1650 by Thomas Emerson
Father of Reverend John Emerson

WILLIAM COGSWELL, JR.

William Cogswell, son of William and Susannah (Hawkes) Cogswell, was born Dec. 4th, 1659, in Chebacco, Ipswich, Mass. He married Oct. 9, 1685, Martha Emerson, daughter of Rev. John and Ruth (Symonds) Emerson and granddaughter of Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds. She was born Nov. 28, 1662, in Gloucester, Mass. They lived in Chebacco. Mr. Cogswell died April 14, 1708. Their children were:

- ✓ 1. EDWARD, b. Aug. 13, 1686; m. 1708, Hannah Brown; d. April 17, 1773
2. Martha, m. Oct. 9, 1710, Matthew Whipple
3. William, b. 1688, was killed by Indians in battle 1710
4. Dorothy, b. Aug. 31, 1692; m. _____ Moulton
5. Lucy, b. 1699; m. _____ Moulton
6. Emerson, b. 1700; m. Dec. 30, 1736, Mary Pecker; d. March 29, 1788
7. Eunice, b. 1704

Biographical Notes

"William Cogswell, when a lad, was out from home by the highway, where some men were trying in vain to relieve a cow who had become choked with a potato. There stood by also a young girl, 8 or 10 years old, who watched with interest every effort made. When all experiments failed, and it was suggested that only by someone thrusting his hand down the cow's throat would the cow be saved, she said at once, "My arm is small; I can do it best; you hold her mouth." They did so, and she drew out the potato, to the great relief of the poor cow and all present. The young lad said to himself, "That young Miss by and by shall be my wife." Her name was Martha Emerson; and thus the name of Emerson came into the Cogswell family.

"William Cogswell left an estate of £741 2 s. to be divided among his children, and made his two brothers Jonathon and Lieut. John Cogswell, together with his oldest son, Edward Cogswell, joint administrators of his estate.

William Cogswell, Jr., married Martha Emerson, whose first cousin, Edward Emerson, married William's cousin, Rebecca Waldo. Edward and Rebecca (Waldo) Emerson were the great-great-grandparents of Ralph Waldo Emerson. William Cogswell, Jr.'s sister, Hester, married Samuel Bishop, and their son, John Bishop, had a

daughter, Temperance, who married Captain David Holmes, M.D. David and Temperance (Bishop) Holmes were the great-grandparents of Oliver Wendell Holmes and the great-great-grandparents of Chief Justice O. W. Holmes of the Supreme Court. Thus, both Ralph Waldo Emerson and Oliver Wendell Holmes were lineal descendants of John Cogswell, as are many other early American families such as the Choates, Whittleseys, Symmes, Uphams, Burnhams, etc., etc.

John Emerson, father of Martha, and pastor at Gloucester for 40 years, like all the Emersons, was a rugged individual, who had been known to shout after members of his congregation attempting to leave the service before it was over, "Come back you sinners!" He had various means of keeping the attention of his captive audience, and frowned on dozing during preaching. To combat that frequent occurrence he, like an earlier colleague, appointed an aide:

"Allen Bridges hath been chose to wake ye sleepers in meeting. And being much proud of his place, must needs have a fox taile fixt to ye end of a long staff wherewith he may brush ye faces of them yt will have napps in time of discourse, likewise a sharp thorne whereby he may prick such as may be most sound. As he strutted about ye meeting house, he did spy Mr. Tomlins sleeping with much comfort, his hand grasping ye rail. He did quickly thrust his staff behind Dame Ballard and give him a greivous prick upon ye hand. Whereupon he did spring uppe . . . and strike hys hand against ye wall and also to ye great wonderment of alle, prophaynlie exclaime in a loud voice, "Curse ye woodchuck," he dreaming so it seemed that a woodchuck hadd bit hys hand. Much abashed at ye greate scandal he had committed, I thinke he will not soon again goe to sleep in meeting." 6/3/1646.

*Ipswich in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1632-1700, Pp. 19 and 20.
Essex Institute Historical Collections, V. 33, page 57.*

✓ "John Averill was before Ipswich Court 1656, for stryking Thomas Twigs in the meeting house on the Sabbath." Page 275, Ips. Mass. Bay Col.

"Sometimes the disturbance was violent, as when Thomas Bragg and Edward Cogswell (grandson of the minister) fought togethere in ye meeting house on ye Lord's day in time of exercise in the yeare 1670 for which they were fined 10 s apiece." "The final establishment of the pew system solved all difficulties. Families sat together and the children and youthes were under the eye of their parents."

I The Emerson Line

THOMAS EMERSON - ELIZABETH BREWSTER
Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON - ELIZABETH BULKELEY
EDWARD EMERSON - REBECCA WALDO
Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON - MARY MOODY
EDWARD EMERSON - MARY OWEN
EDWARD EMERSON, Jr. - ABIGAIL LYMAN
CHARLES OCTAVIUS EMERSON - HARRIET JANE PHILLIPS
EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON - LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON
CHARLES FRANCIS EMERSON - BESSIE BENSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. THOMAS¹ EMERSON (ROBERT², THOMAS³) was baptized 31 July 1584 at Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England, and died 1 May 1666 at Ipswich, MA. THOMAS¹'S grandparents, THOMAS² and AGNES³ (---) Savell EMERSON of Great Dunmow, county Essex, England, had three children: Joan⁴, John⁴ and youngest son, ROBERT⁴. THOMAS¹'S parents, ROBERT² and SUSAN³ (CRABBE) EMERSON of Great Dunmow and Bishop's Stortford, had six children, THOMAS¹, the eldest son, plus Alice¹, Margaret¹, Anne¹, Robert and John¹.

THOMAS¹'S father, ROBERT², was a well-to-do "currier" (leather worker). During the late 1500's to early 1600's, this profession was an important industry in Bishop's Stortford. In addition, ROBERT² was the owner of "Freehold land and houses" (an estate held in fee or for life, a Norman-French term, ref. 45) in Bishop's Stortford. He may also have come from an "armigerous" ancestry (a family entitled to a Coat of Arms, ref. 45), although this has still not been conclusively proved (ref. 39), regardless of family tradition. However, there may still be a link between THOMAS¹'S family and the armigerous one of Ralf Emerson of Foxton, county Durham, England, who was granted this honor circa 1535.

Two Presidents of the United States--Millard Fillmore, the 13th, and William Howard Taft, the 27th--are descendants of THOMAS¹ (ref. 43).

THOMAS¹ married 1 July 1611 at Bishop's Stortford, England, ELIZABETH¹ BREWSTER. She is believed by Dr. P. H. Emerson in reference () to be the daughter of William Brewster, the postmaster at nearby Scrooby, and in 1620 the famous Pilgrim Elder. Other genealogists and historians suggest she may have been a sister or relation of that individual. However nothing is yet positively known of her ancestry or her time and place of birth and death, although she apparently did outlive her husband, passing away after 1666, probably in Ipswich, MA.

After the marriage of THOMAS¹ and ELIZABETH¹, the couple lived in Bishop's Stortford, where THOMAS¹ was a successful baker and where all nine of their children were born. He was also a collector for the poor in 1636. He immigrated to Ipswich, MA, soon thereafter. Ipswich, at the time of THOMAS¹'S and his family's arrival, had an extraordinary reputation. "The first settlers of Ipswich were noted among the Massachusetts colonists for wealth and learning" (ref. 11). Cotton Mather added "there was in Ipswich, in 1638 'a renowned church, consisting of such illuminated Christians that their Pastors, in exercise of their ministry, might...perceive that they had

not disciples, so much as Judges'" (ref. 14).

Why THOMAS¹, his wife and five (or six, if James² came) youngest children chose to immigrate to New England is unknown. THOMAS¹ was the eldest son. By English custom, therefore, he stood to inherit all, or almost all, of his father's considerable estate. He was also making a good living at a worthy trade. Therefore, strong convictions or influences of another kind must have persuaded him to emigrate when most people of his position would not have done so. Perhaps such reasons as religious freedom and/or a response to the urging of relatives (like William Brewster?) or close friends, such as Major Daniel² Denison (brother of ancestor Lieut. EDWARD² DENISON), who lived in the same village as THOMAS¹ and also immigrated to Ipswich, MA, were the contributing causes.

THOMAS¹ quickly became a prominent citizen. In 1641 he was a "commoner" (had the right to graze livestock on community-owned land), and in 1646 he was chosen as one of seven men to govern Ipswich. These local leaders were later called selectmen. THOMAS¹ was a Deacon and his sons JOSEPH¹ and John¹ were leaders of the same Church. Because of the inspiration THOMAS¹'S two sons received from the brilliant ministers of the Ipswich area (such as the Reverend John Norton, the famous divine, and the Reverend Nathaniel Ward) "they became the first of the clerical line of Emerson men" (ref. 14).

In Ipswich THOMAS¹ was called "Goodman Emerson, Sr." (ref. 25), ("a courteous title of address for a man not of noble birth", ref. 45) and apparently was, from his will, a reasonably successful husbandman (farmer) in Ipswich. Whether he also continued his earlier trade as a baker is unknown.

By late 1638, Ipswich had granted THOMAS¹ at least 64 acres of land, and he had acquired the 120 acre Turkey Shore Farm property on the Ipswich River in Ipswich from Samuel Greenfield. Samuel had married SUSANNA (TIDD?) WISE, the widow of EMERSON-BENSON ancestor HUMPHREY¹ WISE, the former owner. Upon the latter property THOMAS¹ built the family homestead. At this location the River still rose and fell with the tides. The house was probably a "Manse", a house of all-wood construction just coming into vogue at the time. It probably was similar to the Cape Cod-style described in the Introduction. This "Thomas Emerson House" was sold 14 February 1648, along with six acres of land, to Daniel Ringe. Unfortunately, it is not the building known in 1992 as the "Emerson-Howard House". This house had been identified by Thomas F. Waters in the early 1900's in a book about the first house lot in Ipswich. Mr. Waters located the "William Howard House" [41 Turkey Shore Road] "on a tract of land which had been improved with a dwelling owned by Thomas Emerson as early as 1648. Thus, the property was known as the 'Emerson-Howard House' for many years. However in the 1970's SPNEA" [Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities] "undertook title research which clearly indicated that Mr. Waters had misidentified the house lot on which the William Howard House stands...The tract which William Howard purchased" [in 1683] "from John Dane is the land upon which his dwelling was constructed, circa 1680-90. ...Some of this confusion arose from the fact that William Howard purchased" [another nearby tract of] "land from" [the] "Thomas Emerson" [estate], "in 1679" (ref. 31).

THOMAS¹ also gave son John¹ a 120 acre farm in 1648 and was given 80 acres of land by Ipswich "beyond the north river on

the south side of Prospect Hill" which he sold 13 June 1650 to Joseph Jewett (ref. 25). In 1652 he bought property at "Labor in Vain" (ref. 14) from son Rev. JOSEPH¹ and his wife ELIZABETH¹ (BULKELEY) EMERSON, when this couple was leaving Ipswich. In addition, on 14 February 1664, two years before his death, THOMAS¹ and his sons became substantial shareholders of Plumb Island, MA. A location on this island is still known as "Emerson Rocks" (ref. 14). There is one interesting report regarding the unusual hazards of owning personal property at the time. Apparently, THOMAS¹ lost a yoke of oxen because they backed off a bridge. He claimed damages and got the money.

THOMAS¹'S will, naming wife ELIZABETH¹ executrix, was dated 31 May 1653 and was signed by him, indicating he was an educated man. It was witnessed by ancestor ROBERT¹ LORD, clerk, and Daniel Hovey. On 3 November 1666 THOMAS¹'S estate was recorded as valued at 125 pounds 3 shillings. He left the bulk of this, 80 pounds, to his eldest surviving son living in New England, Rev. JOSEPH¹. Son James¹ received "the summe of 40 pounds to be paid unto him if he shall come over to this country, or send by a certain surtificate of his being living within two years of the decease of me & my wife" (ref. 25). Nathaniel¹ was given "my house wherein I now dwell, with all my upland and meadow, and the marsh yt bought of my sonne Joseph wh was sometime Mr. Woodmansys" (ref. 25). His wife ELIZABETH¹ was well cared for, but daughter Elizabeth¹ Fuller, again as per the custom of the time, received only some furniture. However, a codicil, also signed by him and dated 4 Jan 1660, mentions legacies to Elizabeth¹'s two daughters when they reached the age of 20 or "at ye day of marriage" (ref. 25).

The inventory of THOMAS¹'S estate is interesting in that it illustrates the type of personal property owned by a respected man in his community. "Goodman Emersonn," as he was called, died possessed of 'two steares, three cows and a heyfer, tu weaning calfs -- half a mare and half a colt, his wearing cote, & linen & woolen, in the pallor a feather beed -- flock beed -- two blencketts -- curtains -- valantts -- bedsted, a lettell trunk, a doosin 1/2 napkins, the greatt carved chest, a carved bote, a carpet, books and bibels, a tabel and chayers, stools, glass, cast and whattis -- and severall particulares" (ref. 14).

The children of THOMAS¹ and ELIZABETH¹ (BREWSTER) EMERSON, all born at Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England, and later baptized at St. Michael's Church there, were:

- I 2. Robert¹, bapt. 24 May 1612; d. prob. 1650; m. 1/wf Elizabeth Grave, m. 2/wf Francis (----); rem. in Eng.
- II 3. Benjamin¹, bapt. 2 Oct. 1614; bur. 27 Oct 1614 at Bishop's Stortford, Eng.
- III 4. Ralfe¹, bapt. 19 Oct 1615; bur. 8 Jun 1626 at Bishop's Stortford, Eng., k. by fall from tree.
- IV 5. Lieut. Col. James¹, bapt. 16 Feb 1617-8; d. betw. 5 Oct 1664 and 5 Jan 1665 at Tangier, Morocco; m. Lydia Smith; rem. in Eng.? or ret. to Eng. (refs. 34 and 21).
- V 6. Rev. JOSEPH¹, bapt. 25 Jun 1620; d. 13 Nov 1679 (3 Jan 1780) at Concord, MA; m. 1/wf by 1645?, Elizabeth¹ Woodmansey who d. by Dec 1665, m. 2/wf 7 Dec 1665, prob. in Concord, MA, ELIZABETH¹ BULKELEY (see BULKELEY) who m. 2/hs 29 Mar 1682, Capt. John

Brown.

- VI 7. Elizabeth¹, bapt. 14 June 1623; m. 1/hs by 1648, by 1643?, in Eng?, John Fuller who d. in 1666, m. 2/hs. aft. 25 Sep 1666, bef. 31 Dec 1672, prob. at Ipswich, MA, Thomas Perrin.
- VII 8. Rev. John¹, bapt. 26 Feb 1625/6; d. 2 Dec 1700, prob. at Gloucester, MA; m. by 1660, by 1662?, prob. at Ipswich, MA, Ruth¹ Symonds, dau. of Dep. Gov. Samuel, close fr. of THOMAS¹; 1st Emerson grad. Harvard College, 1656, 1st Min. of Gloucester, took part in witchcraft trials at Salem as accuser, including Goodwife Taylor 19 October 1692 who was so pressured by all (incl. Rev. John¹) she confess to anything she was accused of, although innocent.
- VIII 9. Nathaniel¹, bapt. 18 Jul 1630; d. 29 Dec 1712, prob. at Ipswich, MA, and bur. at High Street Cemet. there; m. 1/wf by 1657, prob. at Ipswich, Sarah (----) who d. 3 Aug 1670, m. 2/wf betw. 1681 and 1694, Lydia (ThurLOW) Wells, wid. of Nathaniel.
- IX 10. Susan¹, bapt. 17 Mar 1632; d. aft 1638 arrival, 12 Aug 1640 at Ipswich, MA, and by 1653 will of f. as not ment.; unm.? (no record in ref. 55).

SECOND GENERATION

No. 6

6. Rev. JOSEPH² EMERSON (THOMAS¹, ROBERT¹, THOMAS¹) was baptized 25 June 1620 at St. Michael's Church, Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England and died 13 November 1679 in Concord in the MA Bay Colony. He married his first wife, Elizabeth² Woodmansey, by 1645?, probably in Ipswich, MA. She was the daughter of Margaret and Robert Woodmansey, a schoolmaster of Boston and Ipswich. Elizabeth² died probably at Wells, ME, circa 1664 (after the summer of 1663). On 7 December 1665, perhaps in Concord, MA, JOSEPH² married his second wife, ELIZABETH² BULKELEY. ELIZABETH² was born in 1638?, 1643?, and died 4 September 1693, probably in Reading, MA. ELIZABETH² was the daughter of Rev. EDWARD¹ and the widow LUCYAN/LUCIAN (----) (----) BULKELEY, and granddaughter of Rev. PETER, founder of Concord, MA, and JANE¹ ALLEN (deceased) BULKELEY (see BULKELEY) of Concord, MA. Two years after the death of JOSEPH², ELIZABETH² married 29 March 1682 her second husband, Capt. John Brown.

ELIZABETH², through the BULKELEY line, was of royal and armigerous descent. She was a descendant of many famous people including the lines of Kings of Castile and Leon (early Spain), England, France, Germany, Ireland, Hungry, Norway, Poland, Scotland, Sweden and Wales, plus many smaller kingdoms within these countries before they were founded. She was also related to William the Conqueror, and Constantine and Charlemagne, Emperors of Rome. Her earliest ancestor was Afranius Syagrius, a Gallo-Roman Consul, who served in this capacity in 381 A.D. (ref. 59). One particularly interesting series of ancestors was made famous in William Shakespeare's play *Macbeth*. Ancestor DUNCAN I, King of Scotland from 1030 to 1040, was murdered by Macbeth, who in turn was murdered by DUNCAN'S son, MALCOLM III.

Rev. JOSEPH² immigrated with his parents and five (or possibly six) younger brothers and sisters by 1638 to Ipswich, MA. The one or two oldest children elected to remain in England. JOSEPH² lived in Ipswich for the next eleven years, becoming a leader of the church there with his brother, John², who like him, would

The Emerson Line

THOMAS EMERSON - ELIZABETH BREWSTER
 Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON - ELIZABETH BULKELEY
 EDWARD EMERSON - REBECCA WALDO
 Rev. JOSEPH EMERSON - MARY MOODY
 EDWARD EMERSON - MARY OWEN
 EDWARD EMERSON, Jr. - ABIGAIL LYMAN
 CHARLES OCTAVIUS EMERSON - HARRIET JANE PHILLIPS
 EDWARD OCTAVIUS EMERSON - LUCY HARRIET JOHNSON
 CHARLES FRANCIS² EMERSON - BESSIE² BENSON

FIRST GENERATION

No. 1

1. THOMAS¹ EMERSON (ROBERT¹, THOMAS²) was baptized 31 July 1584 at Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England, and died 1 May 1666 at Ipswich, MA. THOMAS¹'S grandparents, THOMAS² and AGNES² (----) Savell EMERSON of Great Dunmow, county Essex, England, had three children: Joan², John² and youngest son, ROBERT². THOMAS¹'S parents, ROBERT¹ and SUSANNA¹ (CRABBE) EMERSON of Great Dunmow and Bishop's Stortford, had six children, THOMAS¹, the eldest son, plus Alice¹, Margaret¹, Anne¹, Robert¹ and John¹.

THOMAS¹'S father, ROBERT¹, was a well-to-do "currier" (leather worker). During the late 1500's to early 1600's, this profession was an important industry in Bishop's Stortford. In addition, ROBERT¹ was the owner of "Freehold land and houses" (an estate held in fee or for life, a Norman-French term, ref. 45) in Bishop's Stortford. He may also have come from an "armigerous" ancestry (a family entitled to a Coat of Arms, ref. 45), although this has still not been conclusively proved (ref. 39), regardless of family tradition. However, there may still be a link between THOMAS¹'S family and the armigerous one of Ralf Emerson of Foxton, county Durham, England, who was granted this honor circa 1535.

Two Presidents of the United States--Millard Fillmore, the 13th, and William Howard Taft, the 27th--are descendants of THOMAS¹ (ref. 43).

THOMAS¹ married 1 July 1611 at Bishop's Stortford, England, ELIZABETH¹ BREWSTER. She is believed by Dr. P. H. Emerson in reference () to be the daughter of William Brewster, the postmaster at nearby Scrooby, and in 1620 the famous Pilgrim Elder. Other genealogists and historians suggest she may have been a sister or relation of that individual. However nothing is yet positively known of her ancestry or her time and place of birth and death, although she apparently did outlive her husband, passing away after 1666, probably in Ipswich, MA.

After the marriage of THOMAS¹ and ELIZABETH¹, the couple lived in Bishop's Stortford, where THOMAS¹ was a successful baker and where all nine of their children were born. He was also a collector for the poor in 1636. He immigrated to Ipswich, MA, soon thereafter. Ipswich, at the time of THOMAS¹'S and his family's arrival, had an extraordinary reputation. "The first settlers of Ipswich were noted among the Massachusetts colonists for wealth and learning" (ref. 11). Cotton Mather added "there was in Ipswich, in 1638 'a renowned church, consisting of such illuminated Christians that their Pastors, in exercise of their ministry, might...perceive that they had

not disciples, so much as Judges'" (ref. 14).

Why THOMAS, his wife and five (or six, if James² came) youngest children chose to immigrate to New England is unknown. THOMAS¹ was the eldest son. By English custom, therefore, he stood to inherit all, or almost all, of his father's considerable estate. He was also making a good living at a worthy trade. Therefore, strong convictions or influences of another kind must have persuaded him to emigrate when most people of his position would not have done so. Perhaps such reasons as religious freedom and/or a response to the urging of relatives (like William Brewster?) or close friends, such as Major Daniel² Denison (brother of ancestor Lieut. EDWARD² DENISON), who lived in the same village as THOMAS¹ and also immigrated to Ipswich, MA, were the contributing causes.

THOMAS¹ quickly became a prominent citizen. In 1641 he was a "commoner" (had the right to graze livestock on community-owned land), and in 1646 he was chosen as one of seven men to govern Ipswich. These local leaders were later called selectmen. THOMAS¹ was a Deacon and his sons JOSEPH² and John² were leaders of the same Church. Because of the inspiration THOMAS¹'s two sons received from the brilliant ministers of the Ipswich area (such as the Reverend John Norton, the famous divine, and the Reverend Nathaniel Ward) "they became the first of the clerical line of Emerson men" (ref. 14).

In Ipswich THOMAS¹ was called "'Goodman Emerson, Sr.'" (ref. 25). ("a courteous title of address for a man not of noble birth", ref. 45) and apparently was, from his will, a reasonably successful husbandman (farmer) in Ipswich. Whether he also continued his earlier trade as a baker is unknown.

By late 1638, Ipswich had granted THOMAS¹ at least 64 acres of land, and he had acquired the 120 acre Turkey Shore Farm property on the Ipswich River in Ipswich from Samuel Greenfield. Samuel had married SUSANNA (TIDD?) WISE, the widow of EMERSON-BENSON ancestor HUMPHREY¹ WISE, the former owner. Upon the latter property THOMAS¹ built the family homestead. At this location the River still rose and fell with the tides. The house was probably a "Manse", a house of all-wood construction just coming into vogue at the time. It probably was similar to the Cape Cod-style described in the Introduction. This "Thomas Emerson House" was sold 14 February 1648, along with six acres of land, to Daniel Ringe. Unfortunately, it is not the building known in 1992 as the "Emerson-Howard House". This house had been identified by Thomas F. Waters in the early 1900's in a book about the first house lot in Ipswich. Mr. Waters located the "William Howard House" [41 Turkey Shore Road] "on a tract of land which had been improved with a dwelling owned by Thomas Emerson as early as 1648. Thus, the property was known as the 'Emerson-Howard House' for many years. However in the 1970's SPNEA" [Society for the Preservation of New England Antiquities] "undertook title research which clearly indicated that Mr. Waters had misidentified the house lot on which the William Howard House stands...The tract which William Howard purchased" [in 1683] "from John Dane is the land upon which his dwelling was constructed, circa 1680-90. ...Some of this confusion arose from the fact that William Howard purchased" [another nearby tract of] "land from" [the] "Thomas Emerson" [estate], "in 1679" (ref. 31).

THOMAS¹ also gave son John² a 120 acre farm in 1648 and was given 80 acres of land by Ipswich "beyond the north river on

the south side of Prospect Hill" which he sold 13 June 1650 to Joseph Jewett (ref. 25). In 1652 he bought property at "Labor in Vain" (ref. 14) from son Rev. JOSEPH² and his wife ELIZABETH² (BULKELEY) EMERSON, when this couple was leaving Ipswich. In addition, on 14 February 1664, two years before his death, THOMAS¹ and his sons became substantial shareholders of Plumb Island, MA. A location on this island is still known as "Emerson Rocks" (ref. 14). There is one interesting report regarding the unusual hazards of owning personal property at the time. Apparently, THOMAS¹ lost a yoke of oxen because they backed off a bridge. He claimed damages and got the money.

THOMAS¹'S will, naming wife ELIZABETH² executrix, was dated 31 May 1653 and was signed by him, indicating he was an educated man. It was witnessed by ancestor ROBERT¹ LORD, clerk, and Daniel Hovey. On 3 November 1666 THOMAS¹'S estate was recorded as valued at 125 pounds 3 shillings. He left the bulk of this, 80 pounds, to his eldest surviving son living in New England, Rev. JOSEPH². Son James² received "the summe of 40 pounds to be paid unto him if he shall come over to this country, or send by a certain surtificate of his being living within two years of the decease of me & my wife" (ref. 25). Nathaniel² was given "my house wherein I now dwell, with all my upland and meadow, and the marsh yt bought of my sonne Joseph wh was sometime Mr. Woodmansys" (ref. 25). His wife ELIZABETH² was well cared for, but daughter Elizabeth² Fuller, again as per the custom of the time, received only some furniture. However, a codicil, also signed by him and dated 4 Jan 1660, mentions legacies to Elizabeth²'s two daughters when they reached the age of 20 or "at ye day of marriage" (ref. 25).

The inventory of THOMAS¹'S estate is interesting in that it illustrates the type of personal property owned by a respected man in his community. "'Goodman Emersonn,' as he was called, died possessed of 'two steares, three cows and a heifer, tu weaning calfs -- half a mare and half a colt, his wearing cote, & linen & woolen, in the pallor a feather beed -- flock beed -- two blencketts -- curtains -- valantts -- bedsted, a lettell trunk, a doosin 1/2 napkines, the greatt carved chest, a carved bote, a carpet, books and bibels, a tabel and chayers, stools, glass, cast and whattis -- and severall particulares'" (ref. 14).

The children of THOMAS¹ and ELIZABETH² (BREWSTER) EMERSON, all born at Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England, and later baptized at St. Michael's Church there, were:

- I 2. Robert², bapt. 24 May 1612; d. prob. 1650; m. 1/wf Elizabeth Grave, m. 2/wf Francis (----); rem. in Eng.
- II 3. Benjamin², bapt. 2 Oct. 1614; bur. 27 Oct 1614 at Bishop's Stortford, Eng.
- III 4. Ralfe², bapt. 19 Oct 1615; bur. 8 Jun 1626 at Bishop's Stortford, Eng., k. by fall from tree.
- IV 5. Lieut. Col. James², bapt. 16 Feb 1617-8; d. betw. 5 Oct 1664 and 5 Jan 1665 at Tangier, Morocco; m. Lydia Smith; rem. in Eng.? or ret. to Eng. (refs. 34 and 21).
- V 6. Rev. JOSEPH², bapt. 25 Jun 1620; d. 13 Nov 1679 (3 Jan 1780) at Concord, MA; m. 1/wf by 1645?, Elizabeth² Woodmansey who d. by Dec 1665, m. 2/wf 7 Dec 1665, prob. in Concord, MA, ELIZABETH² BULKELEY (see BULKELEY) who m. 2/hs 29 Mar 1682, Capt. John

Brown.

- VI 7. Elizabeth², bapt. 14 June 1623; m. 1/hs by 1648, by 1643?, in Eng?, John Fuller who d. in 1666, m. 2/hs. aft. 25 Sep 1666, bef. 31 Dec 1672, prob. at Ipswich, MA, Thomas Perrin.
- VII 8. Rev. John², bapt. 26 Feb 1625/6; d. 2 Dec 1700, prob. at Gloucester, MA; m. by 1660, by 1662?, prob. at Ipswich, MA, Ruth² Symonds, dau. of Dep. Gov. Samuel, close fr. of THOMAS¹; 1st Emerson grad. Harvard College, 1656, 1st Min. of Gloucester, took part in witchcraft trials at Salem as accuser, including Goodwife Taylor 19 October, 1692 who was so pressured by all (incl. Rev. John²) she confess to anything she was accused of, although innocent.
- VIII 9. Nathaniel², bapt. 18 Jul 1630; d. 29 Dec 1712, prob. at Ipswich, MA, and bur. at High Street Cem. there; m. 1/wf by 1657, prob. at Ipswich, Sarah (----) who d. 3 Aug 1670, m. 2/wf betw. 1681 and 1694, Lydia (Thurlow) Wells, wid. of Nathaniel.
- IX 10. Susan², bapt. 17 Mar 1632; d. aft 1638 arrival, 12 Aug 1640 at Ipswich, MA, and by 1653 will of f. as not ment.; unm.? (no record in ref. 55).

SECOND GENERATION

No. 6

6. Rev. JOSEPH² EMERSON (THOMAS¹, ROBERT¹, THOMAS²) was baptized 25 June 1620 at St. Michael's Church, Bishop's Stortford, county Herts, England and died 13 November 1679 in Concord in the MA Bay Colony. He married his first wife, Elizabeth² Woodmansey, by 1645?, probably in Ipswich, MA. She was the daughter of Margaret and Robert Woodmansey, a schoolmaster of Boston and Ipswich. Elizabeth² died probably at Wells, ME, circa 1664 (after the summer of 1663). On 7 December 1665, perhaps in Concord, MA, JOSEPH² married his second wife, ELIZABETH² BULKELEY. ELIZABETH² was born in 1638?, 1643? and died 4 September 1693, probably in Reading, MA. ELIZABETH² was the daughter of Rev. EDWARD² and the widow LUCYAN/LUCIAN (----) (----) BULKELEY, and granddaughter of Rev. PETER², founder of Concord, MA, and JANE² ALLEN (deceased) BULKELEY (see BULKELEY) of Concord, MA. Two years after the death of JOSEPH², ELIZABETH² married 29 March 1682 her second husband, Capt. John Brown. ELIZABETH², through the BULKELEY line, was of royal and armigerous descent. She was a descendant of many famous people including the lines of Kings of Castile and Leon (early Spain), England, France, Germany, Ireland, Hungary, Norway, Poland, Scotland, Sweden and Wales, plus many smaller kingdoms within these countries before they were founded. She was also related to William the Conqueror, and Constantine and Charlemagne, Emperors of Rome. Her earliest ancestor was Afranius Syagrius, a Gallo-Roman Consul, who served in this capacity in 381 A.D. (ref. 59). One particularly interesting series of ancestors was made famous in William Shakespeare's play *Macbeth*. Ancestor DUNCAN I, King of Scotland from 1030 to 1040, was murdered by *Macbeth*, who in turn was murdered by DUNCAN's son, MALCOLM III. Rev. JOSEPH² immigrated with his parents and five (or possibly six) younger brothers and sisters by 1638 to Ipswich, MA. The one or two oldest children elected to remain in England. JOSEPH² lived in Ipswich for the next eleven years, becoming a leader of the church there with his brother, John², who like him, would

become a minister. By tradition it is believed JOSEPH² was educated in England, and he became "a minister of the standing order of puritan clergy" (ref. 11) by 1648.

JOSEPH² became a Freeman in December 1648, the same year he was a supporter of Maj. Daniel¹ Denison, his father's good friend, and apparently was also preaching at York, ME, JOSEPH² was given some financial remuneration from this ministry. He apparently moved to Rowley, MA, in 1649, where he received an invitation to become the minister at Exeter, MA. Instead, in 1652 he and Elizabeth² sold his father the 12 acres of land at a place in Ipswich called "Labor in Vain" (ref. 14) that he and his wife had apparently received from her father, and moved to Wells, ME. In Wells JOSEPH² became the minister in a "tyme of Lycentiousnes" (ref. 14). He still apparently shared, or continued to share, his ministerial time with York on the basis of a division of his salary. It was also here in 1653, at a court held in his own house, that the commission accepted the oath of his fellow residents and him to accept MA jurisdiction when MA usurped the power of the ME government to rule the Province. JOSEPH² continued in his dual minister's position in Wells and York, and in 1664 a formal contract to acknowledge this was recorded. In the document he was to receive 65 pounds per year, with York paying its share. During this time he apparently lived in Wells, ME, but alternated Sabbath services between the two parishes.

The people of the ME Province, on the other hand, had a history, as part of their Episcopalian-Royalist background, of jealously guarding their religious freedom. This included the right of a new sect in the area, the Quakers, to worship as they pleased. This policy was in direct contrast to their Minister, JOSEPH². In spite of his supposedly easy-going nature, he was a determined Puritan. He was apparently sympathetic to the very restrictive, Puritan-based laws the MA government was continually passing and enforcing regarding religious freedom in the newly annexed ME Province. JOSEPH² probably wrote, and, with other Wells men, signed a petition circa 1654 to protest this "lawlessness". They sent it to Oliver Cromwell, a strict Puritan who ruled England during the time of the Commonwealth and the Protectorate (1649-1658). They asked Cromwell for help in dealing with the Episcopalian-Quaker problem in the Wells-York area and suggested he verify their concern and their problems with his long-time friend (and EMERSON-BENSON ancestor), Rev. JOHN WHEELWRIGHT. Rev. WHEELWRIGHT had left MA to return to England to be with Cromwell when he assumed power. Nothing apparently came of this petition, however.

Then, in 1663, a delegation of Quakers came to ME on their missionary tour of New England. As his faith and the MA law demanded, JOSEPH² tried to ban their presence. For this he was summoned before a grand jury in York 7 July 1663. There six people testified against his character. A man and his wife, both of questionable reputation, swore that JOSEPH² lied. In addition, Capt. Raynes and Richard Banks, who "were strong opponents of Massachusetts rule" (ref. 11), and two other people of similar political opinions, all swore "Wee p'sent Mr. Joseph Emerson for telling of a ly" (ref. 11). The verdict was reached on 13 July 1663. JOSEPH² was indicted "for a lye" (ref. 14) by his own parishioners. Never before had a MA minister been put on trial for slandering a Quaker. However, it was to the credit of the people of the ME Province that they were

*Dr. Thomas of
our Rev
John.*

HONORATISSIMO

Simoni Bradstreeto :

MASSACHUSETTENSIS COLONIE in NOV-ANGLIA GUBERNATORI, CÆ.
TERISQ; ACADEMIÆ CURATORIBUS PERQUAM | HONORANDIS &
REVERENDIS; Hunc, eorum qui in COLLEGIO HARVARDINO,
intra annos quadraginta, | *Alicujus gradus Laurea, donati sunt,*
Catalogum, Honoris & Grattitudinis Ergo; Devoto Cultu,
inscribit & offert | CRESCENTIUS MATHERUS,
Cum supradicti Gymnasti Socii.

1642.

Benjamin Woodbridge. *S. Th. D.*
Georgius Downing.
Johannes Bulklaus. *Mr.*
Gulielmus Hubbard. *Mr.*
Samuel Bellingham. *Mr. M. D. Lugd.*
Johannes Wilfonus. *Mr.*
Henricus Saltonstall.
Tobias Barnardus. [*Hib.*]
Nathaniel Breusterus. *Th. Bacc. Dubl.*

1643.

Johannes Jonefius. *Mr.*
Samuel Matherus. *Mr. Socius.*
Samuel Danforth. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Allin.

1645.

Johannes Oliverus.
Jeremias Hollandus.
Gulielmus Amefius.
Johannes Ruffellus. *Mr.*
Samuel Stow. *Mr.*
Jacobus Ward.
Robertus Johnson.

1646.

Johannes Alcock. *Mr.*
Johannes Brock. *Mr.*
Georgius Stirk. *Mr.*
Nathaniel White. *Mr.*

1647.

Jonathan Mitchel. *Mr. Socius.*
Nathaniel Matherus. *Mr.*
Confolantius Star. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Birden.
Abrahamus Walver.
Georgius Haddenus. *Mr.*
Gulielmus Mildmay. *Mr.*

1649.

Johannes Rogers. *Mr. Præses Elect.*
Samuel Eaton. *Mr. Socius.*
Urianus Oakes. *Mr. Socius, Præses.*
Johannes Collins. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Bowers.

1650.

Gulielmus Stoughton. *Mr. Oxonii.*
Johannes Gloverus. *M. D. Aberdoniæ.*
Johua Hobartus. *Mr.*
Jeremias Hobartus. *Mr.*
Edmundus Weld.
Samuel Philippius. *Mr. [Præses.*
Leonardus Hoar. *Mr. M. D. Cantab.*
Iaacus Allertonus.
Jonathan Incaus. *Mr.*

1651.

Michael Wigglefworth. *Mr. Socius.*
Marigena Cottonus. *Mr.*
Thomas Dudlæus. *Mr. Socius.*

1864.]

TRIENNIAL CATALOGUES OF HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

21

Johannes Gloverus. *Mr.*
Henricus Butlerus. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Pelhamus.
Johannes Davifius. *Mr.*
Iaacus Chauncæus. *Mr.*
Ishabod Chauncæus. *Mr.*
Jonathan Burræus. *Mr.*

1652.

Iosephus Rowlandfonus.

1653. Aug. 9.

Samuel Willis.
Johannes Angier. *Mr.*
Thomas Shepardus. *Mr. Socius.*
Samuel Nowel. *Mr. Socius.*
Richardus Hubbard. *Mr.*
Johannes Whiting. *Mr.*
Samuel Hookerus. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Stone. *Mr. Cantab. Angl.*
Gulielmus Thomfonus.

*Qui ad secundum gradum admitti fuerunt 1655.
Diei sequentis Baccalaurei, ad secundum
gradum admitti ut moris est. 1656.*

1653. Aug. 10.

Edvardus Rawfonus.
Samuel Bradstreet. *Mr. Socius.*
Ioshuah Long. *Mr.*
Samuel Whiting. *Mr.*
Ioshuah Moodeus. *Mr. Socius.*
Ioshua Ambrosius. *Mr. Oxonii.*
Nehemiah Ambrosius. *Mr. Socius.*
Thomas Crosbæus.

1654.

Philippus Nelson.

1655.

Gerthom Bulklaus. *Mr. Socius.*
Mordecia Matthufius.

1656.

Elezarus Matherus.
Crescentius Matherus. *Mr. Dubl. Hib.*
(Socius & Præs. Pro Tempore.)
Robertus Painæus. *Mr.*
Subael Dummerius.
Johannes Haynefius. *Mr. Cantab.*

Johannes Eliotus. *Mr.*
Thomas Gravefius. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Emmerfonus. *Mr.*

1657.

Zecharias Symmefius. *M. Socius.*
Zecharias Bridgen. *Mr. Socius.*
Johannes Cottonus. *Mr.*
Johannes Hale. *Mr.*
Elifshah Cookæus. *Mr.*
Johannes Whiting.
Barnabas Chauncæus. *Mr.*

1658.

Iosephus Eliotus. *Mr.*
Iosephus Haines.
Benjamin Bunker. *Mr.*
Jonah Fordhamus.
Johannes Barfham.
Samuel Talcot.
Samuel Shepardus. *Mr. Socius.*

1659.

Nathaniel Saltonstall.
Samuel Alcock.
Habibah Savagius.
Samuel Willardus.
Thomas Parifh.
Samuel Cheverus.
Ezekiel Rogers.
Samuel Belcherus.
Jacobus Noyle.
Mofes Noyle.

1660.

Simon Bradstreet. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Collins. *Mr.*
Samuel Eliotus. *Mr. Socius.*
Gulielmus Whittinghamus.
Iosephus Cookæus.
Samuel Carterus.
Manasseh Armitagius.
Petrus Bulklaus. *M. Socius.*

1661.

Johannes Bellingham. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Chauncæus. *Mr. Socius.*
Elnathan Chauncæus. *Mr.*
Irael Chauncæus. *Mr.*

Compenfantius Osborn.
Daniel Weld.
Yosephus Cookæus.
Yosephus Whiting. *M. Soci.*
Caleb Watfonus. *Mr.*
Yohannes Parkerus.
Thomas Yohnfonus.
Bezaleel Shermannus.

1662.

Yohannes Holiokus.
Benjamin Thomfonus.
Solomon Stodardus. *Mr. Socius.*
Moses Fiskæus. *Mr.*
Ephraim Savagius.
Thomas Oakes.

1663.

Samuel Symondus.
Samuel Cobbet.
Yohannes Reynerus. *Mr.*
Benjamin Blackman.
Thomas Mighil. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Cutler.

1664.

Alexander Nowellus. *M. So.*
Jofia h Flintæus. *Mr.*
Iosephus Pynchonus. *M. Soc.*
Samuel Brakenburius. *Mr.*
Yohannes VVoodbridge.
Yosephus Eaftabrookeus. *M.*
Samuel Street.

1665.

Benjamin Eliotus. *Mr.*
Yosephus Dudlæus. *Mr.*
Samuel Bishop.
Edvardus Mitchelfonus.
Samuel Mannæus.
Sperantius Athertonus.
Yabez Foxius. *Mr.*
Caleb Cheefchaumuk. *Indus*

1666.

Yosephus Brownæus. *Mr. Socius.*
Yohannes Richardfonus. *Mr. Socius.*
Daniel Mafonus.
Yohannes Filerus.

1667.

Yohannes Harriman. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Atkinfonus.
Yohannes Fosterus.
Gerthom Hobartus. *Mr.*
Yapheth Hobartus.
Nehemias Hobartus. *M. So.*
Nicolaus Noyfe.

1668.

Adamus VVinthropus.
Yohannes Cullick.
Zecharias VVhitmanus.
Abrahamus Pierfonus.
Yohannes Prudden.

1669.

Samuel Epps. *Mr.*
Daniel Epps.
Jeremias Shepardus. *Mr.*
Daniel Gookin. *Mr. Socius*
Yohannes Bridghamus. *Mr.*
Daniel Ruffellus. *Mr.*
Yosephus Taylorus. *Mr.*
Yacobus Baylæus. *Mr.*
Yosephus Gerrish.
Samuel Treat. *Mr.*

1670.

Nathaniel Higginfon. *Mr.*
Ammi-Ruhamah Corlet. *Mr. Socius*
Thomas Clark. *Mr.*
Georgius Burrough.

1671.

Ifaacus Fosterus. *M. Socius.*
Samuel Phips. *Mr.*
Samuel Sewall. *Mr. Socius*
Samuel Matherus.
Samuel Danforth. *M. Socius*
Petrus Thacherus. *M. Socius*
Gulielmus Adamus. *Mr.*
Thomas VVeld. *Mr.*
Yohannes Bowles. *Mr.*
Yohannes Nortonus.
Edvardus Taylorus.

1673.

Edvardus Pelhamus.

Georgius Alcock.
Samuel Angier. *Mr.*
Yohannes VVife. *Mr.*

1674.

Edmundus Davie.
Thomas Sergeant.

1675.

Yosephus Hauley.
Yohannes Pike. *Mr.*
Yonathan Ruffellus. *Mr.*
Petrus Oliverus. *Mr.*
Samuel Andrew. *Mr. Socius*
Yacobus Minot.
Timotheus Woodbridge. *Mr.*
Daniel Allin. *Mr.*
Yohannes Emmerfonus. *Mr.*
Nathaniel Gookin. *Mr.*

1676.

Thomas Shepardus. *Mr.*
Thomas Brattle. *Mr.*
Jeremiah Cushing.

1677.

Thomas Cheverus. *Mr.*
Yohannes Danforth. *Mr.*
Edvardus Payfon. *Mr.*
Samuel Sweetman
Iosephus Capen. *Mr.*
Thomas Scottow.

1678.

Iohannes Cottonus. *M. Socius.*
Cottonus Matherus. *Mr.*
Grindallus Rawfonus. *Mr.*
Urianus Oakes.

1679.

Jonathan Danforth. *Mr.*
Edvardus Oakes. *Mr.*
Iacobus Alling. *Mr.*
Thomas Barnardus. *Mr.*

1680.

Richardus Martin.
Iohannes Leverettus.
Iacobus Oliver.
Gulielmus Brattle.
Percivallus Green.

1681.

Samuel Mitchel.
Iohannes Cottonus
Iohannes Hafting.
Noadiah Ruffel.
Iacobus Pierpoint
Yohannes Davie
Samuel Ruffel.
Guilielmus Denifon
Iosephus Eliot.

BOSTONÆ Nov-Anglorum; Die Sexto ante Idus Sextiles. Anno. 1682.

(This shows Daniel Dodge in 1700 - age 31)

* Topical person

Genealogy of New England Families - Vol II by William Cutler (MHC R929.5 C991)
NEW ENGLAND.
1052

(The Emerson Line).

The Emerson family originated in England, and the first to use the name there was Johannes Emeryson, of Brancepeth parish, county Durham, England, who was born before 1300. From him the various branches of the English family are descended, though the line cannot be traced perfectly.

(I) Thomas Emerson, the English ancestor, was born before 1540, and was a resident of Great Dunmow, county Essex, where his three children are registered. He was probably son of Ralf of Foxton, who received arms in 1535. Children: Robert, mentioned below; Joan, baptized 1562; John, baptized 1565.

(II) Robert, son of Thomas Emerson, was born in Great Dunmow, and baptized there October 25, 1561. He may be identical with Robert Emerson, of Bishops Stortford, who married there, November 24, 1578, Susan Crabb, who was buried there November 20, 1626, aged seventy years. Robert Emerson was buried at Bishops Stortford, January 6, 1620. Children: Alice, baptized November 22, 1579; Margaret, baptized February 21, 1581-82; Thomas, mentioned below; Anne; Robert, baptized April 12, 1596; John.

(III) Thomas (2), son of Robert Emerson, was baptized at Bishops Stortford, July 26, 1584, died at Ipswich, Massachusetts, May 1, 1666. In the church warden's book of St. Michaels he is recorded as a collector for the poor in 1636. He was the immigrant ancestor and according to family tradition came to New England in the ship "Elizabeth Ann," in 1635. He settled in Ipswich, and had a grant of land there in 1638. He married, July 1, 1611, at Bishops Stortford, Elizabeth Brewster. The genealogist of the English Emersons suggests that she was the daughter of the postmaster of Scrooby and the elder of the colony at Plymouth. Children, as recorded at the baptismal entry of St. Michaels, Bishops Stortford, England: Robert, baptized May 24, 1612; Benjamin, baptized October 2, 1614; Ralfe, baptized October 19, 1615, killed by the falling of a tree in June, 1626; James, baptized February 16, 1617; Joseph, mentioned below; Elizabeth, baptized June 14, 1623; John, baptized February 26, 1625; Thomas; Nathaniel, baptized July 18, 1630; Susan, baptized March 17, 1632, may have died on the voyage; Sarah, died August 12, 1640.

(IV) Rev. Joseph Emerson, son of Thomas (2) Emerson, was born in England and baptized at Bishops Stortford, June 25, 1620. He died at Concord, Massachusetts, January 3, 1680. Through his son Joseph he was the ancestor of that most illustrious American, Ralph Waldo Emerson. The line is Ralph

Waldo (8), William (7), Joseph (6), Edward (5), Joseph (4). Rev. Joseph Emerson was a Puritan minister, said to have been educated in England. He may have studied at Harvard. He was at Ipswich as early as 1638. He was admitted a freeman there December 19, 1648. He preached at York, Maine, the same year. In 1653 he was a resident of Wells, and took a freeman's oath there July 4, 1653. He signed a petition to Cromwell while of Wells, asking the protector to confirm the jurisdiction of Massachusetts over the inhabitants of Wells. About 1664 he left Wells, where he seemed to have a turbulent lot of parishioners, and where the church, after he left, had to disband. About 1664 he became minister at Milton, Massachusetts. On December 1, 1660, he settled in Mendon, Massachusetts, where he remained until the town was destroyed by the Indians, when he retired to Concord, where he died. He married (first) in 1646, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert and Margaret Woodmansey, schoolmaster of Boston. They resided at Ipswich, Massachusetts; York, Maine, and Milton, Massachusetts. He married (second) December 7, 1665, Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Edward Bulkeley, of Concord, granddaughter of Rev. Peter Bulkeley, first minister of Concord. She was born in 1638, died September 4, 1693, having married Captain John Brown, of Reading. Children of first wife: Joseph and Mary. Of second wife: Lucian, born October 2, 1667; Edward, April 26, 1670; Peter, 1673; Ebenezer; Daniel. By first or second wife: James, mentioned below.

(V) James, son of Rev. Joseph Emerson, was born at Wells, Maine, died at Mendon, Massachusetts, in 1756. He was a tailor at Ipswich and at Mendon. He married Sarah —, who died at Mendon, October 13, 1732. Their daughter, Elizabeth, born at Ipswich, Massachusetts, March 6, 1687, died at Uxbridge, Massachusetts, in 1760, married, 1708, Captain Joseph Taft (see Taft II).

our John's brother

NEHGR Vol 50: 527 (Oct 1896)

ALEXANDER EMERSON of Sereby in the County of Lincoln, yeoman, 10 April 1604, proved 10 February 1605. To be buried in the church of Sereby. To my wife all my lands and tenements in Sereby during her life if she do not marry after my decease. And whensoever she shall happen to marry or to die then my will is that Michael Emerson my son shall have all my said lands and tenements to him and to his heirs male of his body lawfully begotten for ever, with remainder to my son Robert and the heirs male of his body &c., then to my son Thomas &c., then to my son John and lastly to the right heirs of Michael Emerson my son for ever. To my son Thomas all my lands, tenements &c. in Howsam and Cadney, with remainder to John, then to Robert, then to Michael and lastly to the right heirs of my son Thomas. To my wife all my houses, lands and tenements &c. in Glamford Brigges for life and then to my son Robert. To Margery and Margaret Emerson, the daughters of my son George deceased, twenty shillings each. All my goods &c. shall be equally divided amongst these five, viz. my wife and John, Michael, Robert and Thomas Emerson my sons. I make my son Michael full and sole executor. A Michael Emerson and a Thomas Emerson among the witnesses. Stafford, 8.

[I have ventured to insert the above will for the reason that the names of Michael, John, Robert and Thomas were to be found among our earliest Emersons in Essex County, Massachusetts Bay.—H. F. W.]

The parties, named above, may have been kinsfolks of the Haverhill, Mass., Emersons; but the families at Haverhill were certainly of a later generation.

Michael Emerson appeared in Haverhill in 1656, and married, the next spring, Hannah, a daughter of John Webster of Newbury. Their eldest child, Hannah, married Thomas Dustin and was the heroine of the massacre of Indians, 1697.

Robert Emerson, who married Ann Grant, was a householder at Haverhill in 1660.

Thomas Emerson, wife and two children were killed by Indians, 1697. He had brothers, Joseph and Stephen.

These, with Samuel, who married Judith Davis, were residents at Haverhill, where descendants are yet numerous.

Thomas Emerson at Ipswich, 1635, brought with him children born in England. He was the ancestor of a long line of distinguished New England ministers, the most noted of whom was the poet, Ralph Waldo Emerson. No connection between the Haverhill and Ipswich families has been discovered.

GEO. A. GORDON.]

The two articles above are about early Emersons who settled in Haverhill—not all that far from our Emersons in Ipswich. Historians often confuse them. There is reason to suspect they might have been very distant cousins. The above explains the problem.

Pioneers of Massachusetts

Charles H. Pope—p 156

EMERSON, EMBERSON,

Thomas, baker, yeoman, Ipswich, propr. 1638; selectman, 1640. Conveyed his farm to his son John, for a yearly rental etc. during the lives of himself and his wife Elizabeth; many specifications. [Ips. De. I, 63.]

His will dated 31 May, 1653, prob. Jan. 4, 1660, beq. to sons Joseph, John and Nathaniel, daus. Elizabeth Fuller, and Susanna E.; to son James, if he shall come over into this country; to wife Elizabeth, whom he makes exec.

Genealogy.

*Genealogy of New England Families
by William Cather—Vol 1 page 271*

The relationship between EMERSON Thomas Emerson, the immigrant ancestor of the Ipswich family to which Ralph Waldo Emerson belonged, and Michael Emerson (mentioned below) has not been established, but there is no reasonable doubt that some relationship existed. Thomas was born in Bishop's Stortford, County Essex, England, July 26, 1584, son of Robert Emerson of Dunmow, County Essex, and grandson of Thomas Emerson of Great Dunmow, born before 1540. The first to use the name Emerson in England was Johannes Emeryson, of Brancepeth parish, County Durham, and he was born before 1300. It is thought that the English Emersons are all descended from him, though the lines cannot be traced for want of complete records. The will of Alexander Emerson, of Sereby, Lincolnshire, England, yeoman, dated April 10, 1604, and proved February 10, 1605, was that of a relative of both Michael and Thomas in all probability, and it is likely that Michael (given below) was his grandson. He bequeathed to a son Michael Emerson his homestead and other lands; to son Robert; to son Thomas, lands in Howson and Cadvey; to his wife, house at Glamford Brigges; to daughters of his son George and to son John. These

Directory of Ancestral Heads 1620-1700

by Frank R Adams C402 R27.2 H741

EMERSON

From Saxon Emor, from Ethelmar, noble, son of the noble. The family traces back to Armeric, archdeacon of Carlisle and Durham, 1196-1214. The first to use the name was Johannes Emeryson of Brancepeth parish, county of Durham, Eng., who was born before 1300. In the thirteenth century appears the name of Richardus fil EmERICI.

JOHN, baker, was at Ipswich, Mass., 1635, removed to Scituate, Mass., and was married in 1638 at Duxbury, Mass. ROBERT was at Rowley, Mass., as early as 1655, made freeman at Haverhill, Mass., 1668.

✓ THOMAS, baker, son of Robert, son of Thomas, a resident of Great Dunmow, Essex, b. Bishop Stortford, Eng., 1584, settled at Ipswich, Mass., 1638.

NEW ENGLAND MARRIAGES PRIOR TO 1700

by Clarence Almon Torrey - pp 250-1

EMERSON, Edward & Rebecca WALDO (1662/3-1752); 27 Jan 1697/8; Chelmsford/Newburyport/
Boston
EMERSON, Ephraim (1672-1706, ae 34) & Elizabeth WALKER, m/2 Elisha MAY; 7 Jan 1695/6;
Taunton
EMERSON, James³ & Sarah [INGERSOLL?] (1663-1732, Mendon); b 1680(17); Marshfield/Ips-
wich/Mendon
EMERSON, John & Barbara LOTHROP (1619-); 19 Jul 1638; Duxbury/?Scituate
✓ EMERSON, John (-1700) & Ruth (SYMONDS?); b 1660?, 1662?; Gloucester
EMERSON, John & Anne [RICHBEL?], w John (dau Ann RICHBELL by 1st husband); b 10 Sep
1686; Mamaroneck, NY/MD
EMERSON, John (1652-1745) & 1/wf Judith [CHENEY] (1668-1709?); ca 1689; Newbury
EMERSON, John & Elizabeth LEECH, wid?; 27 Dec 1693; Bridgewater
EMERSON, Rev. John (?1654-1712) & Sarah (STOWERS) [CARTER], w John; b 1695?;
Charlestown/Salem/etc.
EMERSON, John (1670-1732) & Mary BATTER/BATTERS; 14 May 1696; Salem/New Castle,
NH/Portsmouth, NH
EMERSON, Jonathan & Hannah DAY; 15 Jun 1699; Haverhill
EMERSON, Joseph² (1620-1680) & 1/wf Elizabeth [WOODMANSEY] (-bef 7 Dec 1665); b 1645?;
Ipswich/Wells/Mendon/Concord?
✓ EMERSON, Rev. Joseph (1620-1680) & 2/wf Elizabeth BULKELEY (1643?, 1638-1693), m/2
Capt. John BROWN 1682; 7 Dec 1665; Concord/Milton/Mendon/York, ME
EMERSON, Joseph & Mary ?, 2nd dau John EMERY?; b 1677; Boston/?York, ME
EMERSON, Joseph & 1/wf Martha TOOTHAKER (1668-); 16 Jul 1690; Haverhill
EMERSON, Michael (?1627-1715+) & Hannah WEBSTER (-living 1709); 1 Apr 1657; Haverhill
EMERSON, Nathaniel (1630-1712) & 1/wf Sarah ? (-1670); b 1657; Ipswich
EMERSON, Nathaniel & 2/wf Lydia (THURLOW) [WELLS] (1638-1716), w Nathaniel; betw 1681
& 1694; Salisbury
EMERSON, Nathaniel (1657-1738) & Martha WOODWARD (1662-); [1 Feb 1685]; Ipswich
EMERSON, Peter & Anna BROWN; 11 Nov 1696; Reading
EMERSON, Robert (1629-1694) & Ann GRANT (1637-1718); 4 Jan 1658/9; Rowley/Haverhill
EMERSON, Samuel & Judith DAVIS; 14 Dec 1687; Haverhill
EMERSON, Stephen & Elizabeth DUSTON; 27 Dec 1698; Haverhill
EMERSON, Thomas¹ (1584-1666) & Elizabeth BREWSTER (-1666+); Bishop's Stratford, Eng, 1
Jul 1611; Ipswich/Salisbury
EMERSON, Thomas (-1738?) & Phillipa/Phillis? PERKINS (1670-1738); 20 Nov 168[5?], 1683,
1685; Ipswich
EMERSON, Thomas (-1697) & Elizabeth GOARDIN/GORDON (-1697); 26 May 1686; Haverhill
EMERSON, ? & Hannah SMITH; b 1699; Providence

The Landed Gentry, American Families
Barlow - pp 2674

EMERSON formerly OF FOXTON

EDWARD DONALD EMERSON, of New York
District Sales Manager of Babcock & Wilcox Tube
Co., b. 27 Aug. 1867; educ. Harvard; m. 6 June
1924, Lorraine M. diss. by divorce, June, 1934; dau
of E. D. Giberson, and has issue,

• Lorraine Elmore, b. 27 Aug. 1925.

Lineage.—RALPH EMERSON, of Foxton, Co. Durham, w.
• 1st of
THOMAS EMERSON, of Ipswich, Mass., who settled there in 1600.
He was b. 1584; m. 1611, Elizabeth Brewster, and by her had issue,
as follows.

NATHANIEL EMERSON, of Ipswich, b. 1603; m. Anne Grant,
b. 1612. From him is descended.

EDWARD LOWELL EMERSON, of Bangor, Maine, b. 3 July, 1825;
m. Marcia, dau. of Charles Richardson, and d. 7 July, 1905, leaving
issue as follows.

GEORGE MCKINDRY EMERSON, of Bangor, Maine, b. 23 April,
1865; m. Anna Florentine, dau. of August von Kadtker, of Ellum,
Germany, and d. 21 Sept. 1930, leaving issue.

• EDWARD DONALD, of whom we treat.

Residence.—400, East 72nd Street, New York City. Club—
Harvard, Bankers (New York); City Island Yacht (City Island,
N.Y.).

*Have was descended from brother Nathaniel
Emerson (1630-1712)*

History of Ipswich, Essex and Hamilton, Massachusetts

by Joseph B. Felt - publ. 1894
reprint 1981 - A Heritage Classic

Page 75- 1663, Oct. 6th. John, son of Thomas and Elizabeth
Emerson, is ordained over Gloucester Church.

148

MILITARY CONCERNS.

Samuel Appleton. Sept. 30th. Col. B. Church writes, that,
about the 19th, one Dicks, of Chobacco, was killed near
Casco.

1691, June 2d. This town is to have its proportion of four-
teen men from Essex Middle, who are to march for Wells.
Nov. 25th. Robert, son of Rev. John Hale, now residing
here, writes to his relatives in England, "Ipswich is still pre-
served, but, as most other towns in this colony, has lost many
of its most warlike men by war and sickness."

* 1692, July 17th. As, for two days past, several persons
of Gloucester declared, that they saw French and Indians
skulking about a garrison, Major S. Appleton sends down sixty
men to defend them. Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, in
speaking some time afterwards of this appearance of the enemy,
considered it as supernatural.

*(He was only 67, but one wonders if he had
premature "hardening of the arteries?")*

Page 93

GRADUATES OF IPSWICH FROM
HARVARD COLLEGE.

- 1642. Doct. Samuel Bellingham.
Rev. Wm. Hubbard.
- 1645. Doct. James Ward.
- 1649. John Rogers, Pres. of H. C.
- 1652. Rev. Joseph Rowlandson.
- 1653. Richard Hubbard, Esq.
- ✓ 1656. Robert Paine, preacher.
Rev. John Emerson.

*(Our John was 8th person from
Ipswich to graduate from college)
at that time the only college
in New England.*

1710. Wm. Cogswell is killed by Indians.

§ 1776. Jan. 4th, Thomas Emmerson Cole; 11th, Jona-
than Cogswell 3d; in the summer, Wm. Jones; Aug. 8th, Da-
vid Goodhue, die in the army: in the fall, Joseph Marshall, jr.,
was killed by a cannon ball at Lake Champlain:—all of Che-
bacco. This year Joseph Lufkin, of the Hamlet, in the west-
ern army, was killed by a tree, which fell on him and broke his
neck, while the troops were cutting wood, preparatory to their
encampment for the night. June 25th. Of 5000 men order-
ed out, the quota of Ipswich is ten.

Eliz. b. 6 Mar. 1687. / JOHN, Ipswich, came in the Albigen 1635, a
 son, aged 20, call. by Collin, s. of John. It may be, that he rem. to
 situate, and m. at Duxbury 19 July 1638, Barbara, d. of Rev. John
 Lothrop. / JOHN, Gloucester, s. of Thomas, ord. 6 Oct. 1663, m. 1660,
 Ruth, d. of dep. gov. Symonds, had Ruth, b. 26 Aug. 1660; Martha, 28
 Nov. 1662; Mary, 7 Mar. 1665; Eliz. 26 Aug. 1667; John, 14 May
 1670, H. C. 1689; Dorothy, 6 July 1675; and Samuel, 20 Nov. 1678.
 He preach. above 40 yrs. and d. 2 Dec. 1700. / JOHN, s. of the preced.
 min. of Manchester, as Mather's Hecatompolis shows, but prob. not set.
 there, wh. m. 14 May 1696, Mary, d. of Edmund Batter of Salem, was
 ord. at Newenstle 1704, the first min. and instal. at sec. ch. of Ports-
 mouth, as its first min. 23 Mar. 1715, and d. 21 June 1732, leav-
 six ds. / JOHN, Salem, neph. of John of Gloucester, H. C. 1675, was,
 doubtless, the worthy preach. at Berwick, wh. had the happy escape, on
 the night of 27 June 1689, when Maj. Waldron of Dover and fifty-one
 of his comp. were massacred or made prison. by the Ind. hav. declin. the
 req. of the hospit. soldier to lodge at his house, as the Appendix, art. 4
 to Magn. VII. relates. Belkn. and Alden foll. his auth. mistake him for
 the future min. of Portsmouth, wh. was not then gr. See Niles and
 Belkn. I. 130. He had been employ. as sch. master at Newbury 1681,
 at a later day perhaps at Gloucester, freem. 1691, certain. taught in
 Charlestown, and last at Salem 1699 until his d. 1712. Felt, I. 439.
 At Charlestown, by w. Sarah had Sarah, bapt. 11 Aug. 1695. Prob.
 he was never ord. / JOHN, Newbury, a lieut. by w. Judith had John, b.
 25 June 1690; Daniel, 15 Jan. 1693; Joseph, 2 Mar. 1696; Samuel, 2
 Nov. 1699; and Jonathan, 10 Aug. 1702. / JOSEPH, Ipswich 1638, per-
 haps s. of Thomas, York, freem. 1653, preach. two or three yrs. also at
 Wells, 1664 and foll. bec. first min. of Mendon, ord. a. 1667, and cont.
 until the destruct. 1675, of the town in Philip's war, rem. to Concord,
 there d. 3 Jan. 1680; m. 7 Dec. 1665, Eliz. d. of Rev. Edward Bulkley,
 had three s. of wh. Peter, wh. m. a Brown, and Edward, wh. m. Mary,
 d. of Rev. Samuel Moody, were progen. of a long list of clerg. His
 wid. m. Capt. John Brown of Reading. / MICHAEL, Haverhill 1656.
NATHANIEL, Ipswich, s. of Thomas, by w. Sarah, wh. d. 3 Aug. 1670,
 had Nathaniel, b. 16 Aug. 1657; and Sarah, 15 Mar. 1659. / NATHAN-
 IEL, Ipswich, s. of the preced. m. 1685, Martha Woodward, had Nath-
 aniel, b. 26 Dec. 1686; Joseph, 26 June 1690; Mary, 19 Jan. 1692, d.
 young; a ch. 28 June 1695, whose name is not plain on the rec. Mary,
 again, 18 Dec. 1697; Hannah, 5 Dec. 1698; Ann, or Hannah, 4 Sept.
 1700; and he d. 16 Sept. 1738. / ROBERT, Haverhill, freem. 1668, wh.
 had rem. from Rowley, where he was as early as 1655, was ancest. of
 sev. fam. at H. perhaps of Thomas; was k. by the Ind. with his w. and
 ch. Sarah and Timothy, 15 Mar. 1697. / THOMAS, Ipswich 1639, baker,
 d. 1 May 1666; by w. Eliz. had Joseph; Nathaniel; James, wh. went
 to Eng. Thomas, wh. d. bef. his f. leav. wid. Eliz. and perhaps s. Thomas;
 and John, H. C. 1656, perhaps youngest, nam. in codic. to the will of his
 f. 1660. Most of these ch. were brot. by the f. from Eng. / THOMAS,
 Ipswich, perhaps gr.s. of Thomas the first, m. 1683, Phillis, eldest ch. of
 the sec. Jacob Perkins of same, but I am ign. as to issue. Thirty of
 this name had, in 1834, been gr. at Harv. and twenty at other N. E.
 coll. of wh. seventeen were ord. min. besides sev. others, preachers.

probably the son of Thomas Emerson. The name of Emerson has furn-
 ished 17 ordained ministers out of the 43 persons who had grad.
 at the N. E. colleges in 1828. Several others have been preachers,
 but not ordained. / JOHN, minister of Gloucester, son of Thomas
 Emerson, of Ipswich, grad. at H. C. 1656, was ordained 6 October,
 1663, and died 2 Dec. 1700, having preached more than 40 years.
 He married Ruth, daughter of Deputy-gov. Symonds in 1662. He
 had several children, of whom John, grad. at H. C. 1689, was prob-
 ably the preacher at Manchester, named in the Magnalia, i. 81,
 and was afterwards ordained at New-Castle, and installed the first
 minister of the 2d church in Portsmouth, 28 March, 1715, died 21
 June, 1732, a. 62. / JOHN, who grad. at H. C. in 1675, is put in
 italicks as being a minister. He was nephew to the preceding, and
 was probably the eminent schoolmaster at Newbury in 1681, after-
 wards at Charlestown, from whence he removed to Salem in 1699,
 and there d. in 1712. Wisner, Sermon on Hon. W. Phillips, Ap-
 pendix. Bentley. / JOSEPH, the first minister of Mendon, Mass.
 was ordained in 1667, [Worcester Magazine, ii. 373] and remained
 in office eight years. [Whitney, Hist. Co. Worcester, 56.] He
 removed to Concord, and d. there, 3 Jan. 1680. [Shattuck.]
 He m. Elizabeth, daughter of Rev. Edward Bulkley, 7 Dec. 1665,
 and had 3 sons. [Tradition.] His widow m. Capt. John Brown,
 of Reading, and one of her sons by Mr. Emerson, Peter, married a
 daughter of Capt. Brown, and was ancestor of Rev. Daniel Emerson,
 H. C. 1739, of Hollis, two of whose sons, Joseph and Samuel, grad.
 at H. College. Rev. Joseph Emerson, of Malden, was a son of
 Edward Emerson, and grandson of Rev. Joseph, of Mendon. He
 m. Mary, daughter of Samuel Moody, of York, and had 9 sons and
 4 daughters, and d. 13 July, 1767, in his 68th year. Three of the
 sons were ministers, Joseph, born 25 August, 1724, grad. at H. C.
 1743, settled at Pepperell, and d. 29 Oct. 1773; William, born 21
 May, 1743, grad. at H. C. 1761, settled at Concord; was a chap-
 lain in the rev. army, and d. at Rutland, Vt. 20 Oct. 1776; John,
 b. 20 Nov. 1745, grad. at H. C. 1764, and d. at Conway, Ms. July,
 1826, a. 81. William had but one son, the late Rev. William
 Emerson, of the first church in Boston, H. C. 1789, who d. 12 May,
 1811, a. 42, four of whose sons, William, Ralph Waldo, Edward
 Bliss, and Charles Chauncy, grad. at H. C. 1818, 1821, 1824, and
 1826. The second son was ordained at Boston as colleague with
 Rev. Henry Ware, 11 March, 1829. / ROBERT, Haverhill, free-
 man 1668, the ancestor of the Haverhill Emersons, of whom was
 Moses, H. C. 1737; Samuel, D. C. 1814, and John S., D. C. 1826
 are probably descendants. Thomas Emerson and his wife, and
 children Sarah and Timothy, of Haverhill, were killed by the In-
 dians, 15 March, 1697. / THOMAS, Ipswich 1639, d. 1 May, 1666.
 His wife was Elizabeth. His children were, Joseph, who had a son
 Joseph; Nathaniel; James, who went to England; Thomas, who d.
 before his father, and John, who is named in a codicil to his fa-
 ther's will 1660.

EMERSON, JOHN, (in the 13th line of the paragraph), who
 grad. at H. C. 1675, was probably the "worthy minister" at Ber-
 wick 1689, [Mather, ii. Magnalia, 511] who had a happy escape
 by declining an invitation to lodge at the house of Major Waldron
 at Dover, on the night of the 27th June, that year, when the Major
 and 22 of his family and neighbours were killed by the Indians.
 Dr. Belknap [i. Hist. N. H. 204] considers him as the future minis-
 ter of New Castle and Portsmouth, not recollecting that he had not
 then graduated. He might have been the schoolmaster named in
 the text, who d. at Salem in 1712.

Clippings, Cont'd

The Thomas Register pp. 96-7

Bottom - Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England. Use II pp 117-8

Emerson

Pages 7-10 regard the
Ipswich Emersons - clearly!

By Charles Henry Pope (1913)

Vol II came out in 1916 - Showing that
the Haverhill Emersons came from Northern
Lincolnshire. Their coat of arms there
was similar but not the same -
"Azure, on a bend argent 3 torseaux,
a crescent for difference." 
(argent)

(No positive connection of either the Haverhill nor
our Ipswich branch have been found to connect
them with the Yorkshire or Danish Emersons.)

Neither this nor the other book by Pope
are about our branch, except pages 7-8
attached describe our Thomas Emersonist his
father Robert Emerson's families accurately
(English records only) to differentiate them
from his branch.

JUN 6 1913
Inv. no. 505

CS

71

E53

1913

THE HAVERHILL EMERSONS

INTRODUCTORY

Two men of this surname, Michael and Robert Emerson or Emmerson, whom we know to have been brothers, appeared in the town of Haverhill very early in its history; the imperfect records do not show when they arrived in this country or whether they had a residence in any other plantation before making their home in Haverhill. Thomas Emerson, or "Emberson" as he signed himself in the deed to his son John in 1648, was one of the very earliest settlers of Ipswich, close by (a town, in fact, from which many of the founders of Haverhill came); and it is not at all unlikely that Michael and Robert may have been related to Thomas and either come over with him or joined him afterward and spent some years in Ipswich. Michael married an Ipswich girl, Robert one from Rowley, near by; but neither of them left traces of residing at the place where he found a bride. The fact that all the pioneers of Massachusetts were from England except a very small number who were uniformly specified in the records of the time as from some other country, and the abundant evidences of English traits and characteristics, make it entirely certain that the Haverhill and the Ipswich Emersons were natives and recent residents of England.

Two books have been issued that treat of this subject: "The English Emersons," by Dr. Peter Henry Emerson, and "The Ipswich Emersons" by Prof. Benjamin Kendall Emerson and Capt. George A. Gordon—large, expensive works. The former presents vast numbers of abstracts of wills, records of Chancery proceedings, investigations after death into estates, etc., etc., and many brief sketches of families and individuals in various parts of Great Britain; shows many a coat of arms and other symbol;

and also gives details of the ancestry and life of the writer who is a descendant of Thomas Emerson of Ipswich, born in Cuba, educated in and chiefly a resident of England. The conclusion of his researches is that Thomas Emerson of Ipswich was born at Bishop's Stortford in the county of Hertford, a little way from London, England, and spent some years there; and records of baptisms of children there, whose names are identical with Thomas' known children, are presented. Dr. Emerson failed to get copies of records at Bishop's Stortford for the years after the baptisms mentioned, or abstracts of wills or other documents which might show positively whether the persons concerned remained there, or whether Emersons of the parish that did remain mentioned the departure of some to America. This omission is serious, and the case is not absolutely settled until such investigation is made and reported. Dr. Emerson, however, was so far satisfied with the records found that he paid a large reward to Mr. Briggs who discovered them; and Prof. B. K. Emerson has adopted the solution of the problem offered by Dr. Emerson and gives it as a settled fact in "The Ipswich Emersons."

One matter is very definitely interesting to us in studying the origin of the Haverhill men of this name, namely, the claim made by Prof. B. K. Emerson that Robert Emerson of Haverhill was the eldest son of Thomas Emerson of Ipswich! This cannot be correct, for Thomas was in Ipswich as early as 1638, perhaps two or three years earlier; never referred in any way to Robert; had a son John old enough to receive a deed of land and enter into a business covenant to maintain his parents, in the year 1648; while Robert did not appear here till much later, so far as any record goes, and was married, apparently for the first time, in 1658; at no time does Robert give any token of having had wife or child before, nor allude to the Ipswich Emersons; and he is always mentioned second when his name and Michael's are coupled, indicating that he was the younger of the two. Michael, moreover, lived until the year 1715, thus giving reason for the belief that

he was not born earlier than 1625, and Robert, by all tokens here, must have been born several years later.

The claim made in "The Ipswich Emersons" that Robert of Haverhill was the eldest son of Thomas and a native of Bishop's Stortford, was therefore a baseless and thoroughly improbable *guess*, which ought never to have been printed. While it may be yet discovered that Michael and Robert were natives of that parish and nearly related to Thomas of Ipswich, it is not right to assert as a fact what was only an assumption in the beginning and would have been seen to be impossible had a brief amount of investigation been given to Robert's record here.

The Bishop's Stortford family is well worth studying, in connection with the Haverhill Emersons, because its first positively known representative, Robert Emberson or Emerson, was a "currier," a trade akin to that of Michael who was a shoemaker; the name Michael has not been found yet at Stortford by the searchers employed there; Michael and Robert might have been sons of Robert's son John. We present the following copies of what the two books give on this point, that our readers may see and judge for themselves.

1. "ROBERT EMERSON" married at Bishop's Stortford Nov. 24, 1578, Susan Crabb. She was buried Nov. 20, 1626, aged 70. He was buried Jan. 6, 1620-1. His will, dated Nov. 7, 1620, proved Jan. 23, 1620-1, is headed, "I, *Robert Emberson* of Stortford in County Herts currier, being aged and sickly"; to wife Susan lands in S. called Muggells Dale, containing about 12 acres, near a field called Woodfeild, to hold for her life with remainder after her death to Thomas Emberson, my eldest son; I give her also the messuage wherein I now dwell for the term of fifty years; afterward the same to go to Margaret my daughter now the wife of Thomas Browne of Southwarke for 50 years; after her decease to James Browne her son for all the term of years then to come. The residue of my goods to the said Susan for her life, and after her death to my four children Thomas, John, Anne and Margaret. (Com. Ct. of London.)

Children, bapt. at Bishop's Stortford:

- i. Alice, bapt. Nov. 22, 1579.
- ii. Margaret, bapt. Feb. 21, 1581-2.

2. iii. Thomas, bapt. July 26, 1584.
- iv. John, mentioned in father's will.
- v. Anne, mentioned in father's will.
- vi. Robert, bapt. Apr. 12, 1596; not ment. in fa.'s will.

2. THOMAS² (Robert¹) married July 1, 1611, Elizabeth Brewster. Mentioned in parish records of Bishop's Stortford as a collector for the poor in the year 1636. *This man is claimed as the Ipswich, Mass., pioneer.*

Children recorded at S.:

- i. Robert, bapt. May 24, 1612; m. at S. Oct. 22, 1635, Elizabeth Grave; had ch. Elizabeth, bapt. Dec. 3, 1637; was recorded at S. as giving 4d to the poor in 1642.
- ii. Benjamin, bapt. Oct. 2, bur. Oct. 27, 1614.
- iii. Ralfe, bapt. Oct. 19, 1615; bur. June 8, 1626.
- iv. James, bapt. Feb. 16, 1617.
- v. Joseph, bapt. June 25, 1620.
- vi. Elizabeth, bapt. June 14, 1623.
- vii. John, bapt. Feb. 26, 1625.
- viii. Nathaniel, bapt. July 18, 1630.
- ix. Susan, bapt. Mar. 17, 1632.

There is something very interesting if not convincing in the fact that the list of the Stortford Thomas' children contains the same name of the wife and six names of children the same as those known to be children of Thomas of Ipswich, namely Elizabeth, James, Joseph, John, Nathaniel and Susan, and that the dates of their baptisms correspond in general with those believed to be the birth-dates of these Ipswich children. It is strange that we have no positive record here in New England of the ages of these persons, excepting Nathaniel, particularly as Joseph and John became ministers of some distinction; but neither Thomas nor either of those sons here (with the solitary exception of Nathaniel) left a statement of his age in any court testimony, as was often done in those days; so that there is no *absolute* test which may be applied to the comparison of the Stortford family with the Ipswich family. But the mention of four sons and two daughters, with the approximation to the ages commonly accepted

here of the Ipswich family, certainly stands as *very strong presumptive evidence that they are identical*, and that the Massachusetts baker was the son of the Stortford currier.

But so far as the Haverhill Emersons are concerned there is nothing in these Stortford records that solves the problem of their origin. There are, however, many places in England where records show that the name Michael Emerson was common in that period, and often associated with both Robert and Thomas; and the spelling Emmerson and Emberson are frequent there; and some one of those places may have been the cradle of the Haverhill family. Sereby, in the county of Lincoln, was one of them; and the following will, given first by Mr. Henry F. Waters and afterward by Dr. Emerson, deserves to be followed out by any who investigate this problem.

Alexander Emerson of Sereby in the county of Lincoln, yeoman, made will 10 April, 1604, proved 10 February, 1605. Lands in Sereby, Howsam, Cadney and Glamford Brigges (all in Lincolnshire and not far easterly from Scrooby whence the Mayflower party came); bequests to wife, sons Michael, Robert, Thomas, James and John; deceased son George. (Pr. Ct. of Cant., Stafford, 8.)

Dr. Emerson has brought out in "The English Emersons" many wills of persons connected with this family, and none of them offers any evidence that members of the clan had come to America; but the ground has not yet been completely explored. There is a good field for research upon this problem.

Before the coming of Emersons to Massachusetts there had been some arriving in Virginia. William Emerson came over as a partner of John Davies in 1618 and was living at Jordan's Journey February 16, 1623. Ellis Emerson with wife Ann and son Thomas, aged 11 years, came in "The George" in 1623, and was living at Martin's Hundred. Whether they left descendants or not is unknown to the writer.

John Emerson (the name abbreviated as "Jo:") came to Boston in "The Abigail" in 1635; the only note in Hotten

regarding him is his age, — "20." He settled at Scituate and married a daughter of Rev. John Lothrop; then disappeared from our records. It has been asserted that he was called "baker" in Hotten's list of passengers; but this is incorrect.

A matter of considerable interest to some persons is the question whether the Massachusetts Emersons were entitled to bear a "coat of arms." We have seen that Thomas called himself "baker" in the deed wherein he conveyed property to his son John and made conditions to which he alluded in his will; so that the ignorant person who carved a coat of arms on the gravestone of Thomas' youngest son, Nathaniel, made a silly blunder. The Haverhill Emersons were also "yeomen," as Thomas and his family called themselves; so that no descendant of either of the Massachusetts Emerson families has the slightest reason for using any coat of arms as from Emerson ancestry.

It is the glory of New England that her founders were, with a very small number of exceptions, scions of the middle class, the real honor and strength of England, diligent workers in useful avocations, whose lives were filled with loving service for God and humanity. They cared more for helping hands than for empty "arms."

FIRST GENERATION

TABLE IV
LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH
MASSACHUSETTS⁷⁶

William Adams	William Knight
John Annable	John Knowlton
Samuel Appleton	Thomas Knowlton
✓ William Averill	William Knowlton
Henry Bachellor	William Lampson
Robert Beacham	Roger Lancton
Thomas Beery	John Lee
Jeremy Belcher	Thomas Lee
Richard Bisgood	Edward Lumas
Thomas Bishop	Richard Lumkin
✓ Thomas Boorman, Sr.	Thomas Manning
Thomas Bracey	Joseph Medcalfe
Humphrey Bradstreet	Joseph Morse
Simon Bradstreet	Robert Muzzey
Thomas Brewer	Thomas Newman
John Brown	John Norton
Mathias Button	Christopher Osgood
Lionel Chute	William Paine
John Clark, Jr.	✓ Moses Pengry
John Clark, Sr.	John Perkins
Thomas Clark	John Perkins, Jr.
Isaac Comings	John Perkins, Sr.
John Cowley	Allen Perley
Robert Cross	John Pettis
Francis Dane	Henry Pindarr
John Dane, Jr.	Samuel Podd
John Dane, Sr.	John Proctor
John Davis	Mark Quilter
Robert Day	Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Thomas Dorman	Joseph Redding
William Douglas	Nathaniel Rogers
✓ Thomas Emerson	Thomas Safford
William Fellows	Richard Saltonstall
Giles Firmin	Richard Schofield
Thomas Firmin	Thomas Scott
Reginald Foster	John Shatswell
Thomas French	Theophilus Shatswell
John Gage	Richard Smith
Edmund Gardner	Thomas Smith
George Giddings	Simon Stace
William Goodhue	Mark Symonds
Henry Greene	✓ Samuel Symonds
Thomas Hart	✓ John Tuttle
Richard Hatley	Jonathan Wade
Andrew Hodges	Daniel Warner

James Howe
Thomas Howlett
William Hubbard
✓ John Jackson
Richard Jacob
Francis Jordan
Richard Kimball
Henry Kingsbury
✓ Robert Kinsman
Alexander Knight

Richard Wattles
Thomas Wells
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
William White
Robert Whitman
John Whittingham
Theophilus Wilson
Robert Woodmansee
John Wyatt
Samuel Younglove

*Ipswich Grants, p. 84.

Within five years need arose for more commonage. The commoners voted in 1665 to divide 800 acres which included Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck. It was to be divided among those with common rights according to the proportion of 4, 6, and 8 based on the amount of taxes paid as follows:⁷⁶

- 4 - those not exceeding 6s. 8d. in a county rate
- 6 - those not exceeding 16s.
- 8 - those exceeding 16s. together with magistrates, and elders

It was decided that a single share would be 3 acres—that is to say that those under the “4” proportion would receive 3 acres; under the “6” proportion $4\frac{1}{2}$ acres; under the “8” proportion 6 acres.⁷⁷ This manner of dividing resulted in the creation of 28 double shares, 70 divisions of $1\frac{1}{2}$ shares, and 105 single-share lots. That meant a total of 203 commoners in the town in 1665, although some of the commoners were not persons. For example, the meetinghouse was given a double share.

The most significant thing about the dividing of the commons in 1665 was the manner in which it was done. By basing it on taxation these records fill the gap caused by the lack of early tax lists. The list of commoners made in 1665 also served as a ranking of material wealth and to some extent social standing. It might be said that the double shareholders were the wealthy and leading citizens. The next group, those receiving $1\frac{1}{2}$ shares, could be considered to be those of upper or middle status. Listed in the first group were the Symonds, the Hubbards, the Appletons, the Paines, the Cogswells, and most of the other names which constantly occur in any discussion of public life in the town.

⁷⁶ Town Records, p. 16.

⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 17.

MS. A. 9. 2. 1. 1. 1.

EMERSON, Thomas 1, was a commoner in 1641; and one of the seven men in 1646. He had granted to him 1638, sixty-four acres of land adjoining Goodman Mussey. In 1648, he converts to his son John a farm of 120 acres, on conditions. In the deed the name is written Emberson. In 1650, June 13, he sells to Joseph Jewett, a farm granted to him by the town of Ipswich, containing four score acres, scituate beyond the north river on the south side of Prospect Hill, having the land of Richard Kimball and John Pickard towards the south east and the land of John Cross towards the north east, a highway of two rods broad lying between the land of Rowley and said farm.

October 6, 1652. Joseph Emerson and Elisabeth his wife, sell to his father, Thomas Emerson, meadow and upland at Labor-in-vain.

He sold to Daniel Ringe, by a deed dated Feb. 14, 1648, and acknowledged Feb. 25, 1655, a dwelling house* and six acres of land lying next the dwelling house of John Dane towards the south. He died May 1, 1666. His will is dated May 31, 1653, and the inventory of his estate is recorded Nov. 3, 1666, in which record he is styled "Goodman Emerson, sen'r." He left a wife Elisabeth, and sons Joseph, John, James and Nathaniel; and a daughter Elisabeth, wife of John Fuller. He bequeathes to his wife, "the yearly rent of the farm with the six head of cattle, also the house, &c. during the time that she doth continue my widdow." To his "sonne Joseph the some of eighty pounds of current pay of Newengland." To his "sonne James, the some of forty pounds to be paid unto him if he shall come over into this country, or send by a certain surtificate of his being living within two years after the decease of me & my wife. In case

See sketch
(house shown in Picture)
This venerable mansion still stands. It is situated on Turkey Shore. It was owned in 1648 by Thomas Emerson, and sold by him to Daniel Ringe. Daniel Ringe died in 1661. It was next owned by Uzael Wardwell, who sold it to William Howard, and it is still called the Howard House by aged people. William Howard left it to his sons, William, Samuel and John. Samuel Howard bought it, and at his death, in 1766, he left it to his son Stephen Howard. Stephen removed to Connecticut and sold it to Samuel Ringe, a son of Isaac Ringe and grandson of Daniel Ringe above mentioned. A little later it was owned by Capt. Ebenezer Caldwell, whose first wife was Lucy, daughter of Samuel Ringe, above mentioned, and Mary (Appleton) his wife. Capt. Caldwell's second wife was Mercy, daughter of the famous sheriff William Dodge. Capt. Caldwell died in 1821. Since then the house has been in possession of Aaron Wallis, and others. — A picture of this house, by Arthur W. Dove, 1880, will be found in these pages in connection with the Ringe Family. — Printer, 1881.

my sonne dye before then, my will is that my sonne Joseph his sonne Joseph shall have ten pounds, and my daughter Fuller her four sonnes twenty pounds, and my son Nathaniel ten pounds."

To Nathaniel, "my house wherein I now dwell, with all my upland and meadow, and the marsh yt bought of my sonne Joseph wh was sometime Mr. Woodmansys." To his daughter, Elisabeth Fuller, "the best feather bed and bouldstar, with a pair of blanketts and the best coverlet and the bedstead, to enjoy for her use until her daughter Susana atayne the age of twenty years or the day of her marriage, if should happen sooner, then she to enjoy them also." He gives her also, "the great carved chest and the carved box with a little trunk with all is in it, and a small carved chest with what is in it."

In a codicil dated Jan. 4, 1660, he mentions having given unto his son John, "his portion full in ye consideration of yt agreement between us about my farm," &c. He bequeathes legacies to his daughter Fuller's two daughters, Susanna and Elisabeth, to be paid to them at "ye age of twenty years or at ye day of marriage." [See Fuller, John.]

He appoints his "loving wife, Elisabeth Emerson, sole excecatrix, and doe desire my much honored and faithful friends, Mr. Samuel Symonds and Major Gen'l Daniel Denison, to be overseers to see yt this my will be fulfilled. The will was proved May, 1666.

John 2, son of Thomas, was graduated at Harvard College in 1656, at which time he must have been not less than forty years old. [John Emerson, aged 20, passenger in the ship Elisabeth Ann, for New England, 1635.] He was a subscriber to Major Denison's compensation in 1618; and received a deed for a farm of his father, the same year. He married in 1662, Ruth, daughter of Hon. Samuel Symonds, and settled as minister at Gloucester, October 6, 1663, where he continued until his decease, Dec. 2, 1700. He left his property which was large to the sole disposal of his wife; with nominal legacies to his son John and his daughters Ruth Newman, Martha Cogswell, (wife of William Cogswell, married October 9, 1685,) Mary Phillips, Dorothy Emerson. To his son he gave 40s in money, and to his daughters 20s, and adds, "which I do give them besides what I have given them already." His will is dated Feb. 3, 1697-8, and was proved Dec. 23, 1700. Besides large possessions in Gloucester, he had in Ipswich a farm "lying by the farm of Mr. Denison on the south east, having Mr Emerson, tenant." Another farm "having the Town river lying upon the north west of the farm, having 20 acres of meadow land lying by the crick called the Labour-in-vain crick, having Capt. Ringe and Mr. Howard tenants." And another farm "in Argilla in Ipswich, John Ross and James Burly being tenants." The last mentioned

farm he inherited from his father-in-law, Symonds.

John 3, son of John 2, according to Farmer, graduated at Harvard College 1689, was probably the preacher at Manchester, named in the Magnalia, and was afterwards ordained at New Castle and installed the first minister of the 2d church in Portsmouth, 28 March, 1715, died 21 June, 1732 aged 62. He was sworn a freeman, March, 1684. He appears from the following extract from the town records to have possessed the farm which had been his father's at Labor-in-vain, in 1703. "May 6, 1703. Voted to allow Mr. John Emerson three pounds toward a highway to his farm," And "Thomas Emerson declared in town meeting yt he would freely lay down an highway thro his land from Nathaniel and Thomas Wells land to Mr. John Emerson's land." He was a resident of Ipswich in 1713, when with his wife Mary, he lost an infant son, named John. "Here Lyes interred ye Body of John, son to John & Mary Emerson, a minister of ye Gospel at Portsmouth, aged about 2 months, who expired June ye 7th, 1714." The anachronism in the epitaph may be explained by supposing the grave stone to have been erected some years after the decease of the child, when the father had become the minister of Portsmouth. The wife of John 3, was Mary Batters of Salem; they had six daughters.

Joseph 2, son of Thomas 1, and probably the eldest, was a subscriber to Major Denison's compensation in 1648. October 6, 1652, he with Elisabeth his wife sells to his father, meadow and upland at Labour-in-vain; the farm probably afterward possessed by John 2.

He married (1) Elisabeth Woodmansy, daughter of Robert Woodmansy, and had: Joseph, (who probably died in Boston leaving one daughter, Mary;) and James.

He married (2) Elisabeth Bulkley, and had: Peter, Ebenezer, Jane, Edward, (ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson,) Daniel.

Nathaniel 2, son of Thomas 1, died Dec. 29, 1712, aged 83. [See page 85, inscription and Arms.]

Sarah, wife of Nathaniel, died August 3, 1670.

Lydia, wife of Nathaniel, died August 17, 1716, aged 76. In a petition to the Court of Probate, August 6, 1694, Mrs. Lydia Emerson represents herself as the relict of Nathaniel Wells, late of Ipswich. Epitaph 63.

Martha Emerson 2, daughter of Thomas 1, married William Cogswell, and had: Edward, William, Emerson, Martha, Dorothy.

Nathaniel 3, son of Nathaniel 2, died Sept. 16, 1738, aged 81 yrs and one month. He was, accordingly, born in August, 1657. He married Martha Woodward, Feb. 1, 1685. They had

Nathaniel, born Dec. 26, 1686, married Elisabeth Whipple.

Stephen, married (1) Mary, (2) Widow Lydia Norman.

Joseph, born June 26, 1690, married Abigail Perkins.

Mary, born January 19, 1691.

Broster, born June 28, 1695, married Thankful Howland.

Mary, born Dec. 18, 1697, m Lieut. Jacob Tilton, 1723.

Hannah, born December 5, 1698, married Mr. Michael Farley

Annah, born Sept. 4, 1700, married Benjamin Studley.

By the following extract from the Court Records of Essex County, it may be feared he was not so strict in his early deportment as the manners of the age required: "March, 1673. Nathaniel Emerson for being in company with Peter Cross and others at Jonas Gregory's and drinking thyr of stolen wine, was admonished and to pay costs and fees." At this time he was not more than 16 years old, and it may be hoped that he benefitted by the legal admonition, and afterward kept better company than Peter Cross and Jonas Grégory, who do not appear ever to have been citizens of Ipswich.*

Thomas 8, son of Nathaniel 2, possessed a farm near Labour-in-vain adjoining his cousin John Emerson's. He married Nov 20, 1685, Phillippa Perkins. She died April 26, 1738, aged 67 yrs 5 months.—

They had:

Sarah, born July 6, 1691, married William Hunt, 1710.

Elisabeth, born July 16, 1693.

Thomas, born March 1696.7.

Thomas, June 4, 1699,

Mary, born April 20, 1704, married Stephen Story, 1721.

Mehitable, married Solomon Burnham, October 17, 1729.

Elisabeth, married Francis Goodhue, Jan. 5, 1733.

Phillipa, married John Hurlbert, 1759.

James 3 son of Joseph 2 and Sarah his wife, had, ("taken from his book after his decease,")

James, born March 13, 1692,

John, born June 9, 1694,

Joseph, born Dec. 18, 1696.

Nathaniel 4, son of Nathaniel 3, married Elisabeth Whipple, pub. Nov. 19, 1715. They had:

Elisabeth, born 2 10 1716,
 Sarah, born 9 1 1718, married John Brown, Dec. 8. 1736.
 Mary, born June 12, 1720, m. John Andrews, Meh 13. 1741.
 Martha, born Aug. 19, 1722, m. Nath'l Adams. 1746.
 Nathaniel.
 Priscilla, married William Adams.
 Hannah, married Nath'l Howe of Topsfield.
 Isaac, born 1728 died 1780.

Broster 4, son of Nathaniel 3, published with Thankful Howland, March 24, 1727. He was drowned at Plum Island Oct. 15. 1728, and Widow Thankful Emerson married Ebenezer Smith, July 2, 1729.

Joseph 4, son of Nath'l 3, married Abigail Perkins. 1722, and had:
 Joseph.

Abraham, born Nov. 13. 1726

Broster, born April 12. 1830

Abigail, born August 29, 1731.

Stephen 4, son Nath'l 3, had wife Mary, who died Oct 22, 1732, aged 30. They had:

Stephen, born Dec. 1, 1728, died 1732.

Mary, born May 3, 1730.

He married (2) Widow Lydia Norman of Boston, and had:

Anstice, who m. Wm. Badger of Newbury, 1751

Stephen went to Buxton, Me. 1735; to Newmarket, 1758

Thomas 4, son of Thomas 3, and Sarah, had:

Sarah born Oct. 31, 1724, m. Sam'l Cummins of Uxbridge.

Mary, b. June 20, 1727, m. Samuel Baker, jr., 1748.

Lucy, b. May 15, 1729, m. Johathan Cole of Beverly, 1747.

Elisabeth, June 27, 1733, m. James Emerson of Uxbridge.

John, b. July 30, 1734, m. Dorothy Foster, 1755

Ruth, b. March 12, 1737.

Nathaniel 5, son of Nathaniel 4, married Deborah Barnham, 1773; his daughters Deborah m. Abner Poland, and Mary, David Lull

1746, Joseph Emerson 5, probably son of Joseph 4, m. Mehitable Wheeler, of Gloucester; his second wife was Mary. He had Mehitable, Joseph, Benjamin

The following has reference probably to daughters of Nath'l 2:—
 Phillis Emerson died Aug. 1693, Deborah Emerson appointed adm'x.

* Martha Cogswell, was daughter of John 2, and gr-dau. of Thomas, Wrongly stated on page 88. We have added to Mr. Hammett's sketch, gleanings from Town Records and from Prof. Emerson's MSS. (Amherst College)

EMERSON.

High Street Burying Yard. Copied by Arthur W. Dove, 1880.



Here Lyes ye Body of Mr Nathan'l

Emerson who Died Decemr ye

29 1712, aged 83.



Emerson

THE
IPSWICH EMERSONS

A.D. 1636—1900

A GENEALOGY OF THE DESCENDANTS OF
THOMAS EMERSON OF IPSWICH, MASS.
WITH SOME ACCOUNT OF HIS
ENGLISH ANCESTRY

BY

BENJAMIN KENDALL EMERSON
(1294)

ASSISTED BY

CAPT. GEO. A. GORDON
Secretary N. E. Historic Genealogical Society

ILLUSTRATED

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION

BOSTON
PRESS OF DAVID CLAPP & SON
MCM.

DATE MICROFILM

4-7-78

ITEM ON ROLL

8

CAMERA NO.

5217

CATALOGUE NO.

X-1187-102#92

Microfilm #

103 6803 #8

4852

(An earlier microfilmed copy is in the file cabinet to save space)
being sent to Billie Dec 1996

THE NAME EMERSON.

THE family from which I am derived is not an ignoble one, but hath descended all along from the priests; and as nobility among several people is of a different origin, so with us to be of the sacerdotal dignity, is an indication of the splendor of a family.—FLAVIUS JOSEPHUS—*Whiston's Translation*, page 1.

These sought their register among those that were reckoned by genealogy *Nehemiah*, vii: 64.

"We have in New England a certain number of families who constitute what may be called the Academic Races. Their names have been in college catalogues for generation after generation. They have filled the learned professions, more especially the ministry, from the old colonial days to our own time. If aptitudes for the acquisition of knowledge can be bred into a family as the qualities a sportsman wants are bred in his dog, are developed in pointers and setters, we know what we may expect in a descendant of one of the Academic Races. Other things being equal, he will take more naturally, more easily, to his books. His features will be more pliable, his voice will be more flexible, his whole nature more plastic than those of the youth with less favorable antecedents. The gift of genius is never to be reckoned upon beforehand, any more than a choice new variety of pear or peach in a seedling; it is always a surprise, but it is born with great advantages when the stock from which it springs has been long under cultivation. These thoughts suggest themselves in looking back at the striking record of the family made historic by the birth of Ralph Waldo Emerson. It was remarkable for the long succession of clergymen in its genealogy, and for the large number of college graduates it counted in its rolls." O. W. HOLMES.—*Biography of Ralph Waldo Emerson, in American Men of Letters*.

"*Richardus fil. Emerici*," from the writs of Parliament of the 13th century (Bardsley, *English Surnames*, 2d edit., 1875, p. 29), is perhaps the earliest and, as it were, embryonic form of the name in England, at a time when modern surnames were in a process of formation. It was the son of Emery, a patronymic introduced into England by the Normans, according to Bardsley, from the continent where as Americ, Emeric, Almeric, Almaric, Elmeric it had a wide and early use, and whence, in its Italian form Amerigo, it has given a name to the New World. Emery's son became Emmerison, Emmerson, Emberson, Imeson and, most widely, Emerson.

Heintzel,* the last and best authority, derives the name, Aimeric, in its oldest form Haimericus, from the old Teutonic, Haim=house, dwelling, estate, and Riks=rule, power, kingdom (Gothic, Haims and Reiks).

Haims is translated by Heintzel, Dorf=village and Reiks mützig=mighty, and compared with *rex, rego*, so that the word had perhaps the meaning of a village ruler or chieftain.

It is built after the type of Dumnorix, Orgetorix, Vercingetorix, Frederic. It has become Heinrich, Henry in one direction; Aimeric, Emery, Emerson in another.

It is said that Mr. George B. Emerson thought the name originated from the town, Emmerich, in Rhenish Prussia, and visited the place; but with what result is not known. The name of the town has been derived from the old patronymic, Emeric, in old high German Emheri, from the root her=*exercitus*. (Graff vi. 986; Pott, *Die Personen und Familien Namen*, i. 259). It has been suggested that the Persian *Emir* may be of common derivation with Emeric, ie being a diminutive termination. (Bardsley, loc. cit.). Pott associates doubtfully the German Immermann and Immersohn with St. Immer in Switzerland, and suggests their derivation from some early saint.

When, in 1889, the author called upon the Bishop of Durham for assistance in studying the antiquities of Durham, the latter called attention to the fact, that Professor Rygh, of Christiania, had given an early Scandinavian form of the name;—*Aymer-son*, and that James I., when visiting Denmark, in 1589, to meet his wife, Anne of Denmark, had an Emerson in his retinue.

* Albert Heintzel, *Die Deutschen Familien-Namen*. Halle, 1892.

Fergusson, in *English Surnames*, says: "Hari, a warrior; Old German, Emaher, Em hari; tenth century English, Emher or Emery; French, Imher, Emmery; perhaps our Emery and Emersons may be from Ymir, a giant of northern mythology."

Lower, in *Patronymica Britannica*,* has:

Emberson, Emmerson, for Emerson.

Emerson, the son of *Emeric*, or Almericus, and *Emary*. See Amory.

Emson, *Empson* and *Emmett*. Perhaps the son of an uncle, from A-Sax., *eam*, an uncle.

Emery, the ancient personal name, Almericus.

Amery, *Amory*. From the personal name, Emeric or Almericus, equivalent to the Italian Amerigo, latinized *Americus*, whence the name of the great western continent. It seems to have undergone the following changes: Emeric, Emery, Amory, Ammory, and in Domesd. Haimericus.

In a second edition Lower says, "Names derived from baptismal names (in the genitive case), i. e., Emerson, genitive of Emery, from Almeric. Amery, Emery, Amerigo, from Amalrich, meaning an exalted ruler (*ric*)."

It is asserted, however (Burke's Landed Gentry), that the family of D'Amery came to England with the conqueror from Tours.

In a most learned anonymous work, "The Norman People,"† we find:

Emary and *Emory* for Amory.

Amory and *Amery*, from Hamars, near Caen.

Dormer, from Amars, or Amory, near Caen.

A Gilbert D'Amory had grants . . . in Oxford.

In 1129, Roger de Amar witnessed the charter of Oseney. About 1180, Ralph was Lord of Hamars, in Normandy, and in 1198, Alice Daumari was of Bucks From a younger branch derived William De Aumers, of Bucks, 1311, 1319, and Geoffrey Dormer (Daumer) of West-Wycombe, Bucks, 14th cent., ancestor of the Earls of Carnarvon, and the Lords Dormer. From a branch in Somerset descended the Damers, or Damorys, Earls of Dorchester.

The author also quotes (p. 78) Imrie and Emery as names armorially identified.

In Leland's copy of the Roll of Battell Abbey occurs the name Damary, which connects with the above, and Aimeris.

* A dictionary of the family names of the United Kingdom endeavored by Mark Anthony Lower, M.A., F.S.A. London, MDCCCLX.

† The Norman People. Henry S. King & Co., London. 1874.

The following, sent by Mr. Ralph Emerson (810), may find place here as an interesting illustration of the way in which the name may spread abnormally:

There is an establishment in Rockford, Ill., conducted by a couple of Swedes, who call themselves the "Emerson Bros." Upon inquiry I learned they immigrated here from Sweden, and found they must adopt some surname. Swedes, coming here, usually take their father's name and add "son" to it. Their grandfather's name was Emanuel, so their father called himself Emanuelson. His given name was Jonas. When the three young children started in school, the oldest gave her surname, Emanuelson, following the American fashion; but the two younger gave their names as Jonason, following the Swedish fashion. The teacher, confused by having different surnames given by children of the same family, cut the matter short by saying "Emerson is a good name; I shall call you all Emersons." Her decision was so satisfactory that it was adopted by the entire family, the oldest son even changing his first name Carl to Charles, in order to become more completely an American.

I can but wonder how hard their descendants may be searching, one hundred years from now, in your book for proof that they descended from Thomas, of Ipswich.

The author had once a similar experience. Going into a public reading room, which had been established by the missionaries, at Amballa, in Northern India, he found on the door a notice that various tracts, selections from the Vedas, and refutations of Madam Blavatsky, could be had by applying to Rev. R. W. Emerson. On inquiry, he learned that the person was a native helper, who, on conversion, had renounced his old name and taken this new name in token of a new faith.

THE WEARDALE.

THE Weardale, in the county of Durham, in the north of England, has been for many hundred years a home of the Emersons.

The broad moorlands of carboniferous sandstone are there about 2,000 feet above the sea, and the long and narrow valley of the Wear is cut down through these rocks to the carboniferous limestones, which form, at about 600 feet above sea level, the floor of the valley.

The valley of the Wear narrows, near Walsingham, and ceases to be called the Weardale there; the river, running south in the narrow valley, turns north at Bishop Auckland, and passes Durham on its way to the sea. Everywhere, up and down the valley, are the signs of lead mining, and the beautiful fluorite, or Derbyshire spar of the Weardale, which is obtained from these lead mines, is known to lovers of minerals all over the world. The gases from the smelting kills the plants around the miners' cabins, and one sees great piles of the beautiful blue and purple cubes heaped up in front of the houses in place of flower beds, or ranged along the window sills as ornaments.

The ground rises in fine slopes from the valley bottom, and these are dotted, here and there, by the venerable heavy stone farm buildings, each standing isolated in the midst of its grounds; each having its ancient name, as Redburn, Westgate, or Tarn House. These names persist, while the farms pass from one family to another; and, when I first began to read of the Emersons of the Weardale, I assumed these names to be the names of villages, and was puzzled because I could not find them on the best English maps.

The railway circles round to the north, by Walsingham common, and reaches the Dale at Stanhope, where is an interesting old inn beside which is an ancient church, where bishop Butler preached while writing the *Analogy*, and where many Emersons lie buried.

I drove up the valley with the pleasant guidance of the antiquarian and historian, Mr. W. M. Egglestone; visited the St. John's chapel, where is a memorial window, with the Emerson arms, and a mural brass tablet, with the same arms, in colors differing slightly with the windows. I visited Hotts, and paid my respects to the last Emerson in the Weardale, who was mine host in the village inn. He was a large, dark, undemonstrative man; but when I was introduced to him as a kinsman from over seas, he called in his wife, his maids and his ostler; and insisted on celebrating the event with liberal potations of north country whiskey.

I visited the Westgate and the other entrances to the ancient forest of the princely bishops of Durham, in which the Emersons grew up as a clan of foresters. I brought away a rich booty of beautiful minerals, and many pleasant memories of the sturdy mining folk, and the quiet beauty of the ancient home of my tribe.

THE EMERSON COAT OF ARMS.

Burke's Dictionary of the Landed Gentry for 1853, vol. ii. p. 1376, describes the armorial bearings of the Emersons, as follows: Per fesse indented, *vert* and *or*, a bend, engrailed, *arg.*, charged with three lions, passant, of the first, bezanté. CREST.—A demi-lion, rampant, *vert*, bezanté, grasping a battle-axe, *gules*, headed, *arg.*"

Mr. Fox-Davies, in his (1892) revised edition of Fairbairn's Book of Crests, gives these crests to the Emersons of England, viz.:

1. Emerson, of Northumberland, a sinister wing proper, charged with a bend *or*, and thereon three torteaux.
2. Emerson, of Durham, a lion rampant *vert*, bezantée, holding a battle-axe *gules*, headed *argent*.
3. Emerson, of Lincolnshire and Norfolk, issuing from a cloud rays of the sun all proper.

This (3) crest appears incorrectly in America with the motto, *Emerge*.

Two crests of Emerson in Ireland are also given, which are apparently modifications of the Durham (2) crest.

Gerard Leigh, 1562–1612, author of the *Accedence of Armorie*, describes the fanciful language of arms; agreeable to which the Emerson arms are indicative of forestry in the tinctures of the shield, *vert* signifying the greensward, or the verdure; *the fesse indented*, the teeth of the wild animals; *the bend engrailed*, the marks of violent storms. In general,

Vert.—Signifies joy, gladness, love.

Or.—All pleasure and jollity.

Argent.—A lieutenant of reliable character.

Gules.—Determination and resolution.

Azure.—Mirth and merriment.

A lion.—Qualities of a courageous and generous character.

" *rampant*.—Brave and gallant.

" *passant*.—Majesty and clemency.

Torteaux.—Plenty or abundance.

No motto appears with Ralph's arms, but the Emersons of Easby Hall, Yorkshire, have adopted *Honeste et Fideliter*. Dr. P. H. Emerson has used *Audacter et hilare*, and an exemplification of

the arms of Ralph, of Foxton, was allowed him by patent, dated September 14, 1897. The Lincolnshire family use the motto *Emerge*. The Northumberland Emersons, as another pleasant heraldic pun, use *Emeritus*.

Several interesting old copies of the Arms exist in America which have come down in different branches of the family.

One form, facing this page, descended in the family of Bulkeley Emerson, of Newburyport (son of Joseph, son of Edward, son of Joseph, of Mendon), who was a bookseller and literary man, and postmaster of Newburyport, Mass., in Washington's administration, was presumably copied by him from some earlier form. It is in possession of Mrs. Handon, wife of a grandson of Bulkeley Emerson, in Portsmouth, N. H. It is endorsed:

"He beareth *Vert* and *Or*, on a bend engrailed, *Azure*, 3 Lions passant, *Argent*, Crest, a Lion passant, *Vert*, holding a Battle-axe in his fore-paw."

It thus differs from the arms granted to Ralph. It was, probably, the work of John Coles, the spurious heraldist, who flourished at Boston, a century ago.

A William Emerson of Boston, probably the father of Ralph Waldo Emerson, was the first person in America to use the arms on a book plate. His plate gives evidence of having been the work of the engraver, Calendar.—*N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, xl: 295.

The most interesting copy of the arms, facing page 9, is preserved on the walls of the New-England Historic Genealogical Society's building, 18 Somerset street, in Boston, which has the following history, given me by Capt. Geo. A. Gordon, secretary of the society:

Some years ago, Mr. Wm. G. Brooks, father of Rev. Phillip Brooks, D.D., Bishop of Massachusetts, presented the society with a blazon of arms, in water colors, which now hangs on our library wall. It bears endorsement:

'Arms of the Emerson Family.

'Samuel Phillips, goldsmith, of Salem, married Mary Emerson May 6, 1687. She was the daughter of Rev. John and Ruth (Symonds) Emerson, of Gloucester, and granddaughter of Dep. Gov. Symonds of Ipswich.

'This coat of arms I obtained from Miss Harriet Russell, of North Yarmouth, Me., who was great granddaughter of Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, who was son of the above-named Samuel Phillips, of Salem.

'Harriet Russell died at North Yarmouth, May 3, 1851, aged 88.

'This paper was obtained in 1849.

(Signed)

WM. G. BROOKS.'



Under the face of the blazon is written :

The Arms and Crest, above depicted, were granted to Ralph Emerson, of Foxton, in the County Palatine of Durham ; by Tho : Wall, Garter Principal King of Arms, A° : 26 Hen. VIII.

Ita Testor

ROB. DALE,

Facialis Titulo Suffol^e,

25 Jan 1709.

Colleg. Armor. Registrarij Deputatus.

Sir Thomas Wall was Calais pursuivant extraordinary under Richard III. ; Berwick pursuivant extraordinary, Henry VII. ; Lancaster Herald, 1509, Henry VIII. ; Rouge Croix pursuivant, 1521, Henry VIII. ; and Garter King at Arms, 1534, Henry VIII. He died 1536.

Robert Dale was Suffolk Herald extraordinary, under Queen Anne ; Richmond Herald, 1721, George I. He was deputy registrar to the Earl Marshal. He died 1722.

Noble says, in his history of the College of Arms, that Dale was probably an heraldic painter before he was herald.

In the archives of the college of Arms in London is this letter :

Dear Sir,—The bearer, the Reverend Mr. John Emerson, lately come from New England, wants some information out of your office. I beg you would use him as my friend and you will very much oblige,

Dear sir, your most obedient humble servant,

(Signed) HENRY NEWMAN.

WHITEHALL, 26 Sept., 1709.

To Robert Dale, Esq., of the Heraldry office.

Note in the handwriting of the said Robert Dale :

Mr. Emerson at the Golden Acorn in Bell Alley, Coleman St.

Mr. Emerson overhauled the Emerson records, but was chiefly seeking information *re* Atkinson family.*

Rev. John Emerson (20), of New Castle, N. H., was the grandson of Thomas (1), of Ipswich, Mass., and the arms were obtained three years before the death of Nathaniel Emerson, of Ipswich. The achievement of the arms on the fine large gravestone of Nathaniel (7), who was uncle to John, in the old burial ground in Ipswich, was probably made from this newly-obtained blazon, and is presented, facing page 48. It is interesting to observe that the "Mr.," which had been omitted by the workman upon the gravestone, was afterward inserted, showing that the family insisted on its gentle birth.

Dr. Emerson gives a very full discussion of all the armorial bearings of Emersons in England, and writes as follows concerning the arms of Ralf of Foxton :

And lastly, the Emersons of Ipswich, Mass., U.S.A., or rather the lineal descendants of Thomas Emerson and Elizabeth his wife, who appeared in

* The English Emersons, p. 11, and Ap. cxxi.

Ipswich, Mass., in 1638, claim the arms, and are demonstrably by a long way the oldest claimants to the coat, and by a long way the most likely to turn out true heirs to the coat if the matter ever be cleared up; but at present this family has no right to use these or any arms, not having given legal proof of their descent from Ralf, of Foxton, armiger. The probabilities are in their favour, and that is all; but they are strongly in their favour.

Thomas Emerson, who emigrated to Massachusetts about 1638 (if a lineal descendant of Ralf, armiger), would probably be either son or grandson (most likely grandson), which is getting close. He was a man of substance (*vide* his will) and a strong Puritan. If he had not really the right to the arms, at least his family knew of their existence at that period, which points to their having originated in Durham as tradition has it. One member of the family visited the college of Arms in 1709 and carried back a correct emblazoning of the arms.†

His conclusion, doubtless a correct one, is that since Rev. John Emerson (20) did not register a pedigree, he also used the arms without strict legal right. Dr. Emerson's chapter proves this to have been very generally customary both in England and Ireland. We may feel sure the first generations in Ipswich felt entirely certain of their descent from Ralf of Foxton and of their right to the arms, or they would not have put them on a gravestone. The use of them in America will be informal and without special honor or emolument. Some may like to express in this way a certain piety toward and satisfaction in a long and honorable lineage. If any Ipswich Emerson wishes to use the arms on his stationery, or book plate, he will be quite justified in doing so.

The Rev. Joseph Emerson (392), of Beverly, wrote of his grandfather, the Rev. Daniel Emerson (51), of Hollis:

In the French war, he served as chaplain in the army at Crown Point in 1755, where he took rank of the other chaplains, in those days of royal etiquette, from the trifling circumstance of the family coat of arms, which contained three lions.

† Loc. cit. p. 10.

THE EMERSONS IN ENGLAND.

Professor Joseph Emerson of Beloit, Wisconsin, writes me: "Does the termination, son, and Raffe's taking the lions of Denmark for his bend, and that of Norway for his crest, suggest that we rightly thought ourselves, and were, of Norseman blood?"

The Emersons in England* seem to have sprung from that Aimeric, archdeacon of Carlisle and Durham, 1196-1214, and high sheriff of Northumberland, 1214-1215, who was the nephew (*nepos*) of bishop Phillip of Poictou, Prince Bishop of Durham, 1195, and previously *clericum et familiarem* of Richard *Cœur-de-Leon*. Both the bishop and the archdeacon had married before they took orders in the Church. He wrote his name also Haimerico and Amerigo, which may indicate that he had resided in Italy. The family came from Aquitania, but the name is Norse and not French. His pedigree is given in Surtee's History of Durham, vol. iv. p. 137. He had a son Emeric de Lidgate, and two grandchildren, Richard fil. Emeric and Emeric fil. Emeric.

In 1198, he gets quarrelling with the monks about Herserville church and his servants eject them by force, which Aimeric denied. The enraged monks excommunicated all their violent ejectors. Aimeric besieged St. Oswald's church, in Durham, in which the monks had taken refuge, cut off all food supplies and finally smoked them out of the church.†

This descent explains the long connection of the Emersons with the bishopric of Durham, especially as parkers, foresters and gate-keepers of the great park belonging to the bishopric, from which the names Bondgate and Eastgate arose.

In the Richmond Domesday Book we have also *De feodo Alani fili Emeri* and *De Briani filio Alani*,‡ and the name may thus have had another independent origin in Yorkshire.

The early mention of the name in England has already been quoted *Richardus fil. Emerici*, in the writs of Parliament of the 13th century. In the first edition of Bardsley, *Johannes fil. Emerici* is quoted from the same writs.

* Loc. cit. p. 3, 33.

† Loc. cit. p. 38.

‡ Loc. cit. p. 1.

JOHANNES EMERYSON

Was the first on record who used the name in its completed form.

Johannes de Stanley, Brancepeth parish, county Durham, England, born before 1360; married Agnes Bell, sister of W. Bell, called Will-o'-the-Raw. A deed, relating to Johannes and his lands, dated 1312, exists. His wife's property passes into the hands of the Nevilles of Raby. The Emersons were closely connected with the Nevilles.

WILLIAM EMERSON.

Willelmus Emerisson, possibly a younger brother of the above, was mentioned, in the Durham Cursitor Rolls, as a juror of Middleham, near Brancepeth, and of the Bondgate, East Darnton, in 1351, when he was tenant of *j mess et xx acr. terre*.

This family was, doubtless, the founders of the Bondgate Emersons, one of whom, Thomas, was disclaimed in 1615. (Longstaffe.) John and William may have been children of Richard, or of Emeric fil. Emeric.

ROBERT EMERSON.

Robertus Emerisson, or Emeryson, is mentioned in Hatfield's Survey, taken about 1380, as free tenant of *j mess. et xxx acr. terra voc. Bedburnhall*, in South Bedburn; pays 8s. annually; one, *placeam prati voc Gibesclos*, pays 3s. and other lands in Darlington, in the Weardale; he also held lands in Stanhope and in Horsley field, in the Weardale. Another entry in the same same survey is *Robertus Emerisson et Willelmus Fetherstanholgh tenet molendenum aquaticum*, for which they paid £6 annually. The latter was of the chief family in the Weardale. The historian of Durham, Hutchinson, says: "The Emersons are gaining possession here already," alluding to an inquisition, mentioning Rob. Emerson, in 1413. This Robert may have been a younger brother of John above, and the ancestor of the Weardale Emersons.

JOHN EMERSON.

Hatfield mentions, *Johannes filius Roberti Emerisson*, as occupying a loft and a croft in the Weardale. This was a son of the above Robert.

Thus arose three branches of the family,—the Brancepeth, the Bondgate, and the Weardale Emersons. The last two spread rapidly, and, when bishop Neville came to the throne of the Durham bishopric, 1437 to 1457, a Robert Emerson was appointed bailiff of Walsingham, and park keeper in the Weardale. Emersons

were long settled at Eastgate—the east gate of the Durham park—as hereditary keepers of the Weardale forest for the bishops of Durham. They became a clan, and their servants took their names, which may account for the different social position of different branches of the name, both in England and among the emigrants to America.

It has been the uniform tradition that the Ipswich Emersons came from the Weardale, but there is, in this country, no documentary evidence of this.

THOMAS EMERSON.

Thomas Emerson, of Bradbury, or his brother Thomas, seemed at one time to be identical with Thomas, of Ipswich.

He was a man of great wealth and importance in his time, and his will is appended because of the illustration of the curious custom of giving the same name to two children in a family.

THOMAS EMERSON, the elder, died 1631, without issue; m. Maria —; she m. 2, Thomas Hinslow; Thomas Emerson was a merchant of London, and lord of the manor of Bradbury and Hilton.

He put up a market cross at New Castle and at Durham, in 1617, with his arms, a field azure on a bend argent, three torteaux, together with the Neville's saltire; probably as an act of reverence and love for the ruined Neville family, and as a mark of respect for King James, who visited Durham the same year.

The following inscription is quoted in Surtees:

*Armiger Emerson Thomas pietate repletus
Hanc crucem struxit sumptibus ille suis.*

The above arms were apparently given, informally, by King James himself, and neither they nor the pedigree were registered.

The will of Thomas, the elder, is as follows:

In the name of God, Amen. I Thomas Emerson now of Ratcliffe in the pish. of Stepney and County of Midd. Esqr. being sicke of bodie but of good and sound memorie and understanding (The name of god be praised) Do make and ordaine this my last Will and testam. in manner and forme followinge:

First I bequeath my soul into the hands of my Creator my body to the earth assuredly believing by the onely mercies of God and the onely meritts of my blessed Saviour and by his divine power soule and bodie shall at the final Judgmt. enjoye the inheritance of the faithfull in the Kingdom of Heaven.

Item, for my temporall estate wherewith, it has pleased god to bless me, I dispose of it in manner and forme followinge, first I do give and bequeath all my lands and houses and whatsoever else I am possessed of or ought to be possessed of in Southwarke in the County of Surrey Unto my loving brother John Emerson.

THOMAS OF BISHOP'S STORTFORD AND IPSWICH.

III. Little is known of the life at Bishop's Stortford of Thomas (1), of Bishop's Stortford and Ipswich. In the churchwardens' book of St. Michael's he is recorded, in 1636, as collector for the poor. Dr. Emerson suggests that his wife, Elizabeth Brewster, may have been daughter of William Brewster, the postmaster at Serooby, and the famous elder of the Pilgrims of 1620. Mr. J. L. Glascock, the antiquary of Bishop's Stortford, has proved that Major-General Denison, who is mentioned in Thomas's will as his friend, also emigrated from Bishop's Stortford. Deputy-Governor Symonds had resided in the neighboring towns of Great Yeldham and Upsfield, county Essex.

The children of Thomas, as recorded in the baptismal registry of St. Michael's church, at Bishop's Stortford, Herts, were:

- v. ROBERT, bap. 24 May, 1612. (Mentioned below, page 20.)
- v. BENJAMIN, bap. 2 Oct., 1614; bur. 27 Oct., 1614.
- v. RALFE, bap. 19 Oct., 1615; bur. 8 Jun., 1626. Killed by falling from a tree, as recorded in the registry.
- v. JAMES, bap. 16 Feb., 1617. (Mentioned below, page 21 and 31.)
- v. JOSEPH, bap. 25 Jun., 1620. (Joseph of Mendon, page 31.)
- v. ELIZABETH, bap. 14 Jun., 1623. (m. John Fuller, page 31.)
- v. JOHN, bap. 26 Feb., 1625. (John of Gloucester, page 31.)
- v. THOMAS, bap. (Mentioned below, page 22.)
- v. NATHANIEL, bap. 18 Jul., 1630. (Nathaniel of Ipswich, page 31.)
- v. SUSAN, bap. 17 Mar., 1632. (Dr. Emerson conjectures that she may have died on the voyage. Mentioned below, page 23.)

V. ROBERT OF ROWLEY AND HAVERHILL.

Dr. Emerson says:*

I am now inclined to think all the Emersons who emigrated to the United States, except John of the *Abigail*, 1625,† were connected. The Rowley Emersons were probably descendants of Robert, s. of Robert, whom I have lost sight of, or of Robert, brother of Thomas,‡ and the Haverhill Emersons were also probably connected with this family, for they were described as "leather sealers" or "stampers."

It does not seem probable that Michael, of Haverhill, was connected with the Ipswich Emersons. Tradition connects him with the Lincolnshire Emersons, and the names of his children were those current among that branch.

The elder Robert, son of Robert, of Bp. Stortford, bapt. 1596 cannot well be Robert, of Rowley, as he seems to have died before 1620, since he is not mentioned in his father's will of that date.

* Loc. cit. p. 157.

† Should be 1635.

‡ He means, apparently, son of Thomas.

The younger Robert, son of Thomas (1), of Bishop's Stortford and Ipswich, may be identified with Robert, of Rowley, with some probability. The dates agree fairly well and the names of his children are those current among the Bishop's Stortford Emersons. Rowley is adjacent to Ipswich. His pedigree is given below on this assumption, and the few facts that have come to our knowledge concerning his descendants are added. We did not trace them out because we knew of no connection between Robert, of Rowley, and Thomas, of Ipswich, and it would have been a task of some difficulty to separate his descendants from those of Michael, of Haverhill.

Robert² Emerson, eldest son of Thomas and Elizabeth Emerson, baptized at Bishop's Stortford, Hertfordshire, 24 May, 1612, died in Haverhill, 25 June, 1694. He married (?), 1st, Elizabeth Grave, at Bishop's Stortford, 22 October, 1635, who was buried there 22 June, 1636. He married (?), 2d, Frances ———. He married, 3d, at Rowley, 4 November, 1658, Ann Grant, who is mentioned in his will as Anna. She was drowned 28 July, 1718.—*Essex Hist. Coll.* vi: 37-8.

He was probably living at Bishop's Stortford, 1642. It is recorded in the churchwardens' book of St. Michael's, Bishop's Stortford:

1642: Southstreate, Robert Emerson (for clerk's wages) 4s.

and this house in the South street returned no communicants; i.e. they were nonconformists.

He appears in Rowley, as early as 1655, removes to Haverhill, and is a freeman there 29 April, 1668. His will is dated 3 May, 1694, and proved 23 July, 1694. He died 25 June, 1694.

His children were:

- vi. ELIZABETH, b. 3 Dec., 1637, at Bishop's Stortford.
- vi. THOMAS.

Probably he, who was killed by Indians with his wife and children, Sarah and Timothy, 15 Mar., 1697.

- vi. JOSEPH.
- At Haverhill, 1674.

- vi. EPHRAIM.

- vi. STEVEN.

Moved to Pennacook, now Concord, N. H., 1720. Many descendants in New Hampshire.

- vi. BENJAMIN.

At Boxford, 1791.

- vi. LYDIA.

V. JAMES EMERSON.

James¹ Emerson (6), page 31, who was baptized at Bishop's Stortford, 16 February, 1617-18, is mentioned in his father's will at

Ipswich in 1653 and 1660: "If he shall come over into this country (or send by a certain certificate of his being living)." He is identified by Dr. Emerson with a lieut. col. Emerson, whose will was proved at Tangiers, 1664. The latter James left a wife, Lydia, and talks of his nephew, Mr. Roberts, of Bishop's Stortford, which makes the above identification probable and suggests the possibility that his wife's name was Roberts. This James had a daughter, Lydia, who married (by license) 13 January, 1669-70, J. Stubbings, citizen of London.

V. THOMAS EMERSON.

The account of Thomas (3), page 31, with wife Elizabeth, was taken from the manuscript of John Milton Emerson (318), son of John of Conway branch, in which confidence was placed, as he had access to many old writings which were afterward burned. Similar traditions come in old papers from the Concord Emersons.

Mr. Edward¹ D. Emerson (713) reports a tradition in his branch of Emersons, derived from Mrs. Dorothy⁵ Murray, (137), an aunt of his father, who passed the last years of her life at his grandfather's residence, in Alfred, Me., a very intelligent gentlewoman who had travelled a great deal and moved in the best provincial society. Mrs. Murray was accustomed to say that she had but one desire regarding a future life. She wanted to go where the Emersons did. She had never found any better people, and would be content wherever they went. She well remembered her grandfather, Edward³ Emerson (12), who deceased in her seventh year, and her grandmother, Rebecca Waldo, who lived till Mrs. Murray was in her sixteenth year. Also, she had seen Nathaniel³ Emerson (25), who was born before his grandfather, the emigrant, died. The tradition is follows:

That Thomas Emerson (1) was possessed of substantial resources and of much superior scholarship to the average Englishman of his day in America; that he was from the vicinity of London, where he had been, through his active years, in mercantile life; that his son Thomas, jr. (3), not being of robust constitution, did not apply himself to the duties of life, as did his brothers Joseph (4) and John (5), but, in accord with the prevailing sentiment, did profess an employment, that of baker; that he died in 1653, and his death occasioned the writing of his father's will.

The town of Ipswich was settled, in 1633, by John Winthrop, Jr., with twelve others, three of whom are not known. One male baker was mentioned, in the town, the same year. Thomas Emerson, a baker, in 1650, deeds land "beyond the north river on the south side of Prospect hill," which was granted to him by the town of Ipswich. See page 25.

Thomas Emerson, Freeman, of Ipswich, died 1653. *N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.* ii. 175.

Now it seems most probable that this Thomas Emerson was one of the three unknown first settlers of Ipswich, that he was the "baker" mentioned as living in the town in 1633; that he received at this early date, by grant from the town, the farm on the Rowley line, several miles north of the Turkey Shore farm, purchased in 1638 by Thomas (1), which became the Emerson homestead. Joseph Emerson (4) witnessed the above deed of Thomas (3), and Thomas (1) made his will in the same year in which Thomas (3) died, because the death of his son made a new will necessary.

It was then so common that the father's name descended to a concordant eldest son, and the traditions, based on old documents in the Conway branch, and the traditions of the Alfred, Me., branch, cited above (almost the report of a cotemporary), make it entirely probable that Thomas (3) was the son of Thomas (1); that he emigrated to Ipswich before his father, and this may have been the reason why the latter chose Ipswich as his home.

If it shall be found on investigation that the report, by Dr. Emerson, of the registry of Bishop's Stortford is full and accurate, it will lessen somewhat the probability that Thomas (3) was a son of Thomas (1). He may have been a nephew, or a brother, after the fashion of the time. (See page 15.) It is much more probable that his registry will be found among the children of Thomas (1). One of the children, mentioned in Thomas's will, is not found in the Bishop's Stortford register.

V. SUSAN EMERSON.

The item Sarah (8), died 12 August, 1640, 'Boston Record,' must not be connected with Susan of the above record. By a lapse of memory, an entry concerning a Susan Bulkeley, having the above date, was introduced on page 31.

V. JOHN OF IPSWICH AND SCITUATE.

The following is taken from Savage's *Genealogical Dictionary of New England*, Vol. II, p. 117:

John, Ipswich, came in the Abigail 1635, a baker, aged 20, call. by Coffin, s. of John. It may be, that he res. to Scituate, and m. at Duxbury 19 July, 1638, Barbara, d. of Rev. John Lothrop.

The following is taken from Drake's *Founders of New England*:

Primo die Julij, 1635. In the Abigail p'red Jo: Emerson, age 20. *N. E. Hist. and Gen. Reg.*, xiv: 318.

Itm. I do give and bequeath unto my said brother *John Emerson* all those my houses and tents in Crouceth fryers neer Towerhill.

Itm. I do give and bequeathe unto my younger brother *Thomas Emerson* and my two *Sisters Elizabeth the Elder* and *Elizabeth Emerson the younger* all my lands leases or profits whatsoever of Bradbury and Hilton in the County pallatine of Durham.

In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and scale this first day of October one thousand six hundred thirtie one.

In the pree. of

ELY TOURNER

- THOMAS EMERSON

CANCELL MACHER

His mark X ANTHONY SKINNER

Many long and most interesting letters on the Weardale Emersons have been received from Mr. W. M. Egglestone, the learned antiquarian of Stanhope in the Weardale.

"We," says Mr. Egglestone, "have a fine old bishopric ballad, or border song, composed in 1569, in which the Emersons figure. 'Rookhope Ryde' is the ballad. When the two earls, Thomas Percy and Charles Neville, took arms for the purpose of liberating Mary, Queen of Scots, and restoring the old religion, the border robbers took advantage of the confusion, and made a raid into Rookhope, Weardale, to steal cattle, but

"Then word came to the bailiff's house
At the Eastgate, where he did dwell."

After the battle, we learn:

"One of our Weardale men was slain,
Rowland Emerson his name hight,
I trust to God his soul is well
Because he fought unto the right."

The thieves, however, lost four men, and eleven prisoners were taken, though they outnumbered the English two to one."

THE ENGLISH ANCESTRY OF THOMAS EMERSON OF IPSWICH.

I. RALPH EMERSON.

Radus (Ralf, Raffe, or Rauff) Emerson was granted arms, in 1535, and described as of Foxton, co. Durham. Dr. Emerson prints a certified copy of the arms with endorsement:

The armorial bearings of Ralf Emerson of Foxton in the bishopric of Durham, which were granted to him about the year 1535:

28 June, 1897.

CHARLES H. ATHILL,

Richmond Herald of Arms,

College of Arms, London.

Burke's General Armory says: The armes were granted to "Raffe Emerson, esq., of Foxton, co. Dur., temp. Henry VIII." No pedigree was registered therewith.

A Rauff Emerson, of "Branspeth," who at one time seemed certainly to be the same Ralf, makes a will, in 1571, and gives his property to his wife, Isabell, his mother, Annes Mollome, and his sons, John and George. This long, quaint will is given in its original spelling by Dr. Emerson.* Ralf Emerson was steward and surveyor of Brancepeth castle, a seat of the Nevilles. (Egglestone MS.)

In 1569, forty-one Emersons are returned to the general muster of county Durham, and the only armiger was "Rauffe Emerson of Lordship of Brancepeth, light horseman, armed and horsed."

Dr. Emerson does not now believe that Ralf, of Brancepeth, was Ralf, the armiger, because he is not able to connect him with Foxton. In the interesting will of this Ralf, which Dr. Emerson does not reprint, his standing is not given, but his holdings of Quarrall hill and Stanley are described as farmholds. And in *Rough Notes* Dr. Emerson says, "Only armigers at that date could bear arms without leave," and he was well to do and well connected. He may have been temporarily connected with Foxton, and under the influence of the rising Protestant movement may have ceased to use arms. He still seems to be the only Durham Emerson who can possibly have been the armiger.

* *Rough Notes* on the Emerson Clan.

At the last moment, after the Ipswich Emersons had been traced to Bishop's Stortford, Dr. Emerson conjectures* that they came from Yorkshire and that a certain Ralf, of Sigston, may have been the armiger; since Sigston adjoins a Foxton in Yorkshire and both villages were then in the bishopric of Durham, which extended over part of the county of York, and the certificate of the arms which he has from London reads "in the bishopric of Durham." But the old certificate of Robert Wall says: "In the county Palatine of Durham."

So that Ralf of Foxton, armiger, remains undiscovered, though the Bishop's Stortford pedigree, given below, doubtless brings us within one generation of him and, while the last conjecture of Dr. Emerson is of distinct value, old traditions may yet be justified and the Ipswich Emersons traced back to Durham.

THOMAS OF GREAT DUNMOW.

After Dr. Emerson had failed to identify the record of Thomas (1) of Ipswich and his children in England,† and the printing of his book was nearly completed, an interesting discovery was made, prompted by a reward offered by Dr. Emerson, by Mr. William Brigg, editor of the *Herts Genealogist* (not by Mr. F. Johnson, as stated by Dr. Emerson on page 162), of a record of baptisms of Thomas Emerson's children at St. Michael's church, Bishop's Stortford. The following account of this place is abridged from Lewis' *Topographical Dictionary of England*:

Stortford (Bishop), Hertfordshire, thirty miles n. n. e. from London, derives its name from its situation at a ford on the river Stort, crossed by two bridges, the prefix having been bestowed, by the Conqueror, upon the bishop of London, and his successors in office. The town is situated on two gentle acclivities in a fertile valley and consists, principally, of four streets. There is a public library, a canal, a silk mill, and a very spacious market-house. The church, dedicated to St. Michael, was built in the reign of Henry VI. and, in part, rebuilt in 1820. It contains many ancient and curious monuments. A free grammar school was founded and endowed in 1579; and a national school established in 1818; the ruins of the castle erected by William, the Conqueror, exist; Roman coins have been found in its garden and an ancient well dedicated to St. Osyth, the waters of which have a reputation for diseases of the eye. The population is over 5000.

Camden, in his *Britannia*, says:

The River *Lea* is not gone forward farre from *Ware*, when he entertaineth a Riveret named *Stort* from the East, which first runneth downe out of *Essex* by *Bishops Stortford*, a small Towne fenced sometime with a little Castle set upon a mount east up of purpose, within a pretty Island;

* Loc. cit. p. 160.

† Loc. cit. p. 80.

which Castle King *William the Conqueror* gave unto the Bishops of London; and of those Bishops it came to be so called: but King *John* for hatred of Bishop *William* overthrew it.

An account of this discovery is given by Dr. Emerson, page 153, with photographs of Bishop's Stortford and St. Michael's church, and pedigree as presented below, with additions from other sources.

II. Thomas Emmerson, who was born some time before 1540, but whose place of birth is unknown, was resident in Great Dunmow, co. Essex, where his three children are registered. He may also be identical with Thomas, of Rumford, co. Essex, whose administration was granted to Joan, his relict, in 1595. He was probably son of Ralf, of Foxton, who received arms 1535. His children were:

- iii. ROBERT, baptized at Great Dunmow, 25 Oct., 1561.
- iii. JOAN, baptized at Great Dunmow, 1562.
- iii. JOHN, baptized at Great Dunmow, 1565.

ROBERT OF BISHOP'S STORTFORD.

III. Bishop's Stortford, co. Herts, is only seven miles from Great Dunmow. The above Robert may be identical with the Robert Emerson, of Bishop's Stortford, who married at that place 24th November, 1578, Susan Crabb, who was buried there 20th November, 1626, *æt.* 70. He owned a field on the north border of the parish, called Muggles Dale or, earlier, Muffles Danc. He was called in his will a "currier," page 81. On page 162, Dr. Emerson says "curryer" and speculates that this may mean a currier of leather or a courier on the great post system. It may probably be derived from *ecurier*, a master of horse. Robert was buried at Bishop's Stortford, 6th January, 1620. Will proved, 1620-1 (as Robert Emberson).

His children were:

- iii. ALICE, bapt. at Bishop's Stortford, 22 Nov., 1579.
- iii. MARGARET, bapt. at Bishop's Stortford, 21 Feb., 1581-2; m. T. Browne, of Southwark.
- iii. THOMAS, bapt. at Bishop's Stortford, 26 Jul., 1584; m. Elizabeth Brewster, 1 Jul., 1611, at Bishop's Stortford.
- iii. ANNE, m. J. Rogers, 1 Jul., 1611, at Bishop's Stortford.
- iii. ROBERT, bapt. at Bishop's Stortford, 12 Apr., 1596. Not mentioned in father's will; d. before 1620.
- iii. JOHN. Not recorded as baptized at Bishop's Stortford. Mentioned in father's will. Living in 1620.

It is conjectured below that John, of Ipswich and Scituate, may have been son of this John. (Page 23.)

The church records of Scituate and Barnstable, in the handwriting of Rev. John Lothrop, say :

The Houses in y^e planta | Situate | At my Comeing hither, onely these | w^h was aboute end of Sept. 1634.

45. John Emmersonns.

One Linkes Slaine by a bow of a tree in ye cutting downe of the tree March 6 and buried in the way by John Emmersonns House neere Goodman Stockbridge March 10, 1637.

My sonn Emmersonn and my daughter Barbarah marryed att Duxberry by Captaine Standige, July 19, 1638.

This John Emerson, son of John, may have been the son of that John, brother of Thomas, in the Bishop's Stortford pedigree, who was mentioned in his father's will in 1620. He appears (see ante p. 19) in Ipswich, as if a member of the same family, and with good standing, as his marriage indicates.

THE EMERSONS IN AMERICA.

1

THOMAS' EMERSON was probably born at Sedgefield parish, Co. Durham, in England, and died at Ipswich, in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1 May, 1666. He married Elizabeth ^{Rowley}; she was named executrix in his will, 1653. She survived him, and carried his will into execution, in 1666. They resided at Ipswich.

Tradition says that he came from England, in the ship "Elizabeth Ann," in 1635. He was at Ipswich as early as 1638, when he had 80 acres of land granted him, adjoining Goodman Muzzey. This I conceive must have been the farm conveyed by Thomas Emerson, the baker, in accordance with the deed, copied below, to Jos. Jewett; for Kemboll, Pickard and Cross are Rowley names. Prospect hill is an eminence in Ipswich, near the Rowley line, and a goodly distance from Turkey Shore, where Thomas Emerson, our ancestor, seems to have lived.

(*Ipswich Deeds—i: 71—Salem, Mass.*)

This p^{re}sent wrighting witnesseth that Thomas Emerson of Ipswich in the County of Essex Baker for & in consideration of Twentie & foure pounds in hand paid before the sealing heereof have bargayned & sould & by these p^{re}sents doe confirme that his bargain & sale unto Joseph Jewett of Rowly in the county aforesaid clothier all that his farme granted unto him by the towne of Ipswich containing fourescore acres of land situate & being in Ipswich aforesaid beyond the north river on y^e south side of Prospect hill having the land of Richard Kemboll and John Pickard towards the southeast and the land of John Crosse towards the northeast a highway of two rodd broad lying betweene the land of Rowley & the said farme toward the northwest & having the cow comon belonging to Ipswich on the southwest to have & to hold & peaceably to enjoye all the sd farme with all the apertenances and priviledges thereunto belonging vnto the said Joseph Jewet his heires & assignes forever in wittnesse whereof the said Thomas Emerson hath hereunto sett his hand

and seal this 13th of the 4th month commonly called June sixteen hundred & fifty 1650

Signed sealed & delivered in y^e presence of us

ROBERT LORD
THOMAS HOWLETT
JOSEPH EMERSON

THOMAS EMERSON ○

This deede was acknowledged 4th day of y^e 7th month 1650 before me
SAMUEL SYMONDS.

This mention of Thomas Emerson as a baker suggests interesting considerations. It has seemed incongruous with the possessions and important position of Thomas Emerson, and with the fact that his son had arms certified from England, that he should have been a craftsman. The most common supposition has been that he assumed this occupation as a means of concealment on his departure from England. This leaves unexplained why it should have been used in a document more than twelve years afterward. There was a Jo Emerson, baker, passenger in the *Abigail*, 1635, and it is possible a confusion in the mind of the writer may have caused a mistake. It is possible there were two Thomas Emersons, one of Ipswich at the sea coast, and the other in the north of the town adjacent to Rowley; but this is somewhat improbable. It is also possible that the grantor was Thomas Emerson, jr.

This early record removes the imputation of carelessness conveyed in the following paragraph of Dr. Emerson:

A curious mistake has arisen and been perpetuated by some of Ralph Waldo Emerson's biographers, who have said Ralph Waldo Emerson was descended from a baker. Oliver Wendell Holmes was the last to state this, and proved himself a careless historian by the fact. A baker, one Jo. Emerson (John or Joseph or Joshua), a baker of London, is given in Hotten's original lists of emigrants as going to America, in the *Abigail*, in 1635, hence this confusion. This baker was a person of mean birth, probably the son of John Emerson, a tailor of London, and in no way related to Thomas Emerson, Esq., formerly Lord of the Manors of Bradbury and Hilton, Sedgefield, unless he was an old servant, which is possible.

In 1638, Samuel Greenfield, a weaver, who had married Susanna, widow of Humphrey Wise, of Ipswich, conveyed a farm of 120 acres, formerly the property of Wise, to Thomas Emerson (Ipswich Deeds, i: 1). This was the Turkey Shore farm which remained in the family for several generations. See the half-tone engraving, facing page 46, of the house of his son Nathaniel, which was erected on the Turkey Shore property. Thomas Emerson was a commoner in 1641; and in 1646 was one of the "seven men" to whom was committed the fiscal and prudential affairs of the settlement. He was granted land by the proprietors, and enjoyed large possessions

Mr. Emerson made his will in 1653, to which he added a codicil in 1660. It was probated in May, 1666. There is a record that he lost a yoke of oxen by their backing off a bridge. He claimed damages and got the money.

(Ipswich Deeds, Salem, Mass.)

Abstract by Judge Alphonso Taft.

Deed dated 26th day of 9th month 1648 by Thomas Emberson to John Emerson his son for love and affection conveying his farm of 120 acres with buildings being next to Thomas Boarmans in Ipswich and describing it John covenanting that he would pay to such person as said Thomas shall by his last will direct £40 first payment to begin at death of Elisabeth mother of said John & to pay during their lives the yearly sum of £10 And it is agreed that if the said John shall die without wife or child his said father living the right of inheritance shall return to his said father again

Signed

THOMAS EMERSON

Witness SAMUEL SYMONDS

MARTHA SYMONDS

There were many stipulations of what John should do for his father and family which I have not taken off. The name was spelled Emberson by the recorder. John's wife Ruth was daughter of the above witnesses and this seems a deed of settlement in anticipation of the marriage and before John thought of college.

(Ipswich Deeds—i: 169—Salem, Mass.)

Be it knowne unto all men by these p'sents that I Thomas Emerson of Ipswich for good & valewable consideracon & price to me in hand paid: have granted bargained & sould & by these p'sents doe grant bargain sell and confirme vnto Daniell Rindge all y^e my dwelling howse together with the lott of ground my said house standeth upon contayning by estimacon six Acres be it more or lesse with all the appurtenances * * * * scituate lyeth next the dwelling house land of John Dane towards the south in the Towne of Ipswich in the County of Essex in New England to have. Fourteenth of the twelfth month, Anno Dom: 1648

In presence of

RICHARD BRABROOK

his
ROBERT X ROBERTS

mark
JOHN DENISON

THOMAS EMERSON ○

ack^d by Tho Emerson, 25 Feb. 1655, before

DANIEL DENISON.

THE WILL OF THOMAS EMERSON.

(Essex Probate Registry, Salem, Mass.)

The 31st of Maye 1653

I Thomas Emerson of Ipswich in the countye of Essex being att present, I prayse god, of good heath and pfect memory, And well knowing that all men are borne to dye & depart this life, and that the tyme & place of there departure is to them vnkowne & vncertayne and sometymes sudden. I doe therfore declare & make knowne this my last will and Testament in maner following

Incipimus I bequeath my soule into the hands of my blessed Creator & Redeemer my body to the earth to be deasently buried In asured hope of a Joyfull resurrection at the last day And for my outward Estate I doe dispose of as followeth:

I Give and bequeath vnto my sonne Joseph the some eighty pound of current paye of new england viz forty pound of it which I reserued out of my farme Given vnto my sonne John to be payd unto the said Joseph my sonne according to the couenant & agreement expressed in a paper of Indentors beareing date the six and twentieth of the ninth month 1648 the other forty pound to be payd vnto him by my sonne Nathaniell (out of my house & land giuen vnto him) within six monnths after the decease of me & my wife

Item I giue & bequeath vnto Nathaniell Emerson my sonne my house wherein I now dwell with all my vpland & meddow and the marsh I bought of my sonne Joseph w^{ch} was somtymes Mr Woodmansys with all the aptenances & priuiledges therunto belonging payeing forty pound out of it as aboue exprest alsoe a little p^{se}l of meddow lying within the marsh before mentioned after the decease of me & my wife

Item I Giue unto my daughter Elisabeth fullor The best fether bed & boulster with a paire of blankets and the best couerlet and the bedstead to Inioy for hir vse vntill hir daughter Susana atayne the age of Twenty yeares or day of hir mariage if shall happen sooner and then she to Inioy them alsoe. I giue vnto my sayd daughter the great carued chest & the carued box with a little Trunck with all y^t is in it and a small carued chest with what is in it

Item I giue vnto my sonne James Emerson the some of forty pounds out of my stock of cattell to be payd vnto him if he shall come ouer into this country (or send by a certayne surttificate of his being liueing) within two yeares after the decease of me & my wife. In case my sayd sonne dye before, then my will is that my sonne Joseph his sonne Joseph shall haue ten pound of it and my sonne Nathaniell ten pound & my daughter fullor hir foure sonnes the other Twenty pound or if any of them dye the suruiuer to inioye the same

Item my will is that Elisabeth Emerson my wife shall Inioy the yearly rent of the farme with the six head of cattell wintering at the sayd farme & if they doe not winter soe many to make it vp as is agreed as alsoe the house wherein I dwell with the vpland & meddow & marsh bought of my sonne Joseph with all the aptenances belonging therunto and alsoe all my household goods and all my cattell I shall leave both oxen & cowes & all other

youngcattell whasoeuer to inioy them freely without let or disturbance of any pson or psons whatsoever duringe the tyme that she doth continue my widdow provided allwayes and it is my will & meaneing that if the sayd Elisabeth my wife doth marry that then she shall haue only the yearly Rent of the aforesayd farme duringe the tyme of hir naturall Life and the wintering of the aforesayd Six head of cattell alsoe to haue the little featherbed & one boullster & two payre of sheetes and two cowes The rest of the cattell and household stufe to be disposed of as In this my will exprest

And further my will is that my sonne Nathaniell incase he doe inioye the house & Land by the mariage of my wife that then he shall paye the some of six pound by the yeare to his mother duering the terme of hir naturall life for the rest of my houshold goods I leave to my wife to dispose of what shee shall thinke fitt to my sonne Joseph and the rest to be devided betweene my son Nathaniell and my daughter fullor.

further I make my Loueing wife Elisabeth Emerson sole execotrix to this my last will and Testament And doe desire my much honored & faithfull frends M^r Samuel Symonds and Maior Gen^l Daniell Denison to be ouerseers to see y^t this my will be fulfilled.

In witness to this my last will I have heervnto sett my hand and seale the day and yeare first exprest

signed sealed &c
in the p^{se}nts of vs

ROBERT LORD
DANIEL HOUERY

Thomas Emerson

Janvary the 4th 1660.

memorandum. thes ar to testifie vnto any home it may concern that I haue giuen vnto my son John Emerson his portion Ful in y^e Consideration of y^t agreement betwixt vs about my farme he dully performing the Couenant of y^e said indenters betwixt vs during the terme of my life & his mothers as also thos engag ments their in spesified afterwords according to our mutu all agreement according to the sixtenth lin of this wil

Thomas Emerson

memorandum in Consideration of the ten Lins Canseld on the other sid Conserving my son James my will is thet he shal have the sum of fiv pound payd to him by my Son Nathaniel w^{hin} tow yers after the deas of the longest liver of my wife or myself in Case he shall Come or send by a certain surttificat y^t he is then Living.

Alsoe in refrans to ye eightenth lin of this my will for six months ther exprest is thus to be vnderstood that my son Nathaniel shoul pay that forty pounds to my son Joseph the sume of ten pounds a year til it be fully discharged vnles he y^e said Nathaniel shall sell my houses & land I now dwel in, & the it is to be payd to my son Joseph presently.

Also in refrans to the twenty fifth lin of this my wil it is to be vnderstood that what ther is mentoned as to my daughter fullor is my intent that it shall be holy and fully devided between hur tow daughter at y^e age of twenty yers or at y^e day of mariadg Susanna and Elisabeth. alsoe my will

is that my loving wif Elisabeth Emerson shall enioy for hur use halfe the fruit of the orchard during her natural lif

to the particulers abov mention I witnes to be my own act

In the presents of

GEORGE GIDDINGE

DANIEL HOVEY

Samuel Gordon

P^{ru}ed by the oaths of George Gidding Daniell Hovey & Robert Lord respectively before mr Symon Bradstreet & maior Gen^{all} Denison the clerke being p^{re}sented the 10th of May 1666 to be the last will of Thomas Emerson with the additions

As attest ROBERT LORD clerk

Ann^d Jnuintorey of the lands cattell and Goods of Goodman Emep^oonn^d Sener deceased 3 May 1666

J primis the housing and land belongin toe it	150-00-00
" too steares 6£ three cows and a heyfer 16£	22-00-00
" tu weanings calfs 1£ Six sheep and too lamb 3£10	04-10-00
" half a mare and half a colt	05-00-00
" his wearing cote & linen and woolen	09-00-00
" in the pallor a feather beed flock beed a quilt 3 bolsters and too pilows a ceverlitt and too blencketts	
curttains valantts bedsted	18-00-00
" a lettell trunk a doosin $\frac{1}{2}$ napkines and a tabel cloth a short and a long towel	03-00-00
" the greatt carved chest with nine payre of sheet 3 tabel cloths 4 pilow bears peace cloth	16-10-00
" a carved bote	00-06-00
" 3 chest and a trunk	01-00-00
" a carpet too couchings a remnantt cootten	01-15-00
" a remnant of cloth att	01-02-00
" books and bibels	02-00-00
" a tabel and chayers stoals glass cast and whattis	03-00-00
" brass and pewter and tin ware	01-10-00
" Iron ware and tools	02-00-00
" a feather bed in the chamber and blanks	04-10-00
" in the other chamber corn and steel mill	03-10-00
" for severall single particulares	01-00-00
" for too peaces and bandeleares	01-00-00

the Sume 251 3 0

by us

WILLIAM GOODHUE

SIMON THOMPSON

Att the Court held at Ipswich the 25 of Sept: 1666

The widdow Elizabeth Emerson upon oath d^d this Jnventory to be a true inventory to the best of her knowledge & if more come to her knowledge she will ad it

as attest ROBERT LORD

Cleric

The order of his children is not known to be on record. The following order appears likely from present knowledge. Children:

2. i. ELIZABETH, b. ~~14-1623~~; d. ———; m. John Fuller. Res. Ipswich, Mass.
3. ii. THOMAS, b. ———; d. 1653; m. Elizabeth ———; deceased before his father, s.p.
4. iii. JOSEPH, b. 1620; d. ———, 1680; m. (1), Elizabeth Woodmansey; (2), Elizabeth Bulkeley. Res. York, Me., Milton and Mendon, Mass.
5. iv. JOHN, b. 1625; d. 2 December, 1700; m. Ruth Symonds. Res. Gloucester, Mass.
6. v. JAMES, b. ———; commonly said to have returned to England, 1653. There is no proof that he came to America. Res. England.
7. vi. NATHANIEL, b. 1629; d. 29 December, 1712; m. (1), Sarah ———; m. (2), Lydia ———. Res. Ipswich, Mass.
8. vii. SARAH, b. ———; d. 12 August, 1640. (Boston Record.)

SECOND GENERATION.

2

ELIZABETH² EMERSON, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth Emerson, was born in England, and died in New England. She married John Fuller, who died at Ipswich, 4 June, 1666. They resided at Rocky Hill, Ipswich.

Mr. Fuller was one of the subscribers to the fund for Major Denison in 1648, was road surveyor in 1663, and admitted a commoner of Ipswich in 1664. His will was probated 25 September, 1666. His wife survived him. The Fullers of Ipswich were from Toperton, County of Norfolk, England; *v. N. E. Hist. Gen. Register*, xlviii., 345. Elizabeth and John were, most probably, married in England before their emigration, as their grandson, James, a son of their son James, was old enough to be married in 1672. Children:

- i. SUSANNA.
- ii. ELIZABETH.
- iii. JOHN.
- iv. JAMES.
- v. THOMAS.
- vi. NATHANIEL.
- vii. JOSEPH.
- viii. WILLIAM.
- ix. SARAH.

d. about 24 September, 1689.

4

JOSEPH² EMERSON, son of Thomas and Elizabeth Emerson, was born in England about 1620-1, and died at Concord, Massachusetts Bay Colony, 3 January, 1680. He married, 1646(?), Elizabeth Woodmansey, daughter of Robert and Margaret Woodmansey, a schoolmaster of Boston. They resided at Ipswich, Mass.; York, Me.; and Milton, Mass.

Mr. Emerson was a minister of the standing order of puritan clergymen. Of his education nothing is known. Tradition says he was educated in England. He may have studied at Harvard. He was at Ipswich as early as 1638. Was admitted freeman the 19 December, 1648. He preached at York, Me., the same year.

DEED OF JOSEPH EMERSON TO THOMAS, HIS FATHER.

Ipswich Deeds, i: 114. *Salem, Mass.*

Be it knowne vnto all men by these p'sents that I Joseph Emerson of Ipswich in the county of Essex in New England (with the consent of Elisabeth Emerson my wife) in consideration of the sune of sixtene pounds paid to mee by Thomas Emerson my father whereof & wherewith I doe by these p'sents acknowledge myself to be fully satisfied & contented have bargained sold given granted & doe by these p'sents for my selfe my heires executors Administrators & Assignes give & grant to the said Thomas my father all that my meadow & vpland at Labour in Vaine (the said meadow & vpland being given to me by my father in law Mr Robert Woodmansey in p^t of portion with his daughter) containing twelve Acres be it more or lesse with all the Appertenantes privileges rites titles & interests whatsoever the said meadow being scituate & lying next the meadow & vpland of Simon Tomson & Humfrey Griffin on the northwest & of Joseph Riddings on the south & bounded with the Creeke comonly called labour in vaine vpon the east in Ipswich aforesaide To Haue and to hold the said meadow & upland together with the appertenances, privileges, rites, titles and interests whatsoever, that either I have had or might have had in the said land, to him the said Thomas, his heires & assignes forever the same to have and enjoy (as his or their owne proper lands or right) peaceably & quietly without any lett, hindrance, or denyall from me my heires, executors, admin. or assignes, or any of them, or from any manner of person or persons whatsoever.

In wittnesse whereof wee have hereunto set our hands & seales this fourteenth day of September, Anno. Dom. 1652.

JOSEPH EMERSON. & a Seale.

ELIZABETH EMERSON. and a Seale.

Scaled, subscribed & delivered
in the presence of us,
JOHN EMERSON,

This deed was acknowledged 6th day of the 8th month 1652, before me
SAMUEL SYMONDS.

In 1653, he was a resident of Wells, and took the freeman's oath 4 July, 1653; and was an inhabitant when the commissioners took the submission of the people, the court being held in his house. He favored submission to Massachusetts in 1651-2, and was evidently a leading man of the Massachusetts party. He signed a petition to Cromwell as of Wells, asking the protector to confirm the jurisdiction of Massachusetts over the inhabitants of Wells. In this petition, which he probably wrote, the people of Wells refer Cromwell to their pious and reverend friend, Mr. John Wheelwright, sometime of us, now in England, for any desired information as to their condition or character. He soon lost his hold on the affections of the people of Wells; largely, perhaps, because of the political dissensions which disturbed the church.

Judge Taft found on loose paper in the old Book of Records at Wells (this I did not find when I examined the book), a record of the contract of settlement of Joseph Emerson, hard to decipher; the date seemed to be 1664. The records of York County were destroyed in 1692. The contract was between Joseph Emerson and the members of his church, fixing his salary and compensation while he should remain their minister. It describes him as "of Wells," showing that he was already a resident. The contract was not so stringent as that with the people of Mendon. But it was a careful stipulation. They were to pay him annually sixty-five pounds and do sundry other things, and get the people of York to pay a certain sum. Dated 13th day of ———, 1664.—*Letter of Judge Alphonso Taft of Cincinnati, Ohio.*

RECORDS OF WELLS, MAINE.

- 7, July 1663. Wee p'sent Mr. Joseph Emerson for telling of a ly Witnesses, Capt Raynes Richard Bankes.
- We p'sent Mr Jo^s Emerson for telling of a Lye Thomas Curtis, Hene Sayword.
- We p'sent Mr. Jo^s Emerson for speaking falsely. Witnesses Ric. White Frances White.
- 13 July 1663. Ordered that the presentments of such persons as have not answered theretoo be proceeded with . . . Mr Emersons (with others) excepted.

The above witnesses were all York people—the first two were strong opponents of Massachusetts rule; and the others were probably so—the last two were man and wife, and quite worthless people.

After Mr. Emerson left, the church is said to have dwindled to two families, and they quarrelled. Orders came from the Massachusetts government that the church disband. Orders quickly followed that the town be indicted for not maintaining public worship.

About 1664, he left Wells and became the first minister of Milton; asking an increase of salary on account of his approaching marriage, he was dismissed.

Rev. Mr. Emerson married 2d, 7 December, 1665, Elizabeth Bulkeley, daughter of Rev. Edward Bulkeley, of Concord, Mass., granddaughter of Rev. Peter Bulkeley, B.D., first minister of Concord. She was born 1638, and died 4 September, 1693, wife of Capt. John Brown, of Reading. They resided at Milton and Mendon, Mass. Children:

9. i. JOSEPH, } probably both children of first { m. Mary ———.
10. ii. JAMES, } wife. { m. Sarah ———.
11. iii. LUCYAN, b. 2 Oct. 1667;* d. 1840; m. 15 May, 1683,
Thomas Damon; res. Reading.

* Milton (Mass.) Records.

12. iv. EDWARD, b. 26 Apr. 1670; d. 9 May, 1743; m. 27 Jan. 1697, Rebecca Waldo; res. Chelmsford, Newburyport and Boston.
13. v. PETER, b. 1673; d. 1751; m. 1696, Anna Brown; res. Reading.
14. vi. EBENEZER, d. 1751; m. 1st, Bethia Parker; 2d, Mary Boutwell; 3d, ———; 4th, ———; res. Reading.
15. vii. DANIEL, m. 19 May, 1709, Jane Armitage; res. Boston.

"In March 1669 he (Robert Babcock) made an acknowledgment before the Church in Dorchester for taking up and divulging reports against the Rev. Mr. Emerson."—Clapp's *Hist. of Dorchester*, p. 110.

He was settled in Mendon, 1 December, 1669, where he remained until the town was destroyed by the Indians in king Philip's war; then he retired to Concord where he died.

Proposal by Mr. Bulkeley to the town of Mendon in the behalfe of Mr. Emerson, his son-in-law, to be settled to him.

First. To give him forty-five pounds, and for the two first years payment as followeth:—

Tenn pounds at Boston y. and at some shop there or in money at this town the Remayninge of the halfe yeere to be made up two pounds of butter for every cowe, the rest in Porke, wheat, barley and soe to make up the yeare's pay,

Indian corne, Rey, Pease and Beeffe.

2. For the third yeere after he is settled to be payd fifty-five pounds y. and soe as God shall Inable them.

3. The house to be made fitting to come into with all convenient speed with two fire places and a little lean-to of Sixteen foot in length with a chimney as a kitchen towards Goodman Cook's house, for Mr. Emerson to contribute something to it, the Town being not willing to do it alone.

4th. To get him Twenty corde of Wood yearly.

5th. Then if Mr. Emerson come and Inhabett dyinge in the Town or enter in Office Then to have the said house and the forty acre lott and meadow to it all privileges and Decision made or to be made to that lott as all other lotts of that bignes shall have, settled to him and his heyres forever and so Recorded in the Town book. This being assented to by the Inhabitants of Mendon Mr. Emerson will settle to them.

Lastly it is agreed that if the major part of the people Inhabiting heere shall cary it soe unworthily towards Mr. Emerson as that they cannot be a Reconciliation made among themselves, then it is hereby unanimously agreed to Refer the difference to the Churches of Medfield, Dedham and Roxbery to heere and Determine it. And if shall be by the said Churches Judged for Mr. Emerson to leave and depart the town yet he shall enjoy the house and land above expressed to him and his heirs forever otherwise he is not to leave the town and his labors here during life.

Dated Dec. 1st, 1669.

An Inventory of the goods and Estate of Joseph. Emmerson late of mendham dece^d. taken and apprizd by Sundry persons October 1680.

Jmp ^{rs} . Severall peells of Land within the Township of mendam	£60 : :
A parcel of Bookes	£18 : :
Wearing Apparrell	£10 : 10
Purse and money	£ 5 : :
Plate	£10 : :
Pewter & Brass	£10 : 18
Linning	£14 : 01
Potts and other Iron ware	£ 3 : 08
Beds Coverlid Curtains Ruggs & blanketts	£17 : 10
Cushions and Carpets	£ 2 : 2
Cupboards a box Leathern and wooden chairs & wheelies	£ 5 : 3
fflax yarne a pillion. Sacks apannell & wool Cards	£ 1 : 14
Glass bottles, hunks' wool and tallow	£ 1 : 17
An horse two bushell Corne	£ 1 : 16
Deske, blanketts for Children & other small things	£ 2 : 6
1. Steer	£ 2 : 15
Severall wooden things	£ 1 : 2
Debts due to the s ^d . Estate at his decease	18 : 15
	186 : 17
Debts due from s ^d . Estate to Several Psons at his decease	44 : 00
	142 : 17
Pt. of a Legacy due from his Father's Estate	
Disburst in funerall charges	£8 : 10 : 0
upon his widow & Ch ⁿ . since his decease	13 : 10
Suma	£129 : 7 : 0

Elizabeth Emmerson admitt^d. Adm^x. made Oath in Court. 15^o. Nov. 1680, that this is a just and true Inventory of the Estate of her late Husband m^r. Joseph Emmerson, dece^d. to her best knowledge and that when Shee knows more Shee will cause it to bee hereunto added.

attests, JSA ADDINGTON, Clre.

At a County Court held at Boston. by Ajoinnm^s. 10th. March. A^o. 1679/80.

Power of Adm^{con}. of all and Singular the goods Estate & Credits of m^r. Joseph. Emerson. late minister of. the Town. of. mendum dece^d intestate is granted unto Elisabeth. his Relict Widdow, Shee giving Security to Administer the Same according to Law & exhibiting a full and true Inventory thereof. upon her Oath

as attests. JS^a: ADDINGTON Cler.

5

JOHN^s EMERSON, son of Thomas and Elizabeth Emerson, was born in England 1625, and died at Gloucester, Mass., 2 December, 1700. He married Ruth Symonds, a daughter of Hon. Samuel and Martha (Reade) Symonds. She died at Gloucester, 23 February, 1702. They resided at Gloucester. Mr. Emerson was freeman at Ipswich, 19 December, 1648; was the first Emerson graduated at Harvard, 1656; was ordained 6 October, 1663, and settled at Gloucester as the first minister of the town. There he remained till death. In July, 1661, his salary was £60, "in corn, pease, &c." In addition to his property in Gloucester, which included in whole or part the three principal mills, he owned farms in Ipswich, probably inherited from his father. He left his large property to his wife, 40s. to his son, and 20s. to his daughters, "which I do give them in addition to what I have given them already." He left three farms in Ipswich, on one of which a Mr. Emerson was tenant. See *Sibley's Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Harvard College*.

John Emerson was a classmate at Harvard College of Increase and Eleazer Mather. He was one of the four who filled parts at Commencement in 1659, as candidates for a degree. The programme for that day has survived and reads as follows:

QUESTIONES IN PHILOSOPHIA

DISCUTIENDÆ, SUB CAROLO CHANCEO
S.S. THEOL: BAC: PRÆSIDE COL: HARVARD:
CANTABRIGIÆ, NOV—ANGL: IN COMMITTIIS,
PER INCEPTORES IN ARTIBUS,
DIE NONO SEXTILIS:
M. DC. LIX.

- I. *AN privatio sit causa rerum naturalium?*
Negat respondens Robertus Payneus
- II. *UTrum anima sit subjectum capax cognitiones infinitæ?*
Affirmat Respondens Johannes Eliotus.
- III. *AN quicquid movetur, ab alio movetur?*
Affirmat Respondens Thomas Gravesius.
- III. *UTrum forma ducatur de potentia materiæ?*
Negat Respondens Johannes Emersonus.

Mr. Emerson made his will 3 February, 1697-8. It was probated 23 December, 1700, and is recorded in Essex (Mass.) Probate Registry, vi., 98. He bequeathed to wife Ruth three farms in Ipswich,—one next Gen. Denison's farm, one lying on the town river, and one a part of the Argilla farm,—and the house in Gloucester, including saw and grist mills. He names son John, and daughters Ruth Newman, Martha Cogswell, Mary Phillips, and Dorothy.

2 March, 1701-2, John Emerson, only son, was appointed by the Probate Court administrator on the estate of his mother deceased, Ruth, widow, of Gloucester.

Children :

16. i. RUTH, b. 26 Aug., 1660; m. 1 Dec., 1683, John Newman, Esq.; (2) Samuel Sargent.
- ✓ 17. ii. MARTHA, b. 28 Nov., 1662; m. 9 Oct., 1685, William Cogswell. Res. Ipswich.
18. iii. MARY, b. 7 Mar., 1665; d. 4 Oct., 1703; m. 26 Mar., 1687, Samuel Phillips. Res. Salem, Mass. From them, Wendell Phillips, and Rt. Rev. Phillips Brooks, Bishop of Massachusetts, derive issue.
19. iv. ELIZABETH, b. 26 Aug., 1667; d. 1683.
20. v. JOHN, b. 14 May, 1670; d. 21 Jun., 1732; m. 14 May, 1696, Mary Batter. Res. Portsmouth, N. H.
21. vi. DOROTHY, b. 6 Jul., 1675; m. ———— Henchman.
22. vii. SAMUEL, b. 20 Nov., 1678; d. 4 Dec., 1687.

RECANTATION OF CONFESSORS OF WITCHCRAFT.

Mass. Hist. Soc. Col., II. Series, vol. iii., p. 222.

Salem 19 Oct 1692 Goodwife Taylor did say that when she was first apprehended she had no fears upon her, and did think that nothing could have made her confesse against herself; but since she had found to her great grief that she had wronged the truth and falsely accused herself; she said that when she was brought to Salem her brother Bridges rode with her and that all along the way from Andover to Salem her brother kept telling her that she must needs be a witch since the afflicted accused her and as her touch were raised out of their fits and urging her to confess herself a witch. She as constantly told him that she was no witch, that she knew

nothing of witchcraft and beg^d of him not to urge her to confesse, however when she came to Salem and was carried to a room where her brother on the one side and Mr. John Emerson on the other did tell her, that she was certainly a witch and that she saw the devill before her eyes at that time (and accordingly the said Emerson would attempt with his hand to beat him away from her eyes) and they so urged her to confesse, that she wished herself in any dungeon rather than be so treated. Mr. Emerson told her once and again, well! I see you will not confesse! Well! I will now leave you, and then you are undone, body and soul forever; Her brother urged her to confesse and told her in so doing she could not lye. To which she answered Good Brother, do not say so, for I shall lye if I confesse, and then who shall answer unto God for my lye. He still asserted it and said that God would not suffer so many good men to be in such an error, about it, and that she would be hangd, if she did not confesse, and continued so long and so violently to urge and press her to confess that she thought verily her life would have gone from her, and became so terrified in her mind that she owned at length almost anything that they propounded to her; but she had wronged her conscience in so doing she was guilty of a great sin in belying of her self and desired to mourn for it as long as she lived: This she said and a great deal more of the like nature and all of it with affection, sorrow, relenting, grief and mourning, as that it exceeds any pen to describe and expresse the same.

Samuel Symonds deeds 250 acres of land at Cape Porpoise (now Kennebunkport), Me., to my son John Emerson and my daughter Ruth, 16 November, 1662.

Harlakenden Symonds deeds 600 acres in Coxhall (now Lyman), Me., 26 October, 1693, to John Emerson of Gloucester.

Essex Probate, ccciii., 233, Salem, Mass.

Agreement between Harlakenden Symonds, of Ipswich, John Emerson & his wife Ruth Emerson, of Gloucester, Thomas Baker & his wife Priscilla Baker, of Topsfield, and Daniel Epes and Simond Epes, of Ipswich on the one part; and Joseph Jacob and Susanna Jacob, Dorothy Symonds, Col. Wade as gdn to Mary and Elizabeth Symonds, of Ipswich on the other part — That Rebekah Symonds, widow of Sam^l Symonds deceased &c shall stand good and that Argilla farm shall be equally divided into two equal parts between the two parties herein beforesaid 10 April 1694.

Mather's Magnalia, Chap. vii., Appendix, Art. 18.

A FAITHFUL ACCOUNT OF MANY WONDERFUL AND SURPRISING THINGS

which happened in the town of Gloucester in the year 1692.

Reverend and truly honoured sir: According to your request, I have collected a brief account of the occurrences remark'd in our town last year. Some of them are very admirable things, and yet no less true than strange, if we may believe the assertions of credible persons. Tho' because of great haste it is a rough draft, yet there is nothing written but what the persons mentioned would, if duly called, confirm the truth of, by oath.

I might have given you a larger account; only several who saw and heard some of the most remarkable things are beyond sea. However I hope the substance of what is written will be enough to satisfy all rational persons that Gloucester was not alarmed last summer for a fortnight together by real French and Indians, but that the devil and his agents were the cause of all the molestation which at this time befel the town; in the name of whose inhabitants I would take upon me to entreat your earnest prayers to the Father of mercies, that those apparitions may not prove the sad omens of some future and more horrible molestations to them.

Sir, your very humble servant,

J. E.

May 19, 1697-8ths.

Essex (Mass.) Deeds.

xxxv : 251.—John Newman of Salem, merchant, to John Emerson *et al.* Know y^e that y^e s^d John Newman for good causes him thereunto moving and especially in consideration of a promise or contract of marriage made unto him by Mr^s Ruth Emerson of Gloucester, Hath given granted &c. unto M^r John Emerson her father, M^r Robert Hale sen^r of Beverly, M^r Nath^l Emerson sen^r of Ipswich and John & Samuel Emerson, her y^e s^d Ruth's brethren all that his outward estate &c. in trust for her &c.

13 Dec. 1683.

xiii : 265.—John Emerson, sen^r. of Gloucester to his son, John Emerson, of Salem, clerk, "all that farm of about 160 acres in Ipswich, bounded by my bro. Nathaniel, it being formerly the land of our father, Thomas Emerson."

2 Nov. 1694.

xxxix : 37.—William Sargent aged 71, and Samuel Elwell aged 60, of Gloucester, give evidence, 20 June, 1695, that the town of Gloucester, in May, 1664, granted Rev. John Emerson privilege to build mills in Gloucester; and that all but two or three of the proprietors signed the grant and had their names recorded in the town book.

xiv : 260.—John Emerson, sen^r, of Gloucester, conveys to his three daughters, Ruth Newman, Martha Cogswell and Dorothy Emerson, all his house, land, grist and saw mills in Gloucester.

26 Mar. 1696.

xii : 27.—John Emerson, Sen^r of Gloucester, clerk, to his son John Emerson, jr. of Salem, clerk, part of Commonage in Gloucester.

10 Jul. 1699.

John Emerson and Ruth *ux.* acknowledge the deed on the same day.

xvi : 9.—Ruth, widow of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, convey her interest in Argilla farm to her daughter, Dorothy, singlewoman.

16 Feb. 1702.

xlili : 70.—Dorothy Emerson, Ruth wife of John Newman, and Martha wife of W^m Cogswell, divide their interest in property given them by their father, Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester.

25 May 1702.

xiv : 272.—Dorothy Emerson, of Gloucester, single woman, buys of her brother-in-law Samuel Phillips, silversmith, and sister Mary Phillips, of Salem, their right in the real estate of their parents, John and Ruth Emerson.

16 Jun. 1702.

Dau. Katherin Connet, who with her husband Josiah Conent, sign consent to the probate.

Other bequests to the First church of Christ in Reading and to the poor of the parish.

14

EBENEZER³ EMERSON, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Bulkeley) Emerson, was born at Mendon, and died 1751. He married, 1707, Bethia Parker, daughter of Nathaniel and Bethia (Polly) Parker of Reading, who was born 1685, and died 1715. They resided in Reading. Mr. Emerson was an husbandman. He married (2) 1716, Mary Boutwell, daughter of Capt. James and Mary (Kendall) Boutwell of Reading. She was born in Reading 1685. They resided at Franklin Weston Place, Reading, and had children as below. Mr. Emerson was, according to some accounts, married a third and a fourth time, but no names, dates or particulars have survived. Will proved 1751. All his children mentioned. Witnessed by Brown Emerson. Signatures, expressing content with the probate, of the widow and each of the children, excepting Bethia Parker, accompany the document. Children:

53. i. NATHANIEL, b. 31 Mar., 1705; m. 15 Apr., 1725.
Hephzibah Burnap.
54. ii. BETHIA, b. 27 July, 1709; m. 14 Apr., 1731.
Nathaniel Parker. Res. Reading.
55. iii. SUSAN, b. 8 Mar., 1713; m. 19 Feb., 1736.
Isaac Burnap. Res. Reading.
56. iv. EBENEZER, b. 6 Jan., 1716; m. 15 May, 1746.
(1) Anna Nichols; (2) 7 Dec., 1749, Rebecca Putnam. Res. Reading.
57. v. JAMES, b. 9 Jan., 1720; m. 28 Nov., 1744.
(1) Mary Farrar; (2) Elizabeth Nichols. Res. Reading.
58. vi. JOSEPH, b. 3 Nov., 1721; m. 7 Dec., 1749.
Phebe Upton. Res. Lynn.
59. vii. THOMAS, b. 12 July, 1724; d. 1810; m. 16 Apr., 1745.
(1) Elizabeth Bruce; (2) Mary Dresser, 1793.

15

DANIEL³ EMERSON, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Bulkeley) Emerson, married 19 May, 1709, Jane Armitage, daughter of Timothy and Johanna (Richardson) Armitage of Boston. She was born at Boston, 10 November, 1676. They resided at Boston. Mr. Emerson was a shipwright. Children:

60. i. JOHANNA, b. 2 Oct., 1710; d. post 1742; m. 1731.
James Haradin. Res. Boston.
61. ii. TIMOTHY, b. 10 Oct., 1712; d. s.p. 1742; m. 28 Feb., 1741.
Mary McMechan. Res. Boston.
62. iii. EDWARD, b. —; d. 19 Mch., 1737; m.
Hannah —. Res. Boston.

Mass. Bay Province Laws.

viii: 548.—Daniel Emerson, a petitioner for arrears of pay in "Her Majesties immediate service att Castle William." 12 November, 1705.

Suffolk (Mass.) Deeds.

x: 119.—Richard Richardson, of Boston, to his son-in-law, Timothy Armitage, of Boston, mariner, house now in the occupation of Benjamin Franklin. 13 Jun. 1677.

xxxiii: 95.—Jane Emmerson and Elizabeth Peirce, both of Boston, widows, the two only grand children of Richard Richardson, late of Boston, deceased, to Joseph Prince. 21 Sep. 1725.

17

MARTHA³ EMERSON, daughter of Rev. John and Ruth (Symonds) Emerson, was born at Gloucester, Mass., 28 November, 1662. She married 9 October, 1685, William Cogswell, son of William and Susanna (Hawkes) Cogswell of Ipswich, Mass., where he was born 4 December, 1659, and died 14 April, 1708. They resided at Chebacco parish, Ipswich, now Essex, Mass.

Rev. E. O. Jameson, in his Genealogy of the Cogswells in America, says:

"William Cogswell, when a lad, was present where some men were in vain trying to relieve a cow, choked with a potato. A young girl, perhaps ten years old, stood by, watching with interest every effort made. Finally, it was suggested that the cow could be saved by thrusting a hand down her throat and removing the potato. The little girl at once said: 'My arm is small. I can do it best. You hold her mouth.' The act was successfully performed. The boy was much pleased at the brave deed and said: 'That young miss, by and by, shall be my wife.' And so it proved, for it was Martha, the daughter of the clergyman of Gloucester, the next parish to Chebacco, where William Cogswell lived." *AK Cogswell*

Children: *Cogswell*

- ✓ i. EDWARD, b. 13 Aug., 1686; d. 17 Apr., 1773; m. 1708, Hannah Brown.
- ii. MARTHA, b. —; m. 1710, Matthew Whipple.
- iii. WILLIAM, b. — 1688; d. 1710;
- iv. DOROTHY, b. 31 Aug., 1692; m. — Moulton.
- v. LUCY, b. —; m. — Moulton.
- vi. EMERSON, b. 1700; d. 1788; m. 1736, Mary Pecker.
- vii. EUNICE, b. 1704.

18

MARY³ EMERSON, daughter of Rev. John and Ruth (Symonds) Emerson, was born at Gloucester, Mass., 7 March, 1665, and died at Salem, Mass., 4 October, 1703. She married 26 March, 1687,

RALPH STANTON EMERSON, M.D.

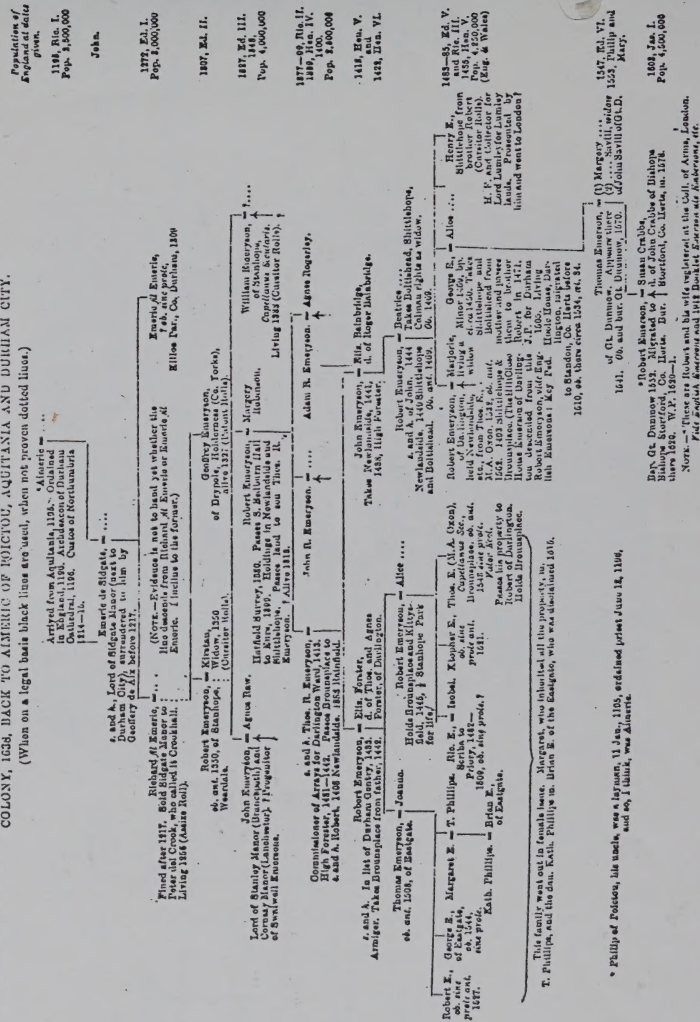


English Roots of the Haverhill and Ipswich Emersons

P. H. Emerson's

TENTATIVE PEDIGREE OF THE EMERSON FAMILY OF BISHOPS STORTFORD, CO. HERTS, 1578, AND IPSWICH, MASSACHUSETTS MAY COLONY, 1638, BACK TO ALMERIC OF ROUEN, AQUITANIA AND DUMIAN CITY.

(When on a legal basis black lines are used, when not proven dotted lines.)



AUTHOR'S TENTATIVE PEDIGREE

(Ipswich)

Robert Emeryson—Margery Robinson

Thomas R. E.—Agness Ross ?

John E.—Eliz. Bainbridge

(Ipswich Emerysons)
(high forester 1438)

Robert E.—Beatrice

ob circa 1469

Henry

Robert E.—Marjorie

George E.—Alice Wyatt

ob ante 1562

ob circa 1534

Leonard E.

Thomas E.—?

(under steward at Merks Manor about 1552)

Robert

? Savill—Thomas E.—Margery

b 1540 at Gt. Dunmow (Co. Essex)

Robert 1594

John

Robert E.—Susan Crabbe

Joan

c 1565

c 25 Oct. 1561 m 4 Sept. 1578

c 1562

all at Gt. Dunmow

Thomas—Isobel

Robert

Thomas E.—Eliz. Brewster

Margaret

Alice

Hill House
(Co. Durham)

c 12 Apr. 1596

(emigrated to Ipswich, Mass. 1638)

c 23 Feb. 1582

c 22 Nov. 1579

c 26 July 1584 m 1 July 1611 at Bishop Stortford (Co. Herts)

Joseph

John

Eliz.

Nathaniel

Robert—Eliz. Grave (d 1636)

Benj.

c 25 June 1620
to Maine 1653

c 26 Feb. 1615

c 16 June 1623

c 18 July 1630

c 24 May 1612
m 22 Oct. 1635

c 20 Oct. 1614

c—christened

m—married

ob—died

AUTHOR'S TENTATIVE PEDIGREE

(Haverhill)

Robert Emeryson—Margery Robinson

John R. Emeryson—?

Adam R. Emeryson—Agnes Rogerley

Thomas R. Emeryson—

(alive 1396)

(Haverhill and Ipswich line)

John E. Jr.

sine prole

Ralf Thomas Emeryson—?

John Emeryson—?

Richard Emeryson—?

(Wols) forester

recognized 1453
1 of 2 keepers of the park 1442

forester

Robert Emeryson—?

Thomas Emeryson—?

Wols and Moorwaste

(alive 1483)
took lease from Richard 1517

George Emeryson—?

Christopher Emeryson—?

Of Hole Hill (Rookhope)
(alive 1499)

Margaret—R. Norton, Richard E.—?

Robert Emeryson—?

John Emeryson—Jane Wrangham

Nicholas E.—? George E.—?

of Moorwaste

of Staggarth

1546

(alive 1579)

Cuthbert Emeryson—?

X

X

P. H. EMERSON'S IPSWICH PEDIGREE

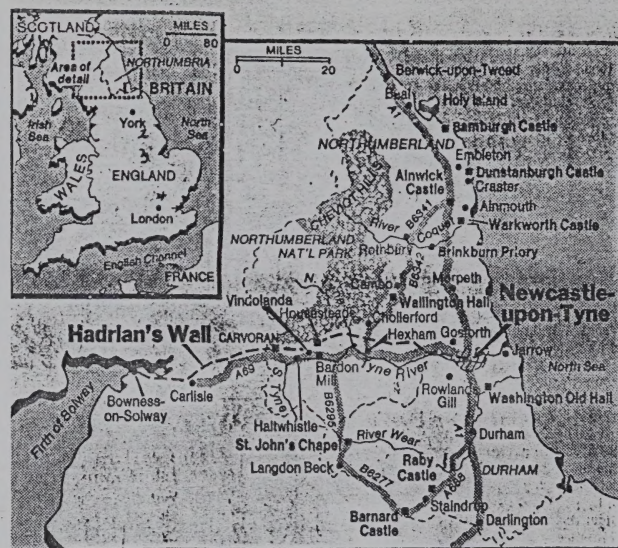
Thomas E.—Elizabeth Brewster

c 26 July 1584 m 1 July 1611
at Bishop's Stortford (Co. Herts)

(1) Elizabeth Woodmansy—Rev. Joseph²—(2) Elizabeth Buckley

c 25 June 1620

James ³	Edward ³
John ⁴	Joseph ⁴
Luke ⁵	William ⁵
Thomas ⁶	William, Jr. ⁶
Henry Ezekiel ⁷	Ralph Waldo ⁷
Philip Henry (PHE) ⁸	Edward ⁸



The New York Times/March 11, 1984

1. Co. Durham—Weardale—Stanhope Park

2. Co. Lincolnshire—Cadney-Howsham

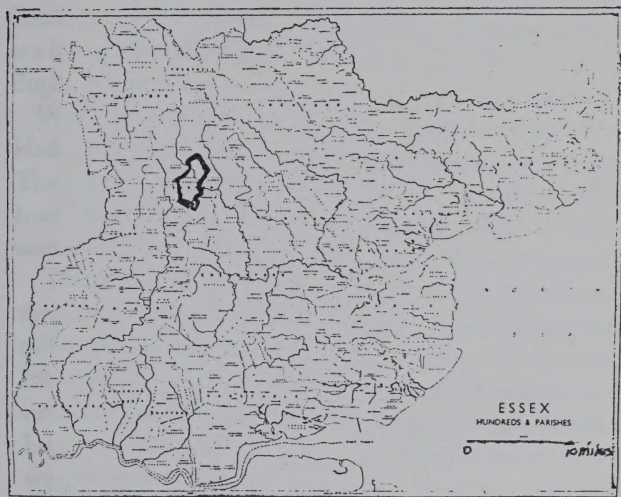
3. Co. Lincolnshire—Folkingham

4. Co. Essex—Great Dunmow

Co. Herts—Bishop's Stortford

Map of England

Copyright © 1984 by The New York Times Company. Reprinted by permission.



*Co. Essex and Gt. Dunmow
(Bishop's Stortford, Co. Herts 7 miles apart from shaded area)
Sites of Ipswich Emerson migration from Co. Durham*

Reproduced by permission of the County Archivist, Essex County Record Office

Introduction

This narrative will trace the emigrations and migrations of our forelders who came from the Poitoic area in Aquitaine, France to Durham, England in 1195. It was a period when the Third Crusade was completed, western Europe was beginning to emerge from the Dark Ages and war clouds between England and France were on the horizon.

Our first settler was Emeric (Aimeric, Aymery). Since he was Archdeacon of Durham Cathedral, he must have spent considerable time in Durham. His son and grandson lived at Sidgate Manor, now called Crookhall next to Durham City. Photographs of these have been obtained through the courtesy of Sylvia Ash of the Cleveland Society, Cleveland County. Thereafter, our branch of the Emerson family lived in the Weardale Forest and Stanhope Park until the early sixteenth century and merits a few comments on this region.

A brief sketch of the Weardale is derived from the writings of Mrs. J. Linda Drury of the Department of Paleography and Diplomatic of the University of Durham. The area was south-west of Durham along the Wear River extending westward into the foothills of the Pennines. Stanhope Park (Weardale) was founded by Bishop Anthony Bek (1283-1311) probably due to his interest in horses, hounds and hunting. The Weardale was also used for cattle raising. In addition, there were lead and iron mines and slate quarries, but these were of limited substance.

Forest Law was administered by the Master Forester who was appointed by the Bishop. High Foresters were appointed by the Master Forester. Their duties were to uphold the Forest Law, prevent damage to anything that grows and to

collect monies from leases for the Bishop. He controlled the purse strings and held great authority. Therefore, who appointed the Bishop became a sensitive issue between the King and the Pope and was a source of conflict for several centuries.

One of the early Emerson High Foresters was Robert Emeryson of South Bedburn Hall (Stanhope Park) in 1381. Subsequent male descendants were often appointed High Foresters provided they maintained good behavior and performed their duties. They were yeoman and substantial, local men. As commoners, they could not own property but were granted leases which they could pass on to their children. No commoner could own land outright until about 1537.

The tremendous research of P. H. Emerson established the framework of the English Emerson pedigree. Great credit must be given to his writings which served as a major resource for this narrative. There are gaps in the lineal descent especially in the first half of the fourteenth century as you may note in his Tentative Pedigree. This is understandable as there were recurring epidemics of the Black Plague, The Hundred Year War with France and frequent skirmishes with the Scots. In addition, Drury notes that the armies of the Scots and Edward III were camped within Stanhope Park in 1327. Obviously, accurate records had a very low priority.

One of the main problems in early genealogy research is the different spellings. P. H. Emerson pointed out the record keepers were very careless and often spelt the names differently even though cross references indicated it was the same person. Attempts to link the various spellings by different branches of the family or by generation were not successful but occasionally helpful. It was not until the early 1500s that the spelling of Emerson was more consistent.

The advent of the printing press helped to resolve this problem. On reviewing the Chancery Rolls of the Office of the Record Keeper (London), one cannot help but have deep admiration for the early scribes. It was tedious work done with

quill type pens on parchment using India ink. The preservation of these six hundred year records is truly amazing. The hand printing is beautiful, and interpretation is possible provided one can decipher Middle English and translate Latin into English. There were no printing presses or word processors to correct mistakes. The uniformity of Modern English was not established until the 1500s. Dates were occasionally generalized to permit passage of land leases. The inconsistency of names may be the result of phonetic spelling by the various scribes. These minor errors of recording do not detract from the truly magnificent contribution of the early scribes and were probably the result of fatigue rather than carelessness.

The final caveat for the amateur genealogist is the adoption of the Emerson name. For instance, Emotson was changed to Emerson when their family political status was denigrated in the mid sixteenth century. Much later in America, changing names became common-place.

The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints (Mormons) has provided a great service to all denominations by photocopying genealogy information of families in America and Europe. The use of computers and new electronic transmission technology offers great promise of making available vast sources of information. If this technology is applied in the field of genealogy, the future will indeed be bright and may stimulate the search of family roots.

It is my hope to develop a sense of pride in the Emerson heritage and to illustrate how they survived despite religious and political persecution extending over many centuries. Following the demise of the feudal system and the emerging Reformation, the Emersons were given the opportunity to utilize their talents by virtue of their self reliance, integrity and work ethos. They emerged in England and later in America as solid, respected spiritual citizens in what is now called "middle America," the backbone of our society. We are deeply indebted to their perseverance and should be proud of our heritage.

Early English History

The early English history is summarized from George Trevelyan's Lowell Lectures in Boston, the Encyclopedia Britannica and the Kings and Queens of England-Postal Commemorative Society of Norwalk, Connecticut and serves as a basis for the brief resume of events impacting on northern England.¹

When the Romans conquered England, they built the Hadrian Wall in 123 A.D. and later repaired it in 201 A.D. The purpose was to act as a defense barrier against the tribes from the north in what is now Scotland. This wall stretched across the narrow waist of England just north of Durham.

The next several centuries were under the dominance of the Scandinavians and the Angles and Saxons who periodically invaded the northern English coast. During the reign of Edward the Confessor (1042-1066), the period of Scandinavian supremacy ended. He was more of a French monk by heart having been reared in a Norman court. He paved the way for the Norman Conquest by placing Normans in high places in the church and state.

It is alleged that Edward the Confessor had promised his succession to the throne to his cousin William, Duke of Normandy, the son of Robert the Devil. However, the House of Godwin was the power structure in southern England as the Earl of Wessex. When Godwin and his son Harold returned from exile in 1052 with a large military force, they gained concessions from Edward the Confessor and were restored to power in southern England and predominated at the court in London. Godwin replaced the Norman archbishop of Canterbury alienating the Church of Rome and the

dukes of Normandy. Godwin died within a year and Harold of Wessex assumed his title, power and wealth.

When Edward the Confessor died in 1066, Harold seized the throne although he had little support in the north of England. His rival was William, Duke of Normandy. His family had supported the royal house of England throughout the Danish rule and was favored by the papacy and the Norman dukes. Harold of Wessex defeated Harold, King of Norway, in the battle at Stamford Bridge. However, Harold of Wessex suffered great losses and was defeated by William (the Conqueror) in 1066 at Hastings. Harold of Wessex was slain during the battle. William moved quickly to eliminate the opposition and consolidated his power. He was crowned king as William I (the Conqueror) on Christmas Day 1066.

The comrades in arms of William the Conqueror were repaid with lordships or other titles. They were also given grants of land. For instance, Lord Lumley became a Master Forester of lands in the Durham area, and the later Emersons obtained leases of parcels of these lands for a specified number of years and paid an annual fee for the privilege of living on the lands. In addition, these villeins were freemen with respect to legal relations with other people except to their lord to whom they were slaves. It was a continuation of the feudal system.

One of the serendipitous effects, as an aftermath of the Norman Invasion, was the development of the rudiments of the English language. Many words were derived from Latin or Nordic origin. It emerged as a middle English which was difficult to translate. It was only after the development of the printing press in the mid sixteenth century with the standardizing of printing and spelling that enabled the accurate record keeping and explosion of knowledge.

Norman abbeys and cathedrals were beginning to rise

about the time of William the Conqueror. The stone castles did not emerge until the twelfth century. There were very few learned people except a few priests. The upper class were ignorant of the rudiments of letters. There were no lawyers or professional men except the clergy. The pope decreed compulsory celibacy for the priests as well as almost all professional or educated men. Therefore, the Church of Rome stunted the growth of knowledge and maintained the power base within the church.

Papal Canon Law was enforced throughout the later Middle Ages. The king represented the secular arm of the law, and he dealt with the papacy as an honored but rival power. William the Conqueror effected the differentiation of the functions of the lay and spiritual courts and enhanced the early development of English Common Law which progressed in stages under Henry I, II, Richard I and Henry VIII leading to the Reformation in the mid sixteenth century.

Following the plunder of Durham Castle by William the Conqueror in 1066, Durham Cathedral emerged as a symbol of a new Latin civilization superimposed on these wild, Nordic lands by foreign soldiers and clergy under a feudalized system. It was to Durham Cathedral that our predecessors came in the person of Philip of Poitou as Baron of the Exchequer in 1195⁵ and Aimeric as Archdeacon in 1196.⁶

William I succeeded in unifying England during his reign from 1066-1087. He replaced lawlessness with law and order. He died in Normandy defending his duchy against King Philip I of France. William II was crowned king in 1087 and ruled until 1100. He engaged in wars against the Scots, Welch and against his brother Robert of Normandy. He alienated the Church of Rome by failing to fill vacancies in the church and pocketing the revenues. He died while on a hunting trip with his younger brother Henry in 1100.

England (1100-1377)

The twelfth century saw the beginning of the Renaissance which expanded in the next three centuries. There was a reawakening from the doldrums of the Middle Ages which served as a bridge to the development of the modern world. The Crusades opened up lines of communication. The Greek classics were rediscovered. There was a revival of learning and resuscitation of intellectual activities especially in the arts and sciences. It was a period of the emergence of the great cathedrals but also the controversies between church and state.

Henry I was declared king while Robert, the legitimate heir was on a Crusade. Later, Henry I defeated Robert's Norman army at Tinchebrai. Henry I (1100-1135) was the last of the direct line Norman kings. His primary forte was the administration of government. He succeeded in controlling the power and attacks of the barons. Henry's clerks were given the responsibility of compiling records for tax purposes, and they developed administrative skills. England enjoyed a generation of peace during his reign.⁴

Stephen usurped the throne from Mathilda, Henry I's daughter in 1135. His reign was marked by disorders and anarchy. Mathilda's son, Henry II, assembled a Norman army and confronted Stephen. He yielded and agreed to name Henry II his successor.

Henry II (1154-1189) succeeded in bringing the English monarchy to a stable financial power never before attained. He developed innovations in criminal procedure, and the king's court became the instrument of all government in England.⁵ His ministers served him well in his endeavors, except the appointment of Thomas Becket as Archbishop of

Wars. His victories at Agincourt (1415), his marriage to Catherine, daughter of Charles VI of France, and the Treaty of Troyes (1420) extended English rule over northern and western France. He was unable to break the power of the dauphin (of King of Bourges) who controlled most of central and southern France.

During this period the Lollard movement surfaced representing the Wycliffe teaching of doctrinal heresies with anti-clerical sentiments. The centre of teachings of Lollardy was at Oxford (1390). Those who questioned the church doctrine met with brutal repression and execution. Freedom of expression at this fountain head of learning was still muted by ecclesiastical doctrine.³⁰

HENRY VI (1422-1461 AND 1470-1471)

Henry VI assumed the throne at the age of eight months. He was deposed in 1461, restored in October 1470 and deposed again in April 1471. He died in May 1471. By the time of his maturity he was a victim of nervous instability, and he was incapable of shouldering responsibility of a king. His uncle, Duke of Bedford, governed in France. He was a good soldier and a capable administrator but lacked solid support at home. The kingdom was managed by the King's Council. There was intense intrigue at home and in France. The English resumed the war with France and invested Orleans resulting in the burning of Joan of Arc. Thereafter, English influence waned for varied reasons culminating in the surrender of Bordeaux to the French in October 1453. This was the last major event of the One Hundred Year Wars.

The deteriorating conditions in France were accompanied by disharmony at home. When Henry VI reached maturity, the Council was displaced from the control of affairs and replaced by officers of the household. Henry VI had many

relatives grasping for power, and the residual council became a battleground. It was a game of musical chairs between the Duke of Gloucester, the Earl of Suffolk, Cardinal Beaufort and the followers of the Duke of York. This period of intermittent civil disturbance was called the War of the Roses. Richard of York emerged as leader of the baronial league after the battle of St. Albans in May 1455.

In the countryside of England there were widespread signs of trouble. The government was heavily in debt which undermined its efficiency and authority. Some of the lords settled their disputes by arms rather than in the courts. The gentry joined with their powerful protectors. Justice was perverted by intimidation of witnesses and the bribing of sheriffs and jurors.³¹

Our Lineal Descent

The lineal descent according to P. H. Emerson during the troubled fifteenth century was through Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson. They had a son Thomas R. Emerson who was Commissioner of Arrays for Darlington Ward 1413 and High Forester 1431-1442.¹⁰ He had two sons—1. John Emeryson = Elizabeth Bainbridge. He was also a High Forester and inherited holdings in Newlandside. Their son Robert Emeryson = Beatrice inherited holdings in Newlandside 1444, Shittlehope 1449 and Boltishead about 1469. It is P. H. Emerson's contention that the lineal descent of the Ipswich Emersons is from Robert Emeryson = Beatrice through their son George Emerson (J.P. for Durham 1505) = Alice, their son Thomas Emerson = Margery and Robert Emerson = Susan Crabbe. 2. The other son of Thomas R. Emeryson was Robert Emeryson = Elizabeth Forster. He was an Armiger and was listed in the Durham Gentry 1433. He inherited Brownsplace from his father in 1442. Please refer

destroyed. Logical deduction is stimulating and a great mental exercise for our genealogy buffs. It would probably enhance the enthusiasm for genealogy. It adds a new dimension of visualizing what probably happened and why rather than just listing names and dates, thereby providing a prism of the events of the time as we search for our roots.

England (1377-1603)

Houses of Lancaster and York

RICHARD II (1377-1399)

The reign of Richard II was inauspicious. He was only ten years of age when he assumed the throne and took an active interest in the affairs in his last ten years. He was reported to be cruel and ruthless. He was finally forced to abdicate in 1399. During his reign there was a continual conflict between the king and council with incredible intrigue. The Peasants' Revolt occurred in 1381.²⁸ Of interest to the Emerson clan were the invasions of northern England in 1385 by a combined French and Scottish force and the defeat of the French fleet at Sluys. The recurring war skirmishes subsided more from exhaustion than from mutual agreement.

HENRY IV (1399-1413)

Henry IV's reign was characterized by a continuation of political turmoil. He succeeded in maintaining what he considered the rights of the crown. He faced numerous uprisings by the earls and had many of them put to death. Henry IV was determined to rule with ministers of his own choice. The opposition included the commons and knights who insisted on accountability and ministerial responsibility to parliament which they enforced by controlling the purse. This movement was a significant precedent. His reign has been recorded as one of administrative weakness, judicial corruption and fiscal improvidence.²⁹

HENRY V (1413-1422)

Henry V was a strong and capable leader. His genius as a soldier and politician created enthusiasm for the French

of Parliament. He was probably a land owner and may have acquired the land as a descendant of Emeric.

There is a William Emeryson of Stanhope who was a Capellanus Secularis listed in the Cursitor Rolls in 1338. He may be of the generation of Robert E. = Kirstan and Geoffrey Emeryson rather than the next generation. His son William would fit in the Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson bracket.

It is my belief that Robert E. = Kirstan and Richard are the sons of Adam Emmessonne, the intermediate generation from Richard fil Emeric. John, William and Geoffrey may also be sons and descend from Richard fil Emeric. All of the above first names are prominent in the Emerson family descent. For instance, Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson names their first son Thomas Robinson Emeryson and other sons John Robinson Emeryson and Adam Robinson Emeryson which lends additional support to the first postulate (PHE Tentative Pedigree). In my view, Thomas Emmesson was another son of Adam Emmessonne although PHE questions the spelling saying it could be Gunneson. My argument against sharing his view is that Adam Emmessonne was the first to be designated an Emmessonne. It was the period when the land holdings of Emeric's heirs were being relinquished. For instance, Richard fil Emeric sold Sidgate Manor to Peter del Crook during the 1200s which was later renamed Crook Hall (next to Durham City). PHE stated that "Crook Hall reverts to the Emersons for awhile as an Emerson marries Emma de Rytan (alive 1350) and heir to John de Kirby of Crook Hall." In the booklet "Crook Hall (Durham City)" by Muriel S. Cassels, June Crosby and Margot Johnson, there is a list of "THE OCCUPANTS"; i.e. In 1286, "Peter del Croke and his wife Alice levied a fine of the manor to Adam de Cokyn (Surtees)." If PHE was right and this reference

relates to Crook Hall (Durham City) and not in Crook, Adam de Cokyn may be Adam Emmessone. While we cannot prove that Adam Emmessone was the son of Richard fil Emeric, the chronology would be consistent, and the first postulate indicates he was in the direct line of descent from Emeric.

The third postulates will be discussed later regarding the descent of John of Folkingham in the late fifteenth century. Deductive reasoning will be utilized in the absence of documentation.

If these three postulates are valid, and in my view they are, it will establish the direct lineage of the Haverhill Emersons from Emeric to Robert and Michael Emerson who emigrated to America circa 1650. Thereafter, the lineage of these two branches of the Emerson families in America are well documented. Also, the Ipswich line will be established from Emeric to George Emerson, the J.P. (Justice of Peace) of Standon County, Herts. PHE says additional proof will be required that Thomas Emerson of Great Dunmow was the son of the above George Emerson, J.P. and the identity of Robert Emerson, baptized at Great Dunmow in 1552 with Robert Emerson of Stortford, buried there in 1620. With these two proofs, PHE believes the Ipswich Emersons will be established from Emeric to Thomas Emerson = Elizabeth Brewster who emigrated to America with their children in 1638. This issue will be addressed later in the book.

Inductive and deductive reasoning is a valuable tool in arriving at conclusions. It is used every day by business, the profession and scientific disciplines and at times by our politicians. It may not be the standard protocol of our genealogy conferers, but it is a valuable methodology they might consider in bridging lineage gaps during perilous times such as wars, pestilence and migrations when records were lost or

The Case for Logical Deductions

Having presented a brief sketch of the conditions in the late thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, let us now focus on the early major unproven gaps in our lineage. Referring to the PHE Tentative Pedigree, we note dotted lines between Richard fil Emeric and Robert Emeryson = Kirstan (widow 1350) and also Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson (1380). While PHE believed this was the line of descent, he could not prove it.

The task of resolving these gaps is analogous to solving a Chinese puzzle with several missing pieces. However, by sorting out the documented evidence chronologically and tracking the names of their forelders and descendants, we can develop postulates with valid premises and develop conclusions by logical deductions. In my view, deductive reasoning will bridge the gaps in our lineage when documentation during this period left much to be desired. The scribes were very sloppy in their Middle English recordings often misspelling names and inaccurate in documenting the dates as noted by PHE. A careful search of the voluminous Appendices of PHE's English Emersons has uncovered the following pertinent information used in this deductive exercise.

The first postulate is that Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson of Stanhope Park is the son and heir of Robert Emerson (ob before 1350) = Kirstan and a direct descendant of Emeric, Archdeacon of Durham Cathedral. As background information, Bishop Philip (Durham) left his land holdings, granted by King Richard I (the Lion Heart) and King John, to Emeric his nephew since he had no children. At that time, the Durham Bishopric extended to adjacent counties

analysis, there is a generation gap between Richard fil Emeric and Robert Emeryson = Kirstan. There must be an intermediate generation, and there are clues which will be developed. PHE believed the line of descent was via Richard fil Emeric²⁵—as there is no recorded data relating to Emeric fil Emeric other than he was alive in 1309 but nothing regarding his descendants. In support of PHE's contention, the following is offered.

In 1310, there is a notation that Robert Emmessonne was the son of Alan Emmessonne.²⁶ Alan was probably loosely spelled for Adam as there were no Alans in subsequent generations, and Adam was a prominent first name in subsequent descendants beginning with Robert = Margery Robinson's son, Adam R. Emeryson¹⁰. It was the custom to name the male descendants after their father, uncles or grandfathers to denote lineage. It is these clues which will be pursued in the absence of documented evidence.

In 1350, we find the names of Robert Emusson = Kirstan (also spelled Emmesonne, Emmeson), Richardus Emusson. Johannes (John) Emyson (also spelled Emmeson, Emeryson), William Emmeson (also spelled Emerison).²⁶ They appear to be of the same generation. Richard was probably named after Richard fil Emeric as was the custom. All of these first names were prominent in subsequent generations. John Emeryson "son of Ad Emmessone"²⁷ is probably a brother of Richard, Robert and William and probably Geoffrey.

In 1327, there is a Geoffrey Emeryson alive in the County of York who was probably of the same generation. Nothing is known of his descendants, but PHE believes he was a brother of Robert E. = Kirstan (PHE Tentative Pedigree). He may have gone to York and claimed lands as he is listed as a member of Parliament from Scarborough in 1309. It seems highly unlikely that a commoner would be a member

disasters. The ambiguous language of the Statute of York (1322) recognized the baron's privileged influence as the lords of parliament.¹⁷ Of interest in our lineage is the resurgence of the border Scottish Wars in 1312, 1315, 1322 and 1327 in the Northern counties of Northumberland, Durham and Cumberland. During these wars military service was required with men spending fourteen days service at their own expense and ten days at the king's expense each month guarding the frontiers and their own properties. Four days were assigned for travel, and the remainder of the month was spent tending their crops and repairing the damage by the raids. During the Scottish wars the English learned the value of the long bow and its vulnerability from the flanks. This lesson proved to be of great value for the English against the French in the land skirmishes of the subsequent One Hundred Year Wars. It was decisive in the naval victory at Sluys.

EDWARD III (1327-1377)

The One Hundred Year Wars started circa 1337. It was a phase of expansionist militarism which was popular at the beginning but disastrous in the end. The Scottish raids subsided after the English victory at Neville Cross in 1346.^{18*} However, the Black Plague struck in 1349 resulting in starvation, social unrest and depopulation of many towns. During the Black Plague the population of England decreased from four million to two and one half million inhabitants.¹⁴ One had to be fit and lucky to survive the raids and the Black Plague. It is not surprising that in these decades of wars and plague that the vital statistics left much to be desired.

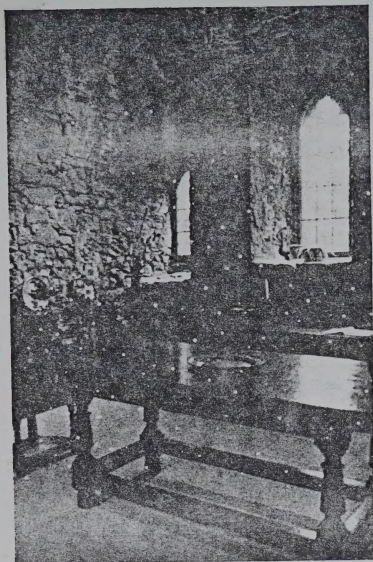
* It is alleged that John de Copeland, captor of the Scottish king at the Battle of Neville Cross (1346) slept at Crook Hall on the night before the battle and later resided at Crook Hall from 1360 to 1372.

"The Calamitous Fourteenth Century"

The events of the fourteenth century have been detailed in Barbara Tuchman's book *A Distant Mirror*.¹⁹ She describes this period as "the calamitous fourteenth century," and indeed it was. She presents the intrigue and turmoil between the kings, the Church of Rome, the Crusades, the Black Plague, and the life of the times. This outstanding historian has given us an insight of the events of this period. A brief resume appears appropriate.

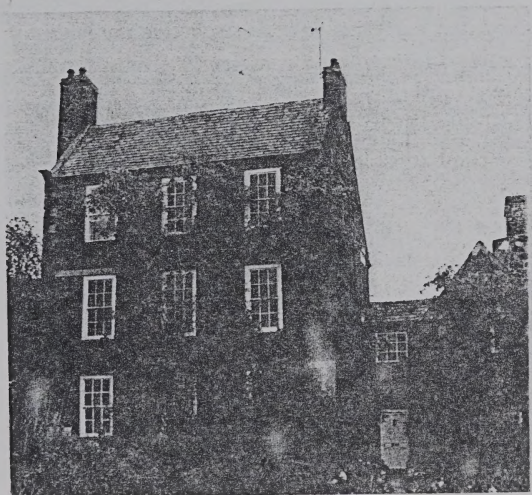
The One Hundred Year Wars were skirmishes between England and France to regain their possessions on the continent and Spain for control of the seas. There were temporary truces due to a lack of funds and recurrent outbreaks of the plague which occurred in scattered areas until 1390. The dukes supported the wars for political status, whereas their soldiers lived better at war by plundering the countryside than their meager existence provided at home. When the soldiers returned to England, they continued their robbery and plundering. King Edward III couldn't control them because he depended on the military support of the lords who were part of the problem. According to Tuchman, "the climate of the fourteenth century succumbed to the brute force of the lawless." The heavy taxation to finance the wars led to the Statute of Laborers which mandated the low wages of the pre-plague era. The free peasants assumed a nomadic life as depicted in the legend of Robin Hood which eventually led to the Peasant's Revolt in 1381.

The religious conflict between Edward III and the papacy accelerated. England resented the annual taxes of the pope and especially his appointment of "foreigners" to English benefices. This led to the flagellant and John Wycliffe movements. The revolt questioned the authority of the pope. Wycliffe, the Oxford theologian, enunciated the doctrine that



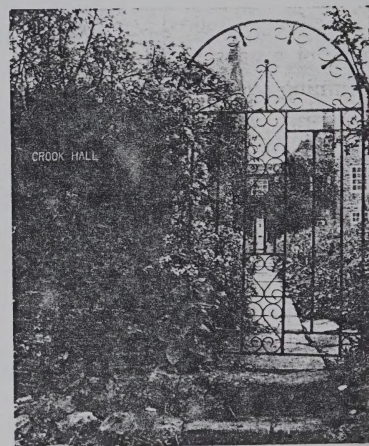
*Interior of Crook Hall
(left).*

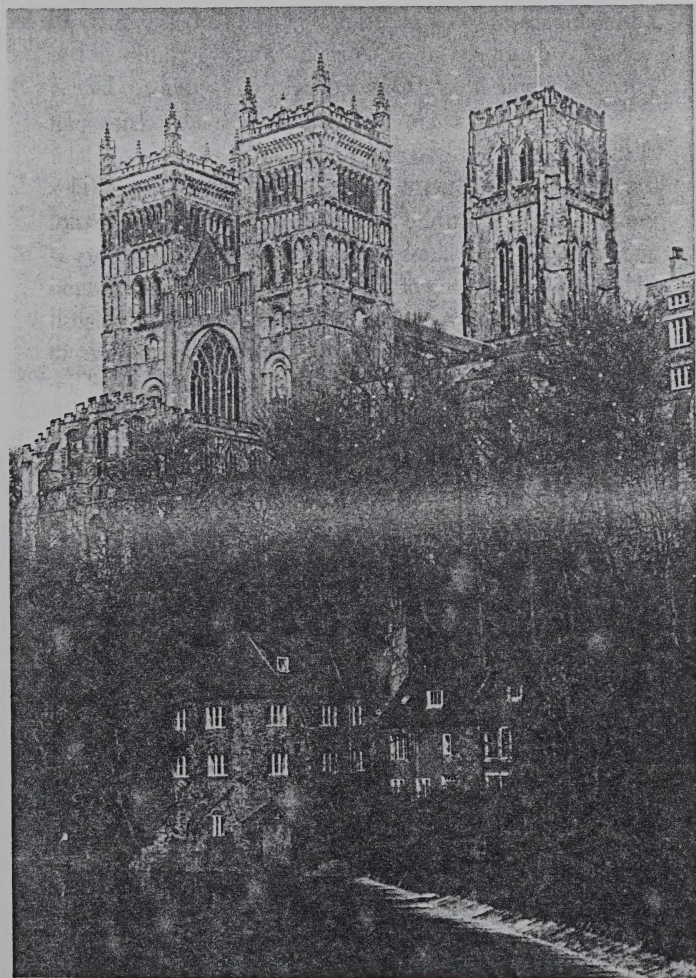
*Approach to front
entrance. This three-
story Georgian wing
was added in 1736 by
the Hopper family
(below).*



*Durham Cathedral and
Castle from front path
of Crook Hall (above).*

*Front approach to
Crook Hall (right).*





Durham Cathedral from across the River Wear

1196 and became Archdeacon of Durham Cathedral in 1196. He was also Custos of Northumbria in 1214-1215.¹⁰ It is alleged Philip left no issue (children), so the barony would descend to Aimeric. However, "Aimeric was practically ruined when King John came to the throne."²

Why did Philip and Aimeric leave Poitou in the same year and move to Durham, England? The answer would appear to be a changing political climate. You may recall that following the murder of Thomas Becket, the French dukes began to conspire with Henry II's adversaries in the hope of regaining the French mainland. Richard I's absence during the Crusades presented additional opportunities for John, but he was faced with resentment from his heavy taxation required to pay for the Crusades. Later, King John faced a strong Philip Augustus, King of France, and Pope Innocent III who strengthened papal supremacy in Western Europe. War was brewing, and indeed the French conquest of Normandy occurred in 1204. Sensing this political upheaval one would expect prudent men to leave Brittany and move to England to take advantage of their friendship with Richard I while he was still in power. It would appear their decision was correct and timely. If they hadn't, we might not be here. Why would Richard I select Philip of Poitou to be Bishop of Durham? The following conjecture may offer a clue. On Richard's return to England from the Crusades in 1194, he found unrest in the Durham area. The Bishop of Durham (Hugh Pudsey) had taxed the people, imposed fines, built monuments and was suspected of withholding money from the king. This may have prompted Richard I to select his trusted clerk in attendance (Philip of Poitou) to be Bishop of Durham. Philip of Poitou's sudden rise must have been politically motivated as he arrived in Durham in 1195 as Baron of the Exchequer, was elected Bishop of Durham 30 December 1195,

Canterbury. He resisted Henry's efforts to establish the supremacy of the king's court claiming ecclesiastical privilege and immunity for those affiliated with the church. This prevented the king's court from prosecuting offenders who were under the umbrella of the church and resulted in a confrontation of the church and the throne. Becket's murder in 1170 was a tragic consequence and was dramatized by the Canterbury Tales. The ripple effect was to increase the influence of the pope and to incite the French dukes to later mischief. It is unfortunate that this one event has colored an otherwise highly successful and productive reign of the man who introduced the new procedure of trial by jury.⁶

Richard I (1189-1199), Richard the Lion Heart of Robin Hood lore, spent most of his time on the Crusades.* It is reported he only visited England on two occasions. However,

* The Third Crusade was a continuation of the Holy War following the fall of Jerusalem in October 2, 1187. King Richard I and King Philip of France embarked by sea for the Holy Lands in July 1190. Following two years of battles and the inability to recapture Jerusalem, Richard signed a peace treaty with the Moslem leader, Saladin. This treaty was not popular with many of the crusaders. Richard I was an able commander, ruthless at times, but less than a skillful negotiator. The last was probably the result of rumors that John was plotting against him in England, and Richard I wanted to wind down the crusade and return to England. Enroute through Germany in the fall of 1192, Richard I was taken prisoner inspired by some of his disgruntled crusaders and held for ransom by Austrian dukes until 1194.⁷ On his release, he captured the English fiefs in France. (Philip of Poitou was aide in attendance to Richard I during the crusade.)

The Crusades were instigated by the Church of Rome to recapture the Holy Lands, to punish the infidels and to increase the church's centralized power. Ironically, the net effect was just the opposite. The crusades failed, but they opened the windows to a civilization far advanced in comparison with the decadent feudal system in the West in terms of trade, architecture, science, medicine, the arts and literature. The crusaders developed a greater tolerance toward the faiths of others. The closed mind of the dark ages of feudalism was replaced by the open mind of the Renaissance and later led to the Reformation.

The above brief resume was extracted from the lucid and excellent books on The Crusades by Henry Treece (Random House Inc. NYC), Zoe Oldenbourg (Pantheon Books, a division of Random House Inc.) and G. M. Trevelyan, *History of England*.

his able ministers were able to administer a strong government during his absence.⁷

Our Roots

Our recorded roots are alleged to date from the latter part of the twelfth century in the person of Aimeric (Emeric later translation) of Poitou in the province of Aquitania. This province is nestled in the Loire Valley in present day France and was one of the richest regions of the west. Since Henry II (1154-1189) was King of England, Duke of Normandy and Aquitaine and Count of Anjou, this area was under English rule at that time. The origin of Aimeric's ancestors is open to speculation. Records of lesser personalities in that period are difficult to retrieve.

The original spelling of the name Emerson was Emeryson or Emerissen derived from Emeric (Aimeric-Aymerie) by adding son or sen. The latter was used by the Danes and Norwegians with son being the English translation which suggests Nordic origin. The Nordic invasion of the seventh to ninth centuries extended into the Poitotic (Aquitania, France) area whereas the Hun (Gothic) invasion did not. Emeric is a name on the Celtic calendar and was probably derived from the verb *aimer* meaning love: Emeric (Aimeric) probably meant "loved one."⁸ The circumstantial evidence suggests a Nordic Celt (Scandinavian) origin.

Aimeric did not appear to be a prominent person in Poitou, except that his uncle Philip of Poitou was a clerk in attendance at the Crusades to Richard I.⁹ Philip came to Durham, England in 1195 as Baron of the Exchequer. He was ordained a priest in 1196 and consecrated Bishop of Durham 12 May 1197. Apparently he had good rapport with Richard I (Coeur de Lion) and was a trusted and prominent person. Aimeric also came to Durham in 1195, was ordained in England in

ordained a priest in the episcopacy in 1196 and consecrated Bishop of Durham 12 May 1197.²

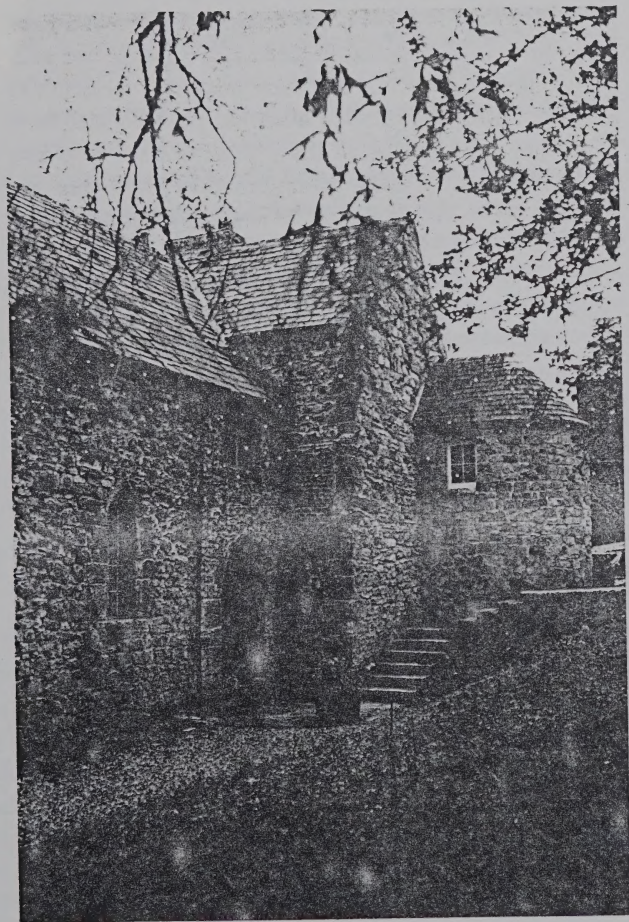
Philip of Poitou apparently continued the conflict between Richard and the pope during his stewardship. The following account was recorded of his tenure by an unenthusiastic historian. "His quarrels with the monks exceeded all those of his predecessors in violence, and give one a queer idea of episcopacy. He beset the cathedral with troops; commanding fire and smoke to be put to the windows and doors, and exhibiting the most supreme contempt for St. Cuthbert, with a tumultuous mob interrupting the convent in the holy offices of his festival, breaking in upon the altar, laying impious hands on the sacred furniture and dragging forth the prior and monks ministering there. He died 22 April 1208, and the seat was vacant for nine years and one half."¹¹ Philip and Aimeric (Aimery) enjoyed the confidence of Richard I, but during the reign of King John their political base of support was destroyed. The following balanced version is offered.

"After Pudsey's* decease,¹² King Richard recommended the election, after an interval of a year, of Philip of Poitou; a favourite of his own, and this monarch's recommendation was equivalent to a command, such was the respect and awe in which he was held. Philip was a native of Aquitaine, and a man of talent and learning; but not even in priests' orders. This lack was supplied, however, after some demur, by the Bishop of Llandaff, who ordained him, and the new bishop was consecrated by Pope Celestine, at Rome, in 1197. Under his government, the affairs of the bishopric appear to have for some time gone on tranquilly and prosperously, with one

* Bishop Pudsey built hospitals, public works, restored churches. He enacted heavy taxes and seized property. "(H)e was licentious, luxurious, and ostentatious, but often generous and munificent. In short, as a civil governor he was one of the ablest, as an ecclesiastic, one of the worst of the bishops of Durham. He died March 3, 1194."¹¹

exception. This was a dissention between the bishop and the monks of St. Cuthbert, who, not daring to disobey the wish of King Richard I, were yet very unwilling to see him bishop, and opposed him in every way. This disagreement produced some scenes disgraceful to the church. A constant denial of rights on both sides took place, and this led to violent assertions of prescriptive privileges, after the fashion of these times. On one occasion, the bishop seems to have blockaded the convent, and having closed up also the road to and from the abbey well, starved the monastics into submission to some of his claims. On the occasion of another dispute, as to the manorial rights of the abbey of Finchale, the bishop destroyed all their fish reservoirs communicating with the Wear; and, on another quarrel, killed all the cattle in Bear-park.

"These scenes were of no advantage to the church, and after the death of the popular King Richard, and the accession of the weak, tyrannical, and headstrong John—who was a strange mixture of obstinacy, rashness, irresolution, and moral cowardice—the dissensions which agitated and had nearly severed the kingdom, were felt in the bishopric. John's quarrel with the pope was briefly this. The ancient Christian usage of the election of bishops by the people and clergy, had been long usurped by the clergy alone, who chose thus their own favourites. It often happened, however, that the kings wished to interfere, and whenever a dispute occurred, the monarch was sure to do so to gain patronage for himself. John's dispute arose out of the election of the celebrated Stephen Langton, Archbishop of Canterbury, whose name stands first on the roll of Magna Carta. The monks of Canterbury had elected one man, and the suffragan bishops another. John had endeavoured to support the bishop's election, against the monks', but the pope being appealed to, chose neither, but prevailed on the deputation of monks to choose Langton, a man



View of the original Crook Hall (restored)

Photos by Sylvia Ash-Billingham, Co. Cleveland, England (with permission of the present owners of Crook Hall Manor House, Dr. and Mrs. J. Hawgood).

Sidgate. He was Lord of Sidgate Manor (next to Durham City) which had been surrendered to him by Geoffrey de Aix before 1217.¹⁴ Whether his father Aimeric, being High Sheriff of Northumberland in 1214-1215, was involved in this acquisition is not known. Although P. H. Emerson (PHE) states "the evidence is not at hand," he believes Richard fil Emeric is the son of Emeric of Sidgate and notes that Richard fil Emeric sold Sidgate Manor to Peter del Crook. These two generations lived in an unfavorable climate during the rule of Henry III.

Henry III (1216-1272) was a pious man and an instrument of the pope's ambitions in England. The English clergy were exposed to the full power of the pope's covetousness. Loyalty to Rome was rewarded to fill vacancies, and opponents were heavily taxed. This may explain why Richard fil Emeric was fined sometime after 1217. It was a period of increasing conflict with the emerging knights and gentry revolting against the barons. Simon de Monfort led the revolt against the king and pope but died a martyr. He is remembered as the founder of the English parliament.¹⁵ It was a conflict that continued until the Reformation.

Edward I (1272-1307) is referred to as the English Justinian. He chose capable and devoted servants. He governed efficiently through his knights who kept the peace, raised money and troops and executed judgments of the courts. In the latter part of his reign, he attempted to extend his rule over Scotland which resulted in repeated raids from both sides. His costly incursions into Scotland, Gascony and the low countries led to huge debts and loss of confidence among his subjects.¹⁶

Edward II (1307-1327) inherited his father's problems, but he was ill prepared to resolve the conflicts. He was described as lazy, incapable, and unbusinesslike. There was conflict with the barons and the French leading to political

to the Tentative Pedigree of the Emerson Family by P. H. Emerson.

At this point it should be remembered that P. H. Emerson's exhaustive research focused on establishing the direct descent of the Ipswich Emersons from the Durham Emersons. He did not concentrate on the Haverhill Emersons. In fact, in his Third Booklet #10, he stated "no connection has ever been proved between the Lincolnshire (Haverhill) and Durham Emersons."³² However, he amended this viewpoint in his Fourth Booklet #60 saying he believed the Emerson clan all originated from the Durham Emersons.³³ One of the prime purposes of this study was to determine if there was a direct descent from the Durham clan and where the Lincolnshire (Haverhill) and Ipswich Emerson linkage occurred. In my view, the Haverhill Emersons are descended from the Durham Emersons, and the linkage with the Ipswich Emersons occurred with their common forelders—Thomas R. Emerson—namely, that the Haverhill Emersons descended from Robert Emeryson = Elizabeth Forster and the Ipswich Emersons from (his brother) John Emeryson = Elizabeth Bainbridge. The premises leading to this conclusion will now be discussed.

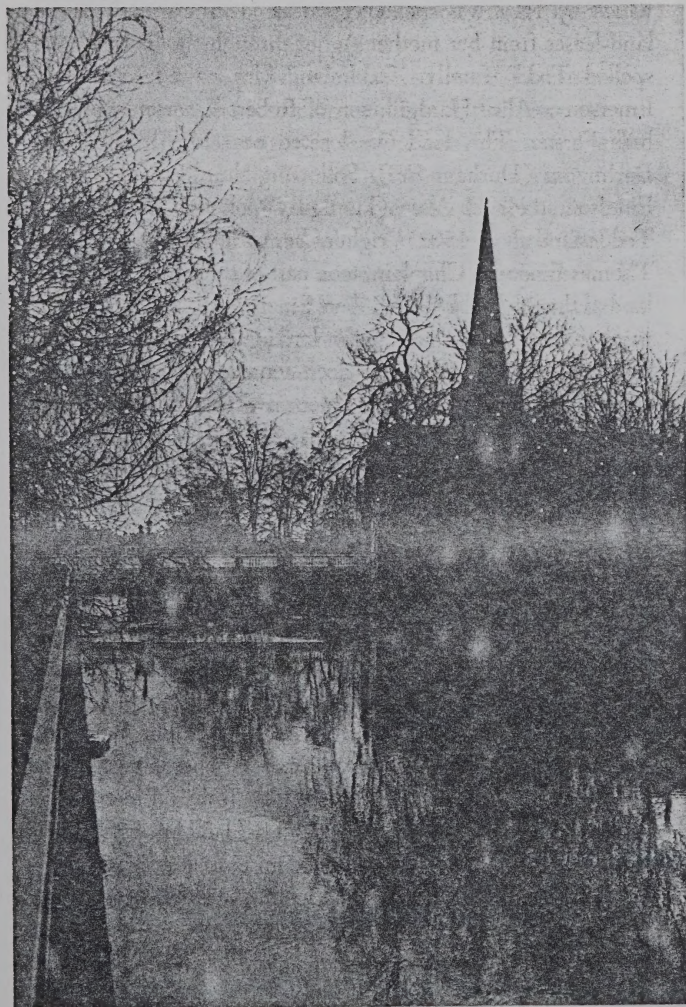
To prove this postulate will require a deviation from the general theme of consolidating events of a chronological period and present the author's concept of lineal descent during the one hundred years from about 1450 to 1540. Most of this has been proved. The association of John Emerson of Folkingham which has been the missing linkage is done by logical deduction based on circumstantial evidence in the absence of available documented evidence.

Referring to PHE's Tentative Pedigree, you will note the reference to the line of descent via Robert Emerson = Elizabeth Forster. She was the heir of Toodesland (Horlesyburn)

which by 1502 was spelled Toddesland. She inherited the land leases from her mother Agnes through the Tood (later spelled Todd) family. Toddesland was passed to Robert Emerson = Alice Hardgill, son of Robert Emerson = Elizabeth Forster. This land was located next to the bridge in Darlington (Durham Co.). Following the death of Robert Emerson, the said Alice (Hardgill) took the leases called Toddesland about 1502 in right of her widowhood.³⁵ In 1509, Thomas Emerson, Chaplain, took part of the land in Toddesland as the son and heir of Robert Emerson = Alice Hardgill, paying the accustomed rent to his lord by the pledge of Robert Emerson.³³ The above is well documented.

Let us now turn to John Emerson of Stanhope Park in Durham Co. In Roll #1 of Thomas Ruthall, Bishop of Durham, there are grants to farm lands (circa 1511) in Stanhope Park of many Emersons. In succession, are the names of Edward, George and John Emerson. John Emerson "has grant of the custody of the lands, etc., late of Robert Todd of Horsleyburn during minority of his heir, together with marriage of Robert Todd, his next of kin and heir."³⁴ This was undated. There is no other reference in the Bishops Rolls of any other Emerson having custody of the lease lands of Robert Todd. In my view, this would indicate that this John Emerson was a person of trust and a descendant of Robert Emerson = Elizabeth Forster and closely related to Robert Emerson = Alice Hardgill, as it was the custom to pass land leases through their descendants. True, this is circumstantial evidence, but in my view it is a logical deduction. Furthermore, since Thomas Emerson, the Chaplain, also took part of the land in Toddesland, this would suggest that John and Thomas were closely related with the same forelders.

Referring to the Tentative Pedigree, PHE¹⁰ stated the families descended from Thomas Emeryson = Joanna and



*The Bridge at Darlington, England, 1985
(St. Cuthbert's Cathedral at the right.)*

Robert = Alice Hardgill—"went out in female issue." This was based on the assumption that Thomas Emerson, the Chaplain, passed his lands to Robert Emeryson = Marjorie in (1522) the brother of George Emeryson, the Justice of the Peace (J.P.) of the Ipswich line. In the author's view, this assumption is not true. It should be noted that many of the Emersons of Stanhope Park migrated south to York, Lincoln, Essex and Herts counties shortly after 1511. It would be logical to pass the land to a relative present in the area rather than to a relative who had moved south. These land leases required payment of rent, and the leases were lost if the rents weren't paid.

No one was permitted to own land outright until about 1536 except the privileged class. The kings owned lands as a descendant of William the Conqueror. The lords were granted lands originally as compatriots of William the Conqueror and the dukes and duchesses as relatives, while the knights were granted lands by virtue of military service. Of course, the church had extensive land holdings. The system was a continuation of feudalism on the continent.

The Emerson clan lived in Weardale and the forests of Stanhope Park (Durham Co.) for three centuries until the early sixteenth century. The names of Edward, George and John Emerson are listed as being in the same area at the same time (1511) as mentioned in Roll #1 of the Thomas Ruthall, Bishop of Durham.³⁴ These names do not appear together in subsequent Rolls in the Durham area. However, these three appear together in the Lincolnshire Pedigrees and lists them as having received Yorke's Union of Honour. They are listed under "Emerson of Searby, Glamford-Brigg, Etc."³⁵ The dates suggest these three are of the same or next generation. John Emerson (Folkingham) had a son George. According to PHE, he is the George of Searby "for I can find no other

"Lincolnshire Pedigrees,"³⁵ probably by his support of the Earl of Lincoln, an heir of Richard III.

The above search did not help to identify the father of John Emerson (Folkingham). However, our Emerson lineage lived in the bend of the Wear River, south of Durham in an area called Stanhope Park.* It was originally a small area measuring some twelve miles in circumference and three miles across.³⁹ Most of the Emersons lived in the relatively small triangular area bounded by Durham, Darlington and Wolsingham until the early 1500s and were closely related. Thereafter, many migrated into York, Lincoln, Essex and Herts Counties.²⁵ Let us now backtrack and see what was transpiring during the reign of Edward IV.

EDWARD IV (1461-1470 AND 1471-1483)

The War of the Roses was a long period of civil disturbances degenerating into armed bickering between two strong baronial leagues, one serving the King (Henry VI), the other loyal to York. Both parties struck their opponents without mercy and was a legacy of the lawless habits acquired by the nobility during the French War. Edward of York emerged as the victor when he pursued the retreating Lancastrians northward and defeated them at Towton (March 29, 1461).

Henry VI and his family fled into Scotland. Edward of York was acclaimed king in 1461 as Edward IV. Richard of York had been slain in December 1460 and Richard Neville, Earl of Warwick, became head of the baronial league. He was a statesman, a military commander in the French Wars and described as a kingmaker. He was the architect of the Yorkist triumph.

Edward IV was a handsome youth of 19 when he ascended

* PHE stated the Weardale and Darlington Emersons descended from Thomas, and the Wolsingham Emersons from Adam-English Emersons, 39.

to the throne. He has been described as cruel, grasping and careless in his duties. He enjoyed twelve years of relative security mostly because Warwick ruthlessly eliminated the surviving Lancastrian faction. Edward IV and Warwick became involved in French intrigue. Edward IV gradually assumed more power denigrating Warwick's influence. This resulted in open conflict, and Edward IV was held prisoner in 1470, and Henry VI was restored to power for six months in 1470. Warwick served as his lieutenant. Henry VI's power was insecure, and he was defeated by Edward IV and slain at the battle of Barnet (April 14, 1471). Edward IV was restored to the throne in 1471.

Edward IV's government paid its way by confiscations and by pensions from Louis XI of France. The king's constructive financial reform consisted of spreading the burden of taxation over the growing mercantile wealth of the community. Edward IV became involved in unsavory, local intrigue. It was a period of distrust with the nobles at each others throat and the church losing its moral and intellectual leadership.⁴⁰

RICHARD III (1483-1485)

Richard III, the last of the Yorkist, was alleged to be a shadowy figure. He gained the throne by gradually eliminating the opposition. Henry Tudor, Earl of Richmond who had been in exile in France emerged as leader of the opposition in resentment against Richard III.

Henry Tudor took advantage of the unpopularity of Richard III, and within a week he raised an army of zealous supporters across England. He received additional support from French and English adventurers. With a few thousand men he defeated Richard III while many of the king's subjects stood aside and watched his defeat. This event ushered in the Tudor regime which reigned for a century.⁴¹

The Tudor Years

HENRY VII (1485-1509)

Henry VII's victory at Bosworth Field in 1485 did not end the War of the Roses, but Henry VII capitalized on the mistake of his predecessors. He married the heiress of the House of York in 1486. Although the majority longed for a strong and stable government, they were more concerned with profits and were not willing to risk their lives and fortunes for a new king.

✓ Henry VII found the countryside in turmoil. A Venetian envoy wrote—there is “no country where there are so many thieves and robbers as in England. Few ventured alone in the countryside except in the middle of the day and not at all at night, and least of all in London.”⁴² The lords and gentlemen of the north were not appeased by Henry VII's marriage and remained bold and confident. There was no standing army. The crown hired mercenaries for campaigns into Scotland or elsewhere but did not pay them as a regular force because of a lack of funds.

Henry VII moved quickly to establish statutory control of the nation's economic, political and judicial life. His first Parliament (1485) passed the sweeping Act of Resumption which restored to the crown all lands alienated after 1455. The Justice Act (1489) gave more power to the Justices of the Peace (J.P.) and provided an appeals mechanism to the king's council.⁴³ The Star Chamber exercised judicial power, protected the weak from the strong and put down riots. These posts were filled by the gentry, merchants, clergy, lawyers and upper servants of the nobility. They were men of ability and owed their allegiance to the king rather than the nobles.

In foreign policy Henry VII engaged in shifting alliances with Scotland, France, Spain and Italy. His economic policy enhanced English commerce with the low countries, Scandi-

navia and the Mediterranean trade routes. The wool market flourished.

✓ The fifteenth century was intellectually barren except for the last twenty years.⁴⁴ There was no great literature except Chaucer's Ballads. New printing presses were developed. Ecclesiastical privileges had aroused anti-clerical feelings. There was a renaissance imported from Italy by Colet, Erasmus and Sir Thomas More.⁴⁵ Expansion of trade and exploration had arrived. Henry VII had restored a more stable, financial government and had opened the door for expansion of trade.

We do not know the reason for the migration of the Emerysons from Durham at the end of Henry VII's reign. The countryside had been unsafe for travel. The northern lords were not appeased by the king and remained independent. They had been squeezed by taxation. The skirmishes with the Scots kept recurring with required service on the borders. The rise of the middle class and civil servant class and increase in commerce held promise of a better life. For whatever reason, many headed south at about the same time, and self preservation and improvement in life opportunities may have been the motivation. Henry E. probably left because of his prosecution by the Lumleys. }

HENRY VIII (1509-1547)

Henry VIII's ascension to power was hailed by Erasmus and most Englishmen as the dawn of a golden age. A liberal spirit persisted for a few years. However, Henry VIII was more interested in pleasure than with the details of government. He became involved in foreign intrigue in attempting to establish a balance of power in Europe resulting in war with the Scots and French in 1512-1514. Woolsey was appointed chancellor in 1515 and controlled a great part of

the papal power in England. After 1521 Woolsey's skill and foresight failed, and his fall from power occurred in 1529.⁴⁶

Henry VIII broke with Rome because the pope would not annul his previous marriage. Henry VIII married Anne Boleyn defying the pope. This marriage produced a daughter, the future Queen Elizabeth I. The pope responded by giving all land from pole to pole 100 leagues west of the Azores to Spain and on the east to Portugal. Henry VIII responded and confiscated the abbey lands and sold them to the peers, courtiers, public servants and merchants. Trinity College (Cambridge) was founded from monastic lands. He reformed the church. Canon law was suppressed, and the shrine of Thomas Beckett was also suppressed.

Henry VIII's Reformation coincided with Thomas Cromwell's ascendancy as Henry's counsel 1534-1540. It forced a new order upon the English people by terror, propaganda and political bribery. The Act of Supremacy confirmed the king's leadership of the church, and another act made it treason to attack his new title even in speech. Sir Thomas More was executed. Spies and informers flourished. Half of the church's annual income passed into the king's hands. There was some resistance in the counties of Lincoln and Yorkshire. Henry VIII burned protestants and beheaded catholics who opposed his anticlerical revolution.

In foreign policy Henry VIII was saved from Catholic Europe by their preoccupation with the Lutheran successes and the challenge from the Turks. He assumed the title of King of Ireland. By 1542 he was engaged in a war with the Scots. His exploits had debased the currency. He did, however, establish the Royal Navy and installed heavy cannon in a row rather than depending on the ramming, archery and boarding techniques.

The social revolution increased the importance of Parlia-

ment. Most of the confiscated church property was sold to the rising middle class to raise money. Trade was concentrated in the single cloth commodity. The subsequent world wide inflation created unemployment which added to the ferment of the Reformation.

EDWARD VI (1547-1553)

Edward VI died before the age of 16, and the kingdom was governed by the Duke of Somerset and the Earl of Warwick (later Duke of Northumberland). It was marked by brawling between protestants and catholics. The Duke of Northumberland attempted to instill his daughter-in-law as queen, but the nation rebelled and installed Mary I. Both of the Dukes were executed. Trade was expanded during this period with Russia, Morocco and the Gold Coast, and these measures restored health to the English economy which prospered under Elizabeth I.⁴⁷

MARY I (1553-1558)

Mary I, Queen of Scots and daughter of Catherine of Aragon, sought to restore catholicism and papal authority in England. She insisted on marrying Philip of Spain making England a vassal of Spain for three years. She had 300 protestants burned in four years. Spain and Portuguese colonies were closed to English traders. She involved England in a War with Spain against France culminating in the English defeat at Calais in 1558. She was hated by her people and disgraced in peace and war. She turned England not only against Rome but also against Spain.⁴⁸

ELIZABETH I (1558-1603)

The Spanish ambassador and Catholic bishop tried unsuccessfully to exclude Elizabeth from the throne. Elizabeth I restored to the Tudor government the firm direction it had

lacked since 1547. She reestablished the supremacy of the lay church. She found England's financial credit, war supplies and militia at its lowest ebb. Fortunately, France and Spain were engaging each other in rivalry which permitted England a breathing spell.

Elizabeth I moved swiftly to nurse England back to unity and strength. She bought peace with France and Scotland by the reluctant cession of Calais in April 1559. In the same year she restored the Reformation in the Anglican form and endeavored to prevent dissension among the religious community. While the French were involved with their own religious war with the Huguenots, she seized control of the Scottish government removing French influence from her flank.

Meanwhile, the privy council was reduced in size and became the crown's efficient servant under the capable leadership of her minister, William Cecil. He tackled the economic problems granting patents, monopolies and charters to encourage local industry and foreign trade. New industries were developed which were necessary for self sufficiency and defense. Masters and skilled craftsman were attracted from the Netherlands. The expansion of coal mining and coal trade reflected the beginning of the industrial revolution. The Statute of Apprentices (1563) was enacted to check excessive expansion, regulate wages, and establish quality control in cloth making. A new Poor Law (1563) assisted those unable to work and punished those who would not work with enforcement under the jurisdiction of the justices and the parish. These farsighted measures won the support of the burghers, yeomen, artisans, smaller landed gentry, and the squires and lords of both England and Scotland. England was being revitalized, and its people were given an opportunity to utilize their talents.

Elizabeth I's settlement of foreign affairs was not secure, and 1568-1572 were years of continual crises. In 1570 Pope Pius excommunicated Elizabeth I. In the north, Mary Queen of Scots was gaining in popularity and by marriage and maneuvering was attempting to secure succession to the throne since Elizabeth I was single. Marital disputes caused Mary's downfall, and she fled to England. Elizabeth I prevented Mary's assassination as she disliked the killing of queens. There were conflicts with Spain over sea trade, rebellion in the north and trouble with France whenever she was freed from internal strife. The preoccupation of Spain and France, their financial strain of recurring wars and lack of a strong navy permitted Elizabeth I to make defensive alliances and secure her independence abroad.

The discovery of a Cape Route to India and the American continent destroyed the trade and supremacy of the Italian cities. France was having religious strife with the Huguenots who were "the commercial seagoing folks." France was even more feudal than Spain. The latter was still using the Mediterranean method of sea warfare while the English were using the cannon and conserving manpower. Portugal was excluding all foreigners and especially heretics, as the pope had assigned them their rights.

England and the Dutch learned to trade with the newly discovered lands and to avoid conflict. English privateering was encouraged, and by 1588 one hundred English ships were annually visiting the Baltic. Regular trade was established with Spain, the Mediterranean countries and Africa. This expanded trade encouraged industrial development and increased England's economic independence.

Drake's voyage around the world (1577-1580) was outstanding. His plundering of the defenseless Pacific coast of Spanish America and the capture of a rich Manilla galleon

hurt Philip of Spain in the pocketbook. Elizabeth I's knight-ing of Drake added insult to injury. The Netherlands were becoming a liability for Philip, and he needed the silver from the Americas. When Elizabeth I loosed Drake to plunder the West Indies and helped finance the Huguenots uprising on the continent, Philip was furious. When he conquered Portugal and acquired their navy, he decided to assemble the Spanish Armada and strike back at England. The battle occurred in 1588 with the rout of the Spanish fleet. England could not capitalize on her victory as she had neither the men or the money to effectively attack Spain and at the same time support the French and Dutch. As a consequence, the Spanish War dragged on for another fifteen years further depleting the queen's savings and casting clouds over the Tudor regime.

In religious affairs the queen was experiencing increasing unrest. The Puritan movement wanted to "dreg" the church of Rome and give it a learned and preaching ministry. This contrasted with the queen's intent to blur religious differences. The Puritan and Presbyterian movement called for legislation to reform the Anglican episcopacy. There was a revival of Catholic activity with an influx of better trained priests from Rome. Drastic penal laws were passed imposing heavy fines and death upon English Catholics who defied the law. This persecution prompted plots to try to assassinate Elizabeth I and restore Mary to the throne. When it was discovered that Mary acquiesced to the plots, she went to the scaffold in February 1587. This event coupled with the defeat of the Spanish Armada convinced even the Catholic priests to come to terms with the English Jezebel.

The reign of Elizabeth I was truly an era of great accomplishments. She established English supremacy of the seas, stimulated industrial development at home and exploration and trade overseas. The Tudors prepared the way for middle

class power. The middle class acquired land, developed industries and entered the universities. Communications were expanded. Literature, music and lyrical poetry flourished. Architecture changed the face of the countryside with the appearance of mansions and gabled farm houses. The Ministers of the Crown and the Justices of the Peace became the mainstay of government, the rulers of the countryside and the leaders in the House of Commons. Apprenticeship was the key to the new national life. England had attained a preeminent position among the European nations. The keynote of the Tudor government had been king-queen worship and not despotism. It was not material but metaphysical. They appealed to love and loyalty of their subjects. The death of Elizabeth I brought an end of the Tudor era.⁴⁹

The Emersons prospered during the Elizabethan reign. John of Folkingham (Serby in Lincoln County) had acquired land and was an alleged armiger. His grandson Alexander had extensive land holdings. Thomas Emerson, who is believed to be a forelder of the Ipswich line, lived at Gt. Dunmow in Herts County. P. H. Emerson, believes Ralf was a brother of Thomas and that Ralf and Margaret Van Emerson were in Hamburg during the translation of the Bible.* While most of the Emersons were of the yeoman class, some became High Foresters, entered the legal profession and government service.

* Miles Coverdale was commissioned to translate the Bible by King Henry the VIII. P. H. Emerson states he did this in the Hamburg, Germany house of Margaret Van Emerson, and "I have always felt he (Ralf Emerson) was one of the translators of the Bible and was at Hamburg with Margaret Van Emerson, the whole time the Scriptures were translated at Hamburg."⁹ They were probably closely related. It is my belief that Margaret Van Emerson and John Emerson of Folkingham were "cousens" with the common forelders of Robert Emeryson=Elizabeth Forster. Refer to the Tentative Pedigree.

England (1603-1660)

The Stuart Years

JAMES I (1603-1625)

The expanding trade of the Elizabethan era continued for a few years, but James I's extravagance and rising prices doubled Elizabeth I's war debt in five years. By lecturing Parliament on the divine right of kings, he irritated its members. He resented the squires and lawyers of the House of Commons questioning his authority to raise taxes and to determine foreign policy. Extravagance, corruption, traffic in titles, sale of wardship, and multiplication of monopolies widened discontent. He abolished Parliament. He became involved in foreign policy and intrigue which led to the Thirty Years' War. He tried to ingratiate himself with Spain and offered his only surviving son in marriage to the Spanish infanta which would have led to Spanish heirs and Catholic kings and undue the work of Elizabeth I.

The Puritans asked for certain concessions in ritual and parish work which would regulate their position. James I responded "I will make them either conform themselves, or I will harry them out of the land."⁵⁰ This evoked feuds and persecution of the Puritans which cost the blood and tears of three generations. This incredible attitude and behavior led to the emigrations to America, the transfer of sovereign power from king to Parliament and changed the course of history. The
 ✓ Emersons and others did not thrive under this regime with the exception of Thomas Emerson, Esq., a confidant of James I and one of the largest, commoner landowners in England.

On the positive side, James I kept England out of costly

foreign wars for two decades. He sponsored a translation of the Bible which became the King James Version. The Jamestown colony in America was named in his honor.

CHARLES I (1625-1649)

If conditions seemed bad under James I, they became even worse under Charles I. His reign was clouded by religious strife by favoring the new Arminian school of divines which considered Protestantism as suspect. His foreign policy brought conflicts with the Dutch, Scots, Spanish, French and the Irish. His quarrels with Parliament led to the Civil Wars, his trial and execution (January 30, 1649) and the establishment of England as a Commonwealth.

The marriage of Charles I to the French princess Henrietta Maria and his close association with Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, did not instill confidence in his subjects. Laud attempted to return England to the papal fold. He was a great churchman but not a statesman. He made life intolerable for the Puritans spurring their emigration to America. The non-conformists were persecuted for worshipping outside the church. Freedom of worship was denied at a time when Puritanism was producing men of the calibre of Cromwell, Milton, Hampden and Pyn. Censorship of the press was used to silence the opposition. Laud revived the activity of the Catholic oriented, spiritual courts. Influential laymen were summoned to answer for their sins before the priesthood. Bishops were beginning to replace the nobles and commons as favorite councillors of the king.

Charles I had serious problems with Parliament which impacted adversely on his foreign policy. They impeded his ability to finance his military pursuits. Charles I denigrated Wentworth and Coke by making them sheriffs. Coke believed the Prerogative Court's perception of Roman Law and their

arbitrary procedure belonged to an alien civilization. Coke made an alliance with the Puritan squires in the lower house. The Lords and Commons passed the Petition of Rights condemning arbitrary taxation and imprisonment, martial law and billeting of soldiers as contrary to the law of the land. The reactions resulted in Charles I dissolving Parliament and the substitution of a Councilor government. This succeeded for a few years as peace was made with France (1629) and Spain (1630).

There was a revival of trade stimulated by colonial expansion. However, the honeymoon did not last long. The tight central control encroached on the power of the gentry and commercial classes and demanded more unpaid services while at the same time reduced their influence in public policy. In addition, the Councilor machinery was used vigorously to enforce an unpopular ecclesiastical policy. The ugly head of religious strife had resumed. The disunity in civil affairs accelerated leading to the Civil Wars, Charles I execution on January 30, 1649 and the establishment of the Commonwealth.

Oliver Cromwell's Irish campaign (1649-1650) and brutal massacres broke the back of Catholic Ireland's resistance. He was victorious over the Scots at Dunbar (1650) and Worcester (1651). In 1652, Ireland, the channel islands, Barbados, Virginia and Maryland submitted. In 1652, victory over the Dutch secured the "Narrow Seas." Since France and Spain were engaging in another war, the Commonwealth was secure in Europe.

The Rump Parliament continued the repressive policies of Charles I. Their attempt to enforce Puritan standards of conduct and morality was unacceptable to the masses. The Rump Parliament did little to produce sweeping reforms in law and church organizations or to provide for a representative assembly. When the army turned against them, the Rump

Parliament was forcibly ejected in 1653 and replaced by The Protectorate. Cromwell served as protector sharing executive power with a council of state. The legislative power was shared by a triennial Parliament representing the three kingdoms. It framed a constitution claiming control of finances, armed forces and religious policy. Parliament objected to its limitations. The Protectorate failed, and Cromwell dissolved it. A constitution was then drawn by Parliament over the objection of the army. This "Humble Petition and Advice Act" (March 1657) created a new House of Lords and gave the Commons sole control over their own members. They proposed to make Cromwell king, but he refused the additional power. Dissension followed forcing Cromwell to dissolve the constitution. Cromwell's position was secure, and his victory over Spain enhanced his position. Before a new Parliament could be framed, Cromwell died (September 3, 1658). His eldest son succeeded him but soon abdicated. Feuds between civilians and the military developed. This was followed by a split within the army. General Monk marched on London. The Rump was restored. The nation looked to a Stuart restoration as the only hope of a settlement, and so on May 29, 1660 Charles II entered London as the next king.⁵¹

Emigration to America

The first half of the seventeenth century after Elizabeth's reign was characterized by weak kings, religious conflicts and persecutions, political unrest and a deteriorating standard of living. It was the religious persecutions of the Puritans which caused the first emigration to New England in 1620. Waves of emigrations followed during the next several decades. They represented England's most pronounced Nordic stock. They came from the southeast of England with fifty percent from Suffolk, Essex and Herts and twenty percent from Norfolk,

Lincolnshire, Nottingham, Yorkshire, Middlesex, Kent, Surrey and Sussex. It was akin to the Norse settlement of England one thousand years earlier. The trips were financed by wealthy Puritan lords, squires and London merchants. They represented the best types of small gentry, yeomen and craftsmen.⁵² Apparently, Charles I was glad to get rid of these dissidents.

The Ipswich Emersons left in 1638 probably because of the persecutions and search for a better life. The Howsham (Cadney parish in Co. of Lincoln) Emersons emigrated to Rowley, Massachusetts about 1650 in the persons of Michael, Robert and their older sister Elizabeth Lilfurd. Michael was born 19 April 1627 and Robert 10 November 1629. They were young children during the Pilgram wave of emigration and must have heard stories of the persecutions and the new lands. In addition, according to C. H. Pope,⁵³ Rev. Ezekiel Rogers assembled the second veritable Pilgrim company of Rowley in Yorkshire (1639) which was only a few miles north of Howsham. Robert, Michael and Elizabeth must have heard of the Rev. Rogers as they too came to Rev. Rogers settlement in what is now Rowley, Massachusetts. Pope suggests they emigrated to America not because of persecutions as that era was over. They probably came in search of a better way of life and greater religious freedom.

It may be of interest to our immediate family in that my maternal grandmother's maiden surname was Nelson. My mother, Edna Nelson Savage Emerson, traced the Nelson genealogy back to the Nelsons who emigrated with the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers to Rowley, Massachusetts. Therefore, the Nelsons and Emersons lived in the same area of England in the early seventeenth century.

There is also an item which may be of interest to the Emerson clan. In the Leicester Registry dated 16 September 1516,

Robert Shakyspeyre called upon Robert Eymerson to witness his last will and testament.⁵⁴ He "bequeath" to John Shaky-speyre some of his holdings. John had a son Wyllm (William). The time frame and being in the same general area may indicate that this John was a forelder of Wyllm (William) Shakyspeyre (Shakespeare) the writer. The middle English spelling mixing up vowels was prevalent until the mid-sixteenth century and probably accounts for the different spelling in modern English.

Summary of English Emerson Roots

To capsulize our thesis and deductions, our forelders came to the Durham area from the Poitoic area in Aquitaine, France near the end of the twelfth century under the guidance of Richard I (the Lion Heart of Robin Hood lore). Their fortune fell during the reign of King John, and they became villeins living in the forests of Stanhope Park south of Durham until the early sixteenth century. They leased land during these three hundred years and many paid rent unless exempt by military tenure. With the emergence of the villeins out of the feudal system in the sixteenth century, they migrated south and many emerged as the middle class owning lands, entering the business world and the professions. Because of the conflicts, including religious persecutions, they emigrated to America in search of greater opportunities and a better way of life. The Ipswich Emersons came in 1638 and the Howsham (Haverhill) Emersons in 1650.

In tracing our lineage, it is necessary to make assumptions based on deductions from pieces and bits of information. When one considers the continuous wars, the five epidemics of the plague, the recurring political and religious turmoil and the social changes with migrations southward in the sixteenth century, it is remarkable that recorded information is still available for the Sherlock Holmes genealogists. Our forelders had great foresight in this respect. They left clues for tracing the lineage. For instance, they named their progeny after their next of kin. They passed their land leases to their eldest son or close relations to keep the leases within the family. In

addition, Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson included Robinson in naming their sons which was very helpful in tracing their three son's lineage. Without this foresight, it would have been almost impossible to trace the lineage. This remarkable Robert Emeryson also had the courage to sue the bishop of another county and others to regain lands which had been given their forelders. The fact that he regained some of the lands seized during the reign of Edward II provides the clue of their direct descent from Emeric.

With respect to the Haverhill lineage, P. H. Emerson and the College of Arms confirmed that John Emerson of Folkingham had a son George of Sereby. C. H. Pope established the direct lineage of this George Emerson and the Haverhill Emersons.

If my third postulate is correct that John Emerson of Folkingham (Lincoln Co.) is the same John Emerson of Stanhope Park (Durham Co.) in the early sixteenth century, the conclusion is that he is a direct descendant of Robert Emeryson = Elizabeth Forster and Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson.

If my first and second postulates are correct that Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson was the son of Robert Emeryson = Kirstan, and he was the son of Adam Emmesonne, son of Richard fil Emeric, the direct lineage would be established to Aimeric (Emeric) who came to England in 1195 from Aquitaine, France.

Let us now address the gaps in the unproved lineal descent of the Ipswich line. Referring to the PHE Tentative Pedigree, there are dotted lines between George E. = Alice and Thomas E. = Margery. Also, there are dotted lines between Thomas E. = Margery and Robert E. = Susan Crabbe.

If you refer to the Tentative Pedigree of the author and focus on the above generations, you will note this has been revised. Utilizing logical deduction, the following is offered

for your consideration to explain the reasoning leading to these changes. PHE believed Thomas E. = Margery was the son of George E. = Alice but states that he could not prove it. In my view, this deduction is not valid on a chronological basis. George E. = Alice was born circa 1450 and died circa 1534 at the age of 84. He states son Thomas E. = Margery had children baptized about 1552. The obvious conclusion is that there must be an intermediate generation. There is no proof of George E. (J.P.) progeny at this time. Unfortunately, his will is missing. Following his appointment in 1505 as a J.P. (Justice of the Peace), he spent many years on the circuit in the employ of the Crown. For instance, he is listed as a witness, inter alia, for receiving Emperor Maximilian's oath to the treaty concluded in London 29th October 1516 and the Emperor's oath in the church of St. George at Hagenau in Nether Alsace.³² In addition, he acted as attorney for several wealthy lease holders, had an extensive practice extending to London and was a partner in a land holding in Gt. Dunmow. In his later years, he semi retired as under steward of Anstey Manor (Herts) in 1519-20.³² In spite of his renown, none of the progeny of Thomas = Margery and . . . Savill are named George for the next several generations. Since it was the custom over the prior four centuries to name their male progeny after their forelders, the inference is that the direct descent is not via George the J.P.

It seems highly unlikely the lineal descent was from Henry E. as he was imprisoned by Lord Lumley for nineteen years during his reproductive years because he didn't collect the taxes from his relatives and friends. He might be considered a martyr. Besides, there is no proof of his progeny at this time.

In my view, the direct descent is via Robert E. = Marjorie, brother of George (J.P.), and the intermediate generation is

Thomas. PHE believed that Thomas Emerson (Em'son) followed in the footsteps of George (J.P.) and migrated from Co. Durham to Co. Herts, was an official inter alia and probably under steward of Merks Manor in Gt. Dunmow circa 1552.⁵⁷ It was a period of migration southward of the Emerson family and difficult to trace their movements. Records were scarce except for lease and scant legal documents. King Henry VIII mandated in 1538 that each parish maintain legal records, but these records left much to be desired until about 1558. There are no other Emersons listed in the Gt. Dunmow or Bishop Stortford areas other than George (J.P.) and Thomas until after 1558.

Let us now spend a few minutes discussing Robert E. = Marjorie. In PHE English Emersons (1898) he suggested this Robert descended from Leonard, the younger brother of Thomas = Joanna and Robert = Alice. Later, in PHE Penultimate Notes #4 (1923) he corrected this error and showed in his Tentative Pedigree that Robert E. = Marjorie descended from Robert E. = Beatrice and was a brother of George (J.P.). Robert E. = Marjorie held large leases in the Darlington, Co. Durham area and was the progenitor of the Darlington Emersons. Leonard lived on his property which probably explains why Robert E. = Marjorie named their son Leonard (refer to Author's Pedigree). Also, Robert E. = Marjorie received land leases from Thomas (Capellanus). Assuming Thomas is a son of Robert E. = Marjorie, this might explain why they named a son Thomas because of their close relationship. All of these Emersons were closely related and lived in the Darlington-Weardale area. We have not been able to document that Thomas was the son of Robert E. = Marjorie, and this is the major deficiency in the direct lineage.* PHE stated that many of the Co. Durham records were

burned in the first half of the sixteenth century. Leonard would inherit the land leases of Robert E. = Marjorie as their eldest son or if Thomas had left or planned to migrate south to Gt. Dunmow, since land leases required annual fees to be paid to the bishop.

In spite of this lack of legal proof of direct lineage, it is my belief that Thomas descended from Robert E. = Marjorie for the following reasons: i.e. Thomas followed George E. (J.P.) = Alice, who would be his uncle, from Darlington to Gt. Dunmow, Co. Essex and Herts; Thomas progeny names are similar to those descended from John E. = Elizabeth Bainbridge; and Robert E. = Marjorie is the most logical, documented, immediate forelder. Since this descent is not legally proved, a dotted line is inserted between Robert E. = Marjorie and Thomas.

In support of my contention that Thomas is the father of Thomas Emerson⁽¹⁾, Margery⁽²⁾ . . . Savill, the following is offered:

1. In the microfilm library of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints (Mormons), there is listed a Thomas Emerson born at Gt. Dunmow in 1540. ✓
2. There is no record of any Emerson children born in the Co. of Essex or Herts from 1540 to 1565 other than those of Thomas Emerson.
3. It is noted above that Thomas Emerson (Em'son)^{57*} was an official inter alia and probably under steward at Merks Manor in Gt. Dunmow circa 1552.⁵⁷ Obviously, this is not the Thomas Emerson born at Gt. Dunmow in 1540 and indicates there were two Thomas Emersons at Gt. Dunmow. It is my belief that the elder Thomas was the

* PHE states Em'son was the shortened form of Emerson, and the scribes in copying left out the ' and recorded it as Emson. #10,p.9

* The Durham Record Office have no birth records prior to 1540.

to the southwest of Durham as villein serfs for the next three centuries.

While the pope's action was a disgraceful abuse of power, the long term effect on the Emerson clan may have been a blessing in disguise for the following reasons: 1. By being relegated to life in the forest, our clan became foresters and archers. Along with other families, they became the principal guardians of the Counties of Durham and Northumbria against the frequent raids from the Scots. Therefore, they were needed to guard these forests and were not called into service to fight in the "One Hundred Year War" with France. 2. By living in the forests rather than in the more heavily populated cities and villages, our clan was spared the horrendous mortality of the five epidemics of the Black Plague of the fourteenth century which had its greatest toll in the populated areas. 3. By enduring great hardships, the Emersons became a hardy stock with a strong genetic code and developed an intense family loyalty. They always supported each other when one member was hauled into court and guaranteed the fines. They did not attack each other in court over family disputes. In fact, Henry Emerson went to jail for failure to collect taxes from his kinsman for Lord Lumley. It was an intense family loyalty which established a heritage for subsequent generations.

The interpretation of history rests in the eyes of the beholder and the political, religious and racial background of the historian. Witness the divergent annals by the church and state of the reigns of Henry II and Henry VIII and the events leading up to the Reformation. Searching for a non biased viewpoint, the Encyclopedia Britannica was selected as a reliable source of these turbulent chapters of history.

Genealogy is a very thought provoking hobby. To paraphrase Oliver Wendell Holmes, it provides a prism of history

as to where we've been, where we are and the direction in which we are going. History is an ever changing, living document, and its true assessment must await the passage of time. When one considers the discriminations of centuries by the church and state, it makes the magnified discriminations in the current news media pale in insignificance. When one considers the hardships our forefathers endured just to scratch out a living compared to the ease and luxuries even the poor enjoy today, we cannot but admire our forefathers. When our politicians overexpand entitlement programs resulting in huge deficits and scream at any restraint in the increase, one wonders if we are not following in the footsteps of the largesse of the old Roman Empire. When we consider the educational opportunities for everyone who is willing to work and exert self discipline, we say—thank God we live in America. How our country was conceived, born, nurtured and emerged as the great land of opportunity is the subject of the second part of this narrative.

get
PJ
66/7

① Almeric arrives from Aquitaine 1195. Ordained in
Ely 1199 Archdeacon of Durham Cathedral 1184
Caster of Northumbria =

② Emery de Ardgote, Lord of Ardgote Manor =
next to Durham surrendered to him by Geoffrey de Arx
before 1217

③ Richard flees Emery. Fined 1217 =
Sed Ardgote Manor to Peter de Cress (who called it Cress Hall)
Living at 1258 Assize Roll.

④ Robert Emeryson = Kirsten, widow 1350
ob 1350 of Stanhope, Co. Durham (Cresswell Roll)

⑤ Robert Emeryson = Margery Robinson
Hofside Mary 1500, Holdings in Newland side & Middlehope
Passed land to Sir Thomas K. Emeryson. Alive 1713?

While the pope's action was a dignified, peaceful power, the long term effect on the Emancipation was a great blessing in disguise for the following reasons. First, being relegated to life in the forest, our clan became archers. Along with other families they became princing guardians of the Counties of Dublin and Nottingham against the frequent raids from the Irish. Therefore, they were needed to guard these forests as well as to take part in service to fight in the "The Hundred Year War" with France. 2. By living in the forests rather than in the more heavily populated cities and villages, our clan was spared the horrendous mortality of the first epidemics of the Black Plague of the fourteenth century which had its greatest toll in the populated areas. 3. By enduring great hardships, the people of our lineage have developed a strong genetic code and developed an intense family loyalty. They always supported each other when one member was hauled into court and guaranteed the fines. They did not attack each other in court over family disputes. In fact, Henry Emmons went to jail for failure to collect taxes from his kinsman for Lord Langley. It was an intense family loyalty which established a prestige for subsequent generations.

The interaction of history tests in the case of the holder and the political, religious and social world of the historian. Witness the diversity of the church and the state of the reign of Henry VIII and the years leading up to the Reformation. Examining from a new viewpoint, the *Encyclopedia Britannica* was published as a reliable source of historical information.

Genesis is a very thought-provoking volume. I hope to read it again. I have a copy of the book by Oliver Wendell Holmes, it provides a point of view.

ment and its true assessment must be made on the pages of time. When one considers the discrimination ~~to~~ if permitted by the church and state, it makes the magnitude of discrimination ~~in~~ the current news more palpable in significance. The church is not the gardener, and for elders engaged in a scratch and sniff exercise, the reward is the ease and luxuries via the paper envelope being compared to the ease and luxuries via the paper envelope. Today, we cannot but admire our forefathers. When our nation starts over expanding entitlement programs pertaining to his subjects and sermons at any restraint in the measure, the wonders if we are not following in the footsteps of the larger nation the old Roman Empire. When we consider the educational for the old Roman Empire, who is willing to work and exert? Too much of the person who is willing to work and exert? If discipline was ~~to~~ thank God who in America. I feel that country was received, born, nurtured and emerged. The great land of opportunity is the same as the ancient part of the nation.

[illegible]

ment and its true addressing. When one considers the church and state, it takes the current view, anyone who takes the hardline, any false, living compared to the es today, we cannot but admit, sinners over-expanding, conflicts and so on at an enormous if we are not fellow the old Roman Empire. The punishment for anyone who is disciplining we have for country but we have the great land of Congo with its natural resources.

Best example

(see above) (Japan)

at 1300
of 2000

the mag-
elders
and lux-
ire our
ment
y restr-
ing in
When
who is
ank God
born, a
ity is the

1. Prüfung
 2. Prüfung
 3. Prüfung
 4. Prüfung
 5. Prüfung
 6. Prüfung
 7. Prüfung
 8. Prüfung
 9. Prüfung
 10. Prüfung
 11. Prüfung
 12. Prüfung
 13. Prüfung
 14. Prüfung
 15. Prüfung
 16. Prüfung
 17. Prüfung
 18. Prüfung
 19. Prüfung
 20. Prüfung
 21. Prüfung
 22. Prüfung
 23. Prüfung
 24. Prüfung
 25. Prüfung
 26. Prüfung
 27. Prüfung
 28. Prüfung
 29. Prüfung
 30. Prüfung
 31. Prüfung
 32. Prüfung
 33. Prüfung
 34. Prüfung
 35. Prüfung
 36. Prüfung
 37. Prüfung
 38. Prüfung
 39. Prüfung
 40. Prüfung
 41. Prüfung
 42. Prüfung
 43. Prüfung
 44. Prüfung
 45. Prüfung
 46. Prüfung
 47. Prüfung
 48. Prüfung
 49. Prüfung
 50. Prüfung
 51. Prüfung
 52. Prüfung
 53. Prüfung
 54. Prüfung
 55. Prüfung
 56. Prüfung
 57. Prüfung
 58. Prüfung
 59. Prüfung
 60. Prüfung
 61. Prüfung
 62. Prüfung
 63. Prüfung
 64. Prüfung
 65. Prüfung
 66. Prüfung
 67. Prüfung
 68. Prüfung
 69. Prüfung
 70. Prüfung
 71. Prüfung
 72. Prüfung
 73. Prüfung
 74. Prüfung
 75. Prüfung
 76. Prüfung
 77. Prüfung
 78. Prüfung
 79. Prüfung
 80. Prüfung
 81. Prüfung
 82. Prüfung
 83. Prüfung
 84. Prüfung
 85. Prüfung
 86. Prüfung
 87. Prüfung
 88. Prüfung
 89. Prüfung
 90. Prüfung
 91. Prüfung
 92. Prüfung
 93. Prüfung
 94. Prüfung
 95. Prüfung
 96. Prüfung
 97. Prüfung
 98. Prüfung
 99. Prüfung
 100. Prüfung

page of time.
 insured by C
 mining
 scratch
 your en
 our r
 ing in h
 house, the
 of the large
 ed. Miss
 and' elen
 America. I
 emerge, as
 a second art

Center of Mathematics
Office 1140
11/11/2011

1. Robert Brown = Mapping Robinson

2. Thomas R Brown = Brown 1822
Comparison of Brown for Robinson and 1822.
These forests are in the same general area.
→ John Brown = Elizabeth Robinson
after Robinson's 1821 last life to own (then report)
the forests 1828

4. Robert Brown = Brown
(- or 1828)
Mr. John Brown to
the 2nd of 1828 - Robinson as he
said

(2) Thomas E.
Robinson's 1828

5. Thomas E. = Robinson 1821
E. Robinson 1821
for the 1821

6. Robert Brown = Brown 1821
1821 Mr. Brown
of Robinson's
Thomas Brown = Elizabeth Robinson
1821 Mr. Brown
to Robinson's 1821

1. Robert Emerson = Margery Robinson

2. Thomas R. Emerson = Agnes Ross

1405 - Commission of Agents for Burlington and 1413
Newlandside High Forester 1430-1442 Perthes Groundplan 1442
1438 → John Emerson = Elizabeth Bernbridge
Bernbridge 1441 1435 High Forester (Char. Roger)
High forester 1438

4. Robert Emerson = Beatrice
(ca 1468) both 03.1469
1444 Newlandside
1449 Starhope & Balthasar ob oc
(50.5)

5. Thomas E.
Rachewinkel Marks Mann ca 1552

6. Thomas E. = ~~Scott~~ Margery 1547
B. Great Denmark 1541
for the 1570

7. Robert Emerson = Sarah Crabbe
(25 Oct 1561 - m. 04 Sep 1578
of Great Denmark)

8. Thomas Emerson = Elizabeth Brewster
28 Aug 1544 m. 01 Sep 1578
to Ipswich

9

Family Record

Archie Ancestors
Family No.
Symonds Surname

Father -

Richard SYMONDS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	05	Dec	1860	Newport	Salop (Shropshire)	England	Infected "The Pothe" from his wife - came east for his political career	
Death	8	July	1627	"The Pothe"	Great Yarmouth	Essex		
Buried								
Married	09	June	1594	Yarmouth	Essex			
Occupation	Caretaker of the Cherry East				Military	Church	Anglican? Puritan?	
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name John Symonds

His Mother's Maiden Name Ann Denbow, dau. Thomas

Mother -

Elizabeth PLUMB

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	9	Dec	1560	Great Yarmouth				
Death								
Buried	24	Jan	1601/11	"	"			
Occupation					Military	Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

Her Father's Name Robert Plumb

Her Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Plumb POOLAS

Children from 1634 Vital Records of Essex & parish registers

4 Norwichee

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	John Symonds (15 children)	Birth							
	Spouse - Anne Elliot of Ockington or Ockington	Death				Great Yarmouth	Essex		
2.	Thomas Symonds	Birth							
	Spouse - (no issue)	Death	5	June	1625				
3.	Margaret Symonds	Birth							
	Spouse - Edmund Gye	Death							
4.	Edward (or Edmund) Symonds	Birth							
	Spouse - Anne Dwyer, dau. John	Death	9	Dec	1627	Black Notley	Essex		
5.	Samuel Symonds	Birth							
	Spouse - (2) Margaret (Red) Fyfe	Death	2	Jan	1614	Braintree			
6.	Richard "the Simon" Symonds	Birth	9	June	1593	G. Y.			
	Spouse - Caretaker of London's Inn	Death	2	Apr	1617	Boston	Mass. Bay Colony		
7.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

(our descent is through the)
 (second wife, Martha Reader)

Family Record

Averill Ancestors
 Family No.
 Symonds
 Surname

Father - (Deputy Governor) Samuel SYMONDS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	chr 9	June	1576	Great Yeldham	Essex	England		
Death				Boston		Mass Bay Colony	During session of Gen CT	
Buried								
Married	2 Apr	167		Great Yeldham	Essex	England		

Occupation *Carver of the Chancery*

Military

Church *Poser*

Places Lived

Other Wives ² 1637 - Martha (Reader) widow of Daniel Eppes Sr.

③ Rebecca (Swaine) widow of Henry Bykey, John Hall, His Father's Name *Richard Symonds*
 & Rev. William Worcester - no children His Mother's Maiden Name *Elizabeth Plaine* (or Plaine or Plamme)

Mother - Dorothy HARLACKENDEN

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	12 Dec	1586		Earl's Colne	Essex	England	The Harlackenden gentle	
Death				Topperfield	"	"	family pedigree can be	
Buried	3 August	1636		"	"	"	found to about 1100 AD	

Occupation

Military

Church

in England!
Poser

Places Lived

Other Husbands

Her Father's Name *Thomas Harlackenden*

Her Mother's Maiden Name *Jane Hebert*

Children

Defers per "Ancestry of Averill" paper
These who died young listed last

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	<i>Richard Symonds</i> (Student at Gray's Inn - left in 1618)	Birth			1618	Topperfield	Essex	England	
	Spouse - <i>none? England - died ca 1640?</i>	Death						"	
		Married							
2.	<i>Dorothy Symonds</i>	Birth		ca	1619	Topperfield			
	Spouse - <i>Rev. Thomas Harrison who had been chaplain in VA</i>	Death		by	1657	St Dunstons in the East London, or Dublin Ireland			
		Married		ca	1648	Ipswich?			
3.	<i>Elizabeth Symonds</i>	Birth		ca	1625	Topperfield			
	Spouse - <i>Daniel Eppes, Jr (died 1625 or Nov 1628)</i>	Death	7 May	1685		Salem		Mass.	
	(Capt) <i>bro Saml who d. as a baby & young stepbro. Saml living in same house</i>	Married	20 May	1694		Ipswich		"	
4.	<i>Samuel Symonds</i> (bro had 6 children)	Birth		ca	1626	Topperfield			
	Spouse - <i>none</i>	Death			1653	Ipswich			
		Married							
5.	<i>Harlackenden Symonds</i>	Birth		ca	1627	Topperfield			
	Spouse - <i>Elizabeth Day</i>	Death		ca	1697	Ipswich	Essex	MA	
		Married		ca	1666	Gloucester?		MA	
6.	<i>John Symonds</i> (Stayed little in this country)	Birth		ca	1628	Topperfield			
	Spouse - <i>(wife unknown)</i>	Death		ca	1653?			England?	
		Married				Kittery Maine??			
7.	<i>William Symonds</i> (Marshall & Dep to Con. of Sam Wells Martin)	Birth			1632				
	Spouse - <i>Mary Wade (dow Jonathan)</i> (4 daughters)	Death	22 May	1679					
		Married		ca	1633?	Ipswich			

Jane Symonds b. ca 1621, living 1634, died not long after
 Anne " b. 1622 died 1634
 Samuel " b. 1623 died same year
 Robert " b. 1629 died 1630
 Roger " b. 1633 died 1634

all in Topperfield, Essex, England

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

Avenell Ancestors
Family No.
Symonds
Surname

Father - (Deputy Governor) Samuel Symonds

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth	Ch	9	June	1595	Great Yarmouth	Essex	England	
Death				(? Boston)	Essex	Mass Bay Colony	Died during session of the General Court	
Buried	4	Oct	1678	Ipswich				
Married			1637	Wickford	Essex	England		
Occupation	Consistor of the Chancery in England - Military - Merchant & Dep. to Gen Ct in MA Church Puritan							
Places Lived	"Topsfield" Estate in England & Ipswich in Mass Bay Ct - but owned numerous other estates							
Other Wives	Dorothy Hurlakenen (2 Apr 1617)							
	③ Rebecca (Swagge) widow of Henry Pyle, John Heath (Hale) & William Worcester (in Apr/May 1663) (No children of 3rd marriage)							
	His Father's Name				Richard Symonds			
	His Mother's Maiden Name				Elizabeth Plume (or Plumb)			

Mother - Martha READE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1601			England		
Death			1662	Ipswich	Essex	Mass Bay Colony		
Buried								
Occupation	Military Church Puritan							
Places Lived								
Other Husbands	③ Daniel Eppes (1621)							

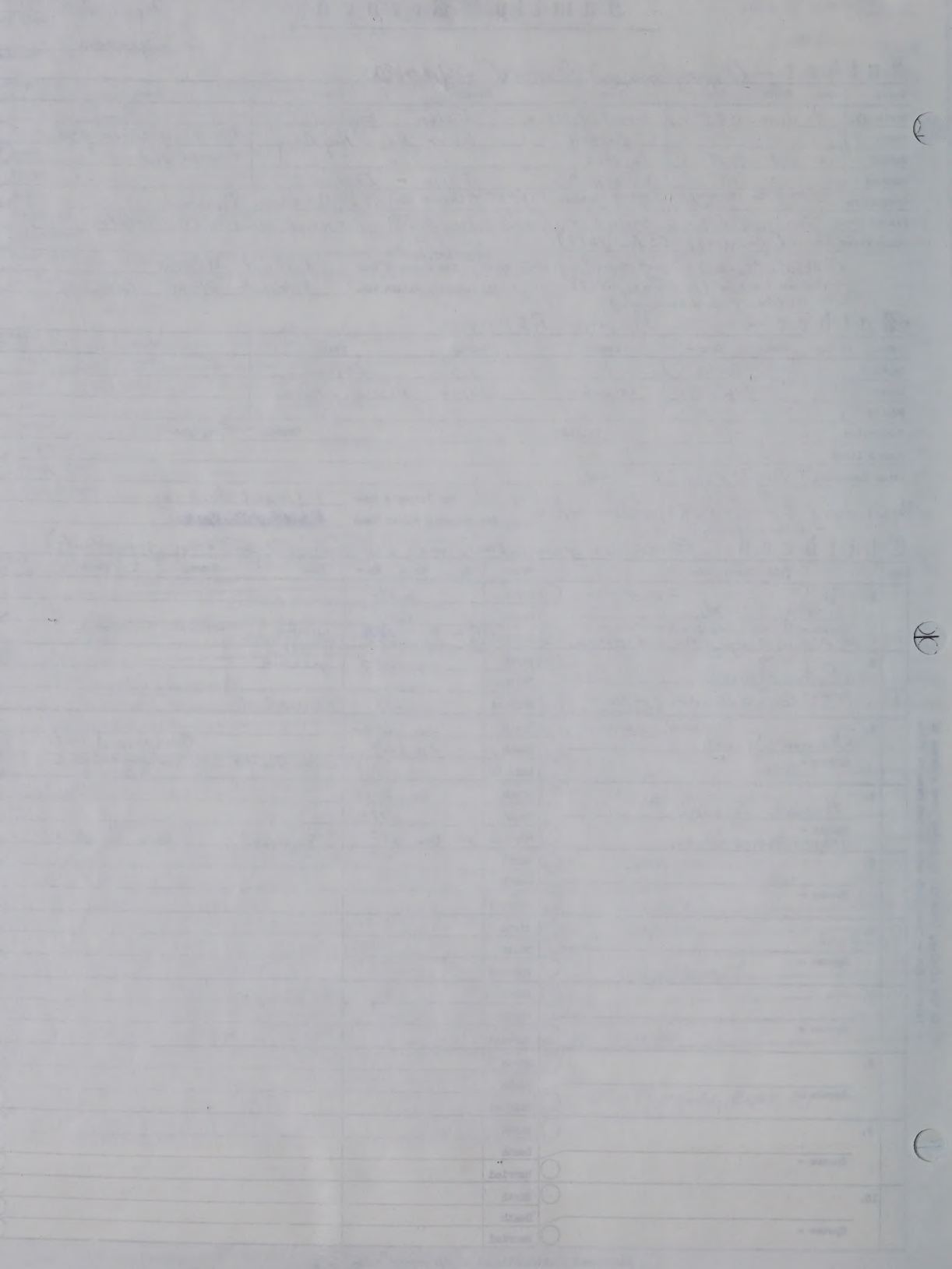
For Children of Rev John & Ruth Symonds Emerson see Emerson family)

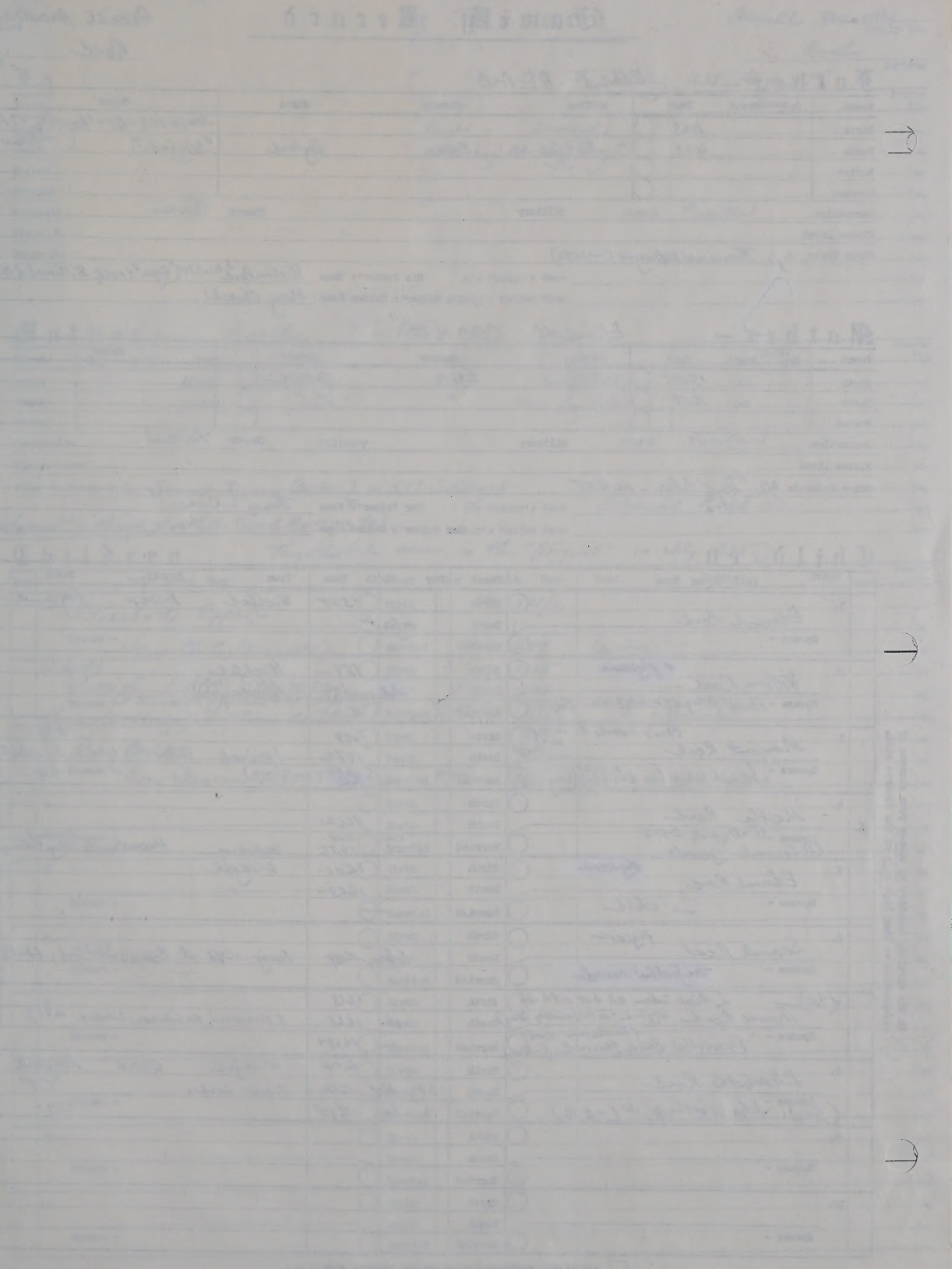
Her Father's Name Edmund Read (e)
Her Mother's Maiden Name Elizabeth Cooke

Children (For Children of Samuel & Martha's first marriage see other group sheets)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	<u>Martha Symonds</u> 2 ch. 1st m. Spouse - ① John Denison (1641 - Jan 1670) ② Richard Meston of Portsmouth as (Widow)	Birth			1637/9				
		Death			1684				
		Married	12	Feb	1663	Ipswich	Essex	MA CT	
			12	Apr	1672	Stamington			
2.	<u>Ruth Symonds</u> Spouse - Rev. John Emerson (Pastor of Gloucester MA)	Birth			ca 1640	Ipswich			
		Death							
		Married			1659	Ipswich?			
3.	<u>Samuel Symonds</u> "the younger" Spouse - none	Birth			ca 1642				
		Death			Nov 1669			(Fred Harvard 1669)	
		Married						(Will Dec 1668 before see wife to London)	
4.	<u>Priscilla Symonds *</u> Spouse - (Capt) Thomas Baker	Birth			ca 1648				
		Death			1738				
		Married	26	Mar	1670	Topsfield?	Essex	MA	
5.	Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
6.	Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
7.	Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
8.	Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							

* The book "Ancestry of Priscilla Baker" by William S. Appleton (1870) was written about this child, Priscilla (Symonds) Baker. Since she was our Ruth's sister, it was her ancestry as well.





Family Record

Averell Ancestors
Family No. _____
Read
Surname

Father - Edmund READ

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1563				See p 103-107 - mostly of Princes	
Death			1623	Wickford	Essex	England	"Wickford"	
Buried								
Married								

Occupation _____ Military _____ Church Pariton

Places Lived _____

Other Wives 2 1/2 Thomasine Wallington (-1572)

His Father's Name William Read ³ b. c. 1510 d. 1550; William d. 1531

His Mother's Maiden Name Mary Church

Mother - Elizabeth COOKE

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1560?	Pebworth	Essex	England		
Death		ca	1623			"		
Buried								

Occupation _____ Military _____ Church Pariton

Places Lived _____

Other Husbands 2 1/2 Red Hugh Peter - ca 1625

Her Father's Name Thomas Cooke

Her Mother's Maiden Name _____

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	<u>Edmund Read</u>	Birth			1585	Wickford	Essex	England	
	Spouse -	Death			infant	"			
		Married							
2.	<u>William Read</u> ^{a physician}	Birth			159 -	Wickford			
	Spouse - <u>Anna Allagon (-1635) dau Thos</u>	Death			1637	Birchington			
		Married			16 -				
3.	<u>Margaret Read</u> ^{clerk's husband R. in K.P. was lost}	Birth			1688			Eng.	
	Spouse - <u>John Lake (he d in Eng. living 1652)</u>	Death			1672	1 Princes		(before this lived in N. London, CT)	
		Married			ca 1685 - put away			Eng.	
4.	<u>Martha Read</u>	Birth							
	Spouse - <u>Daniel Essex</u>	Death			1662				
	<u>Samuel Symonds</u>	Married			ca 1637	Schubert		England, Massachusetts Bay Colony	
5.	<u>Edmund Read</u> ^{physician}	Birth			1601	Wickford			
	Spouse - <u>child</u>	Death			1663	"			
		Married							
6.	<u>Samuel Read</u> ^{physician}	Birth							
	Spouse - <u>unfortunate record</u>	Death			before 1659	living 1683 at Bishop's Stortford, Herts.			
		Married							
7. (d)	<u>Thomas Read</u> ^(lived Salem MA but outd to England - in testimony about of Maidstone Kent)	Birth			1613				
	Spouse - <u>Priscilla Binks (dau John) - 1622</u>	Death			after 1661	(Prisoners, Galesburg, London 1661)			
		Married			ca 1627?				
8.	<u>Elizabeth Read</u>	Birth			1614	Wickford	Essex	England	
	Spouse - <u>John Winthrop, Jr (-1676)</u>	Death			24 Nov 1672	New London		CT	
		Married			12 Feb 1635			Eng.	
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

Averill Anc¹⁰¹⁵
Family No.

Read

Father - Daniel EPPES

to Salisbury 1635 "Adjoind?"

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth					Kent	England		
Death		ca	1648?		Salisbury	Wiltshire		
Buried								
Married		ca	1620					
Occupation					Military		Church	Puritan
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother - Martha READ

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1602	Wickford	Essex	England		
Death			1662	Wickford	"	Mass Bay Colony		
Buried								
Occupation					Military		Church	Puritan
Places Lived								
Other Husbands	m/2 Samuel Symonds (Died 1654) ca 1637 - Salisbury MA							

Her Father's Name Edmund Read (a)

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Updescent is through Mother's Second Marriage to

Children

They do not 2 come in the "Averill" in July 1635

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Elizabeth Eppes	Birth		ca	1621/2				
	Spouse - James Chute (1614-1651)	Death			16				
		Married		ca	1647	Wickford			
2. (deaf)	Daniel Eppes (his step sis)	Birth		ca	1623				
	Spouse - Elizabeth Symonds (1614-1654)	Death	8	Jan	1653				
	(a) Lucy (Woolbridge) wife of Simon Broadstreet	Married	20	May	1648	Salisbury	Wiltshire		
3.	Mary Eppes	Birth			1625				
	Spouse - Peter Duncan (1630-1714)	Death			1674				
		Married			1655	Boston or Gloucester			
4.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
5.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
6.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
7.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.



Family Record

Averill Ancestors

Family No.

Plumb

Surname

Father -

John Plumb

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			ca 1504					
Death				Tapscott	Essex	England		
Buried	1	Oct	1586	"	"	"		
Married			ca 1528					
Occupation	Yeoman			Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Wives								

His Father's Name

His Mother's Maiden Name

Mother -

Elizabeth

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth								
Death		Apr	1587	Tapscott				
Buried								
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

Her Father's Name

Her Mother's Maiden Name

Children (known) or expected partly by his will & that of his son Robert (known)

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Robert Plumb	Birth		ca	1530				
+	Spouse Ed Elizabeth Plumb (1596)	Death	ca	Jan	1613	Great Yarmouth			
	(Edith) (widow of John)	Married		ca	1555				
2.	John Plumb	Birth		ca	1532				
	Spouse -	Death	3	Nov	1569	Sible Hedingham	Essex		
	(Ruth Garrett)	Married	2	Oct	1561	Bolchampt St Paul			
3.	(prob) Alice Plumb	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
	(John?) Eastford	Married							
4.	(prob) Margaret Plumb	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
	() Edging	Married							
5.	Thomas Plumb	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
6.	Jane Plumb	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
7.	Jane Plumb	Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
8.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
9.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							
10.		Birth							
	Spouse -	Death							
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Family Record

Averell Aravakis

Family No.

Plumb (4)

Surname

Father - Robert PLUMB

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			1536				Had UNCLE Robert Plumb m. to	
Death	17 May	22 June	1613				Cicely (Differ from John Plumb's)	
Buried	19 May	1613					"Life of Tammara Williams"	
Married			1555	Great Yaldham				
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived	extensive manor Plumb in Essex & Suffolk incl. Yaldham Hall & Spargues Hall in Gt. Yaldham to 1593 & The Pools							
Other Wives	Ethelred (widow of Robert Toller d. before 10 Feb 1644 & 22 May 1615) to daughter							
His Father's Name				John Plumb				
His Mother's Maiden Name				Elizabeth				

Mother - Elizabeth PURCAS

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth			ca 1535				(See T&G April 1871)	
Death							(re Robert's)	
Buried	25 June	1576					(Thomas Purcas) (died 13 Nov 1576) (1574 may have been her brother)	
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								

For Children of Richard & Elizabeth (Plumb) Symonds see Symonds Family

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	Maryent Plumb (son John & Elizabeth)	Birth		ca	1536	Great Yaldham	Essex	England	
	Spouse - Raye	Death			1613				
		Married							
2.	Robert Plumb	Birth		ca	1558	Great Yaldham			
	Spouse - (1) Mary (- 4 Apr 1588)	Death	14 Aug	1620		G. Y.			
	(2) Grace Crackbe (d. 21 May 1615 Gt. Y.)	Married	14 Dec	1584		East Hanningfield	Essex	CT	
3.	Elizabeth Plumb	Birth	9 Dec	1560		Great Yaldham			
	Spouse - Richard Symonds (widow of the Great Yaldham)	Death	24 Jan	1611		"The Pools" G. Y.	Essex		
		Married	9 Jan	1584		G. Y.			
4.	Thomas Plumb	Birth	12 Mar	1563/4		G. Y.			
	Spouse - Mary Hannard, dau. Richard	Death	27 Feb	1615		"			
		Married	2 Oct	1588		Ellingham	Norfolk		
5.	Mary Plumb (son Nicholas & Elizabeth)	Birth	2 Oct	1566					
	Spouse - (Nicholas?) Wilbow	Death			1613				
		Married							
6.	Anne Plumb	Birth	2 May	1569		G. Y.			
	Spouse - John Scroell	Death		16					
		Married	18 Nov	1589		"			
7.	Edmund Plumb	Birth	2 Sep	1577					
	Spouse -	Death	29 July	1624		Clan Parish	Suffolk		
		Married							
8.	(son)	Birth	27 May	1575		Great Yaldham			
	Spouse - infant	Death							
		Married							
	Child of Robert & Ethelred (Plumb)	Married							
9.	Joseph Plumb	Birth	25 Feb	1601/2		Great Yaldham			
	Spouse - (age 3 months)	Death	29 May	1602		"			
		Married							

Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information - then list each on the reverse side.

Handwritten notes and text, mostly illegible due to extreme blurriness. The text appears to be organized into sections or paragraphs, with some lines starting with capital letters or numbers. There are also some faint markings that look like "1" and "2" in the right margin.

Family Record

Averill Ancestors

Family No. Purcas 1
Surname

Father — Thomas PURCAS "The Elder"

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1525	Great Yeldham	Essex	England	"muck yeldham"	
Death	before		1575	The Elder				
Buried								
Married		ca	1530					
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Wives								
His Father's Name						<u>Purcas</u>		
His Mother's Maiden Name								

Mother — Alice

Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Notes	Source No.
Birth		ca	1570					
Death				Great Yeldham	Essex	England		
Buried	4 Apr		1578					
Occupation				Military		Church		
Places Lived								
Other Husbands								
Her Father's Name								
Her Mother's Maiden Name								

Children

Sex	Full Given Name	Event	Day	Month	Year	Town	County	State	Source No.
1.	<u>Thomas Purcas Jr.</u> Spouse - <u>Elizabeth Biggs</u> (d. 1586) <u>Mary</u> (d. 1586)	Birth		ca	1532	Great Yeldham	Essex	England	
		Death	3 Feb		1575/6	Muck Yeldham	Essex	England	
		Married	15 Sep		1568	Stretton, Essex			
2.	<u>Elizabeth Purcas</u> Spouse - <u>Robert Plumb</u>	Birth		ca	1534	G	Y		
		Death		June	1596	"The Dale" G.	Y.		
		Married		ca	1535	G	Y		
3.	<u>Richard Purcas</u> Spouse -	Birth		ca	1536	G	Y		
		Death	9 Sep		1586				
		Married							
4.	<u>William Purcas</u> Spouse - <u>John</u> (d. 1574) <u>Elizabeth Mott</u>	Birth		ca	1544				
		Death		ca April	1586				
		Married		27 Feb	1576/5				
5.	<u>John Purcas</u> Spouse - <u>unknown</u> (d. 1586)	Birth		ca	1543				
		Death	before		1575				
		Married			15				
6.	<u>Francis Purcas</u> (and ab.) Spouse - <u>unknown</u>	Birth							
		Death				G	Y		
		Married							
7.	<u>Alice Purcas</u> Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
8.	<u>Mary Purcas</u> Spouse -	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
9.	<u>Spouse -</u>	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							
10.	<u>Spouse -</u>	Birth							
		Death							
		Married							

☐ Additional children listed on the reverse side.

In the circles, identify by number your sources of information — then list each on the reverse side.



DUDLEY—Continued.

11. **Alta Deirexa Winchester**, b. Sept. 11, 1840, at Painesville, Lake Co., Ohio; d., at, m. Oct. 27, 1863, at Dupont, Ind., by Rev. Mr. Atterbury, to **Hon. Edward Hubbard Fitch**, b. May 26, 1837, at Ashtabula, Ohio; d. Sept. 7, 1897, at Conneaut, Ashtabula Co., Ohio.
- Res. Ashtabula, Jefferson, and Conneaut, Ohio. B. A. Williams College, 1858; M. A., 1881; admitted Ohio Bar, 1860; appointed Chairman of the Ohio Torren's Commission by Hon. William McKinley.
- Children: Catharine, Winchester, Mary Annette, Elizabeth Gilman, Edward Hubbard, Alta Deirexa, Flora Cornelia, Charles Gilman.

NOTE:—For continuation of this pedigree see FITCH pedigree of WINCHESTER FITCH, No. 42.

No. 45.

SYMONDS..MARY LOUISE (DICKERMAN) WOODIN

SYMONDS ARMS.

(Granted by letters patent dated 10th day of January, 1625, to Richard Symonds, first generation below.)

ARMS: *Azure*, a chevron engrailed between three trefoils slipped *or*.

CREST: Out of a mural coronet *or*, a boar's head *argent*, tusked of the first, crined *gules*.

1. **Richard Symonds**, b., at, came out of Shropshire, County Essex, England; d. July 8, 1627, at, buried in Great Yeldham Church, County Essex, England; m. Jan. 9, 1581, at Great Yeldham, County Essex, England, to **Elizabeth Plume** (dau. of Robert and Elizabeth (Purchas) Plume, of Great Yeldham, County Essex, England), b., at; d., at, buried in Great Yeldham Church, Jan. 24, 1611.

Res. Came out of Shropshire, County Essex, England; settled in Great Yeldham, County Essex, England. He was a Cursitor in Chancery. By his marriage to Elizabeth Plume he received with her the estate known as "The Pool."

Children: John, Thomas, Margaret, Edward, Samuel, Richard-Fitz.

2. **Samuel Symonds**, b., bap. June 9, 1595, at Great Yeldham, County Essex, England; d. Oct. 11, 12, or 13, 1678, at Boston, Mass.; m. (1) April 2, 1617, at Great Yeldham, England, to **Dorothy Harlackenden** (dau. of Thomas Harlackenden, of Earl's Colne, Essex, England), b., bap. Dec. 12, 1596, at Earl's Colne, England; d., at, buried at Toppesfield, England, Aug. 3, 1636; m. (2), about the latter part of 1637, at Wickford, Essex County, England, to **Martha (Read) Epes** (dau. of Edmund Read, of Wickford, England, and widow of Daniel Epes), b., about 1601, at Wickford, England; d., 1662, at Ipswich, Mass.; m. (3) April (or May) ..., 1663, at, to **Rebecca (Swayne) Worcester** (dau. of Bennett Swayne, of Salisbury, England, and widow first of Henry Byley, second of John Hall, and third of Rev. William Worcester), b., at; d. July 21, 1695, in her 79th year, at Ipswich, Mass.

Res. Great Yeldham, and Toppesfield, England, and Ipswich, Mass. Came over to this country about 1637-8. He was a Cursitor in Chancery in England. In this country he was a Deputy and Assistant to the General Court, and Deputy-Governor of Massachusetts and held various other offices.

Children: 1st m., Richard, Dorothy, Jane, Anne, Samuel, Elizabeth, Samuel, Harlackenden, John, Robert, William, Roger; 2nd m., Martha, Ruth, Samuel, Priscilla; 3rd m., none that are known of.

- 3. **Ruth Symonds**, b., about 1640, at Ipswich, Mass.; d. Feb. 23, 1702, at Gloucester, Mass.; m., 1659, at Ipswich, Mass., to **Rev. John Emerson** (son of Thomas Emerson, of Ipswich, Mass., as early as 1639), b., about 1625, at, England (prob.); d. Dec. 2, 1700, at Gloucester, Mass., "at the age of 75."

Res. Gloucester, Mass. Harvard College, 1656. Ordained Pastor of Gloucester, Mass., Oct. 6, 1663. In his will leaves farms in Ipswich, to wife Ruth and names his daughter Martha Cogswell.

Children: Ruth, Martha, Mary, Elizabeth, John, Dorothy, Samuel.

- 4. **Martha Emerson**, b. Nov. 28, 1662, at Gloucester, Mass.; d., at Ipswich, Mass.; m. Oct. 9, 1685, at Ipswich, Mass., to **William Cogswell** (son of William and Susanna (Hawkes) Cogswell, of Ipswich, Mass.), b. Dec. 4, 1659, at Chebacco, Ipswich, Mass.; d. April 14, 1708, at Ipswich, Mass.

Res. Chebacco, Ipswich, Mass. Left an estate of £741, 2s., to be divided amongst his children.

Children: Edward, Martha, William, Dorothy Emerson, Lucy, Emerson, Eunice.

- 5. **Edward Cogswell**, b. Aug. 13, 1686, at Gloucester, Mass.; d. April 17, 1773, at New Milford, Conn.; m. (Int. pub. Ipswich, Mass., Aug. 21, 1708), at, to **Hannah Brown**, b., 1691, at; d. June 6, 1771, in her 81st year, at Preston, Conn.

Res. Chebacco, Ipswich, Mass., and in 1735 removed to Preston, Conn., and in 1747 removed to New Milford, Conn.

Children: Samuel, Edward, Nathaniel, Judith, Hannah, John, Martha, Lucy, Martha, Elizabeth, Emerson, William.

- 6. **Nathaniel Cogswell**, b. Feb. 13, 1714, at Ipswich, Mass.; d. Nov. 4, 1810, in his 97th year, at Preston, Conn.; m. (1) Dec. 3 or 8, 1737, at Preston, Conn., to **Huldah Kinney** (dau. of Deacon Thomas Kinney), b. Feb. 1, 1710, at Preston, Conn.; d. Oct. 30, 1754, at Preston, Conn.; m. (2) May 25, 1757, at, to **Bridget (Cleveland) Wedge** (dau. of Capt. Joseph and Mary (Woodward) Cleveland, and widow of William Wedge of Brooklyn, Conn.), b. Aug. 12, 1728, at Canterbury, Conn.; d. May 20, 1781, at Preston, Conn. (prob.); m. (3) May 30, 1782, at, to **Mrs. Eunice Williams**, b., 1726, at; d. Sept. 6, 1811, at Preston, Conn. (prob.).

Res. Preston, Conn., that part which is known as Griswold. He was established a Lieutenant of the Train-band of Preston, Conn., 2nd Company.

Children: 1st m., Eunice, Huldah, Nathaniel, Lols, Judith, John, Martha, Zeruliah, Nathan, Elizabeth; 2nd m., Nathan, Joseph, William, Bridget, Hannah; 3rd m., none.

Martha m.
Hares
Averill

SYMONDS—Continued.

Martha Cogswell, b. Feb. 13, 1749, at Preston, Conn.; d. Sept. 24, 1804, at Lebanon, Conn.; m. Feb. 6, 1771, at Preston, Conn., to **Capt. Stephen Payne**, b. Jan. 31, 1745-6, at Pomfret, Conn.; d. Aug. 28, 1815, at Lebanon, Conn.; he m. (2), at, to **Jerusha Kingsbury**, b., at, d., at

Res. Preston, Conn., and removed to Lebanon, Conn. The title of Capt. appears on tombstone inscription, but service is not rendered clear.

Children: 1st m., Elisha, Sally, Huldah, Martha, Bridget, Eunice, Oliver, Betsey, Patty, Stephen, Lester, Chester; 2nd m., none.

8. **Huldah Payne**, b., 1779, at Lebanon, Conn.; d. Jan. 30, 1830, at Gibson, Susquehanna Co., Pa.; m. Jan. 1, 1799, at Lebanon, Conn., to **James Chandler**, b. June 17, 1769, at New Ipswich, N. H.; d. March 30, 1839, at Gibson, Susquehanna Co., Pa.

Res. New Ipswich, N. H., and Lebanon, Conn., and Gibson, Susquehanna Co., Pa., of which town he was one of the earliest settlers.

Children: Charles, Harriet, Mary M., Stephen Payne, Huldah, James, Martha, John T., Sarah Adelia.

9. **Sarah Adelia Chandler**, b. July 30, 1815, at South Gibson, Susquehanna Co., Pa.; d. Feb. 3, 1892, at Berwick, Columbia Co., Pa.; m. Oct. 14, 1833, at South Gibson, Susquehanna Co., Pa., to **Clark Dickerman, M. D.** (as his second wife), b. June 12, 1803, at Guilford, Otsego Co., N. Y.; d. Aug. 5, 1853, at Harford, Susquehanna Co., Pa. Clark Dickerman's first wife was Eliza Knapp.

Res. She removed to Berwick, Pa., and resided near her daughters.

Children: James Bedell, Eugene Durand, Eliza Knapp, Charles Weber, Payne Kingsbury, Mary Louise.

10. **Mary Louise Dickerman**, b. Nov. 24, 1847, at Harford, Pa.; d., at, m. March 10, 1865, at Harford, Pa., to **Clemuel Ricketts Woodin**, b. Dec. 26, 1844, at Cambria, Columbia Co. Pa.; d., at

Res. New York City, 40 East 64th St., and Berwick, Pa.

Child: William Hartman.

Features of Land Granting and Distribution

An interesting aspect of land granting and distribution related to the order issued by the General Court giving power to John Winthrop, Jr., John Humphrey, and John Endecott to grant land "in equity they shall thinke meete."²² What criteria were the three proprietors supposed to use in determining the size of the grant? The social status of the prospective grantee was a deciding factor; thus the original landholdings portray to some extent the structure of society.

The individuals who arrived in Ipswich carrying their reputations with them acquired above average-size grants. These larger grants carried the designation "farm" and were usually located in one large block of land. The following list of men received grants from the town which were called or could be described as "farms."

✓ Samuel Appleton
✓ Simon Bradstreet
✓ John Cogswell
Daniel Denison
✓ Thomas Dudley
✓ George Giddings
Richard Haffield
John Hassalle
John Norton

William Paine
✓ John Shatswell
✓ Samuel Symonds
✓ John Tuttle
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
✓ William White
John Whittingham
Thomas Whittingham

The town expected these men to be leaders in the community. They were not typical settlers. Most of them rated the title of "Mister." A majority of them held the more important elected offices of the town. Indeed two of them served as Governor of the colony,²³ one was the head of the colony's military affairs,²⁴ and another, John Whittingham, was related to John Calvin.²⁵ All in all, the town's expectations in regard to these 18 farm-grantees was met by their subsequent achievements. Twelve of them (Appleton, Bradstreet, Cogswell, Paine, Symonds, Denison, Dudley, Giddings, Norton, John Whipple, and the two Whittinghams)

22. *Mass. Records*, I, 136.

23. Simon Bradstreet and Thomas Dudley.

24. Daniel Denison.

25. James Savage, *A Genealogical Dictionary* (Boston, 1860), IV, 536. His grandfather was William Whittingham who married John Calvin's daughter and became a leading Calvinist. He was exiled under Queen Mary.

became leading men of the first-generation society and the remaining six (Shatswell, Haffield, Hassalle, Tuttle, Matthew Whip-)
ple, and White) gained upper-level social status.

An excellent example of the type of individual given special consideration concerning land grants because of his wealth and stature acquired in England was Samuel Symonds. Symonds was descended from an ancient family of Yieldham, Essex, England.²⁶ He was granted by the town of Ipswich in 1637 the following land:²⁷

500 acre farm
6 acre planting lot
40 acres marsh and upland
320 acres called Argilla Farm
6 acre lot
1½ acres
3 acres upon Meeting House Green

Samuel Symonds was one of the leading figures in the community. He held the highest public offices in both the town and the colony. } ✓

The holdings granted to John Perkins, Jr., were typical for the average settler arriving in Ipswich who was neither extremely wealthy nor poor. Perkins eventually became a leader in the town, but this had little bearing on the land originally granted to him. He received 6 acres of planting ground, 6 acres of marsh, and a 1-acre house lot in town.²⁸ This was the average amount and type of land granted to most of the new settlers. Such a grant allowed a man to grow his grain crops, have a small garden and orchard by his house, and have access to a supply of the marsh hay for his livestock. Most settlers did, however, expand their holdings beyond this original average of 13 acres if they had any initiative. Thomas Howlett received an original grant of a 6-acre planting lot, 2 acres of meadow, and 2½ acres of marsh.²⁹ Within the next two years Howlett received another 70-odd acres in land grants. Perhaps he showed his potential as a leader which raised his stature in the eyes of the land grantors. The fact that he served

26. *Ibid.*, p. 246.

27. Records of the Court Holden at Ipswich 1639 (manuscript located in office of Registry of Deeds, Essex County Court House, Salem, Mass.), I, 45-49.

28. Ipswich Grants, entry 63.

29. Town Records, p. 246.

Symonds

The New England town system, under which land was granted to the town as a corporation, and by it conveyed to members for personal improvement, took that commodity largely out of the domain of speculation and prevented, at least during the seventeenth century, the building up of large land fortunes such as characterized New York.⁶⁶

Ipswich does lack, at least until 1660, the building up of large land fortunes. But this does not mean that large holdings were non-existent. It has already been pointed out that a few prominent citizens amassed sizeable real estate holdings. However, they did not use these lands for speculative purposes or, if they did, they did so in a manner which is not revealed in the records.

Ipswich Landholders

The inhabitants of Ipswich can be divided into definite groups on the basis of landholding. These divisions were: the larger landholders, defined as those men who held 100 or more acres; the small landholders, defined as those holding less than 100 acres; the commoners which included most men in both of the above groups and others not within those two groups; the house lot owners, defined as those who owned only a house lot but no additional acreage; and finally, the non-landowners which consisted mainly of servants and were easily the smallest group.

The large landholders were the most important group in the town. They were the leading politicians and business men of the community. There was definitely some connection between landholding and political, economic, and social status in the town. These men clearly dominated town affairs. There were 71 men who qualified, on the basis of owning 100 or more acres, as large landholders. Out of these 71, 15 owned 400 or more acres. They were:⁶⁷

Richard Saltonstall	2100 acres
✓ Samuel Symonds	1700 acres
William Hubbard	1600 acres
Daniel Denison	1200 acres

66. Thomas Jefferson Wertenbaker, *The First Americans 1607-1690* (New York, 1929), p. 59.

67. This list and the ones to follow were compiled from a study of deeds and land grant records. Acreage is based upon the maximum amount of land held at any one time (n. 21).

Jonathan Wade	1000 acres — real estate valued £6000
Jeremy Belcher	900 acres
William Symonds	700 acres
Daniel Epps	700 acres
John Winthrop, Jr.	600 acres
William Paine	600 acres
Samuel Appleton	500 acres
John Whipple	460 acres
William Goodhue	425 acres
Thomas Kimball	422 acres
✓ John Perkins, Jr.	400 acres

All but two of these men (Thomas Kimball and William Symonds) held a major political position in the town at one time or another before 1660. Six of them ranked among the top 11 of freeholders in the town.⁶⁸

The remaining large landholders and the acreage they owned were:

✱ John Shatswell	330	William White	240
Nicholas Easton	320	Humphrey Bradstreet	230
— John Cogswell	320	James Howe	225
John Spencer	320	Matthew Whipple	225
John Whittingham	300	William Knight	200
Thomas Whittingham	300	William Fellows	200
John Symonds	300	Thomas Emerson	200
— John Tuttle	300	Robert Coles	200
William Whitred	260	Simon Bradstreet	200
Thomas Dudley	250	John Norton	180
Thomas Knowlton	170	John Emerson	120
Robert Paine	170	Edward Bragg	120
— John Perkins, Sr.	160	Henry Archer	120
George Giddings	160	William Bartholomew	120
Robert Lord	150	William Warner	120
Philip Fowler	150	Robert Muzzey	116
Richard Brabrooke	150	Thomas Scott	110
Thomas Bishop	150	Richard Kimball	110
Corp. John Andrews	150	Samuel Dudley	110
Edward Harinden	150	Thomas Howlett	100
Daniel Ringe	150	Thomas Howlett, Jr.	100
Thomas Firmin	140	Reginald Foster	100
— Thomas Boorman, Sr.	140	John Andrews, Sr.	100
John Cross	130	John Dillingham	100
— Robert Andrews	130	Robert Cross	100

68. The six men were: Symonds, Hubbard, Denison, Wade, Whipple, and Perkins.

TABLE IV
LIST OF COMMONERS, 1641, IPSWICH
MASSACHUSETTS*

William Adams	William Knight
John Annable	John Knowlton
Samuel Appleton	Thomas Knowlton
✓ William Averill	William Knowlton
Henry Bachellor	William Lampson
Robert Beacham	Roger Lancton
Thomas Beery	John Lee
Jeremy Belcher	Thomas Lee
Richard Bisgood	Edward Lumas
Thomas Bishop	Richard Lumkin
✓ Thomas Boarman, Sr.	Thomas Manning
Thomas Bracey	Joseph Medcalfe
Humphrey Bradstreet	Joseph Morse
Simon Bradstreet	Robert Muzzey
Thomas Brewer	Thomas Newman
John Brown	John Norton
Mathias Button	Christopher Osgood
Lionel Chute	William Paine
John Clark, Jr.	Moses Pengry
John Clark, Sr.	✓ John Perkins
Thomas Clark	John Perkins, Jr.
Isaac Comings	John Perkins, Sr.
John Cowley	Allen Perley
Robert Cross	John Pettis
Francis Dane	Henry Pindarr
John Dane, Jr.	Samuel Podd
John Dane, Sr.	John Proctor
John Davis	Mark Quilter
Robert Day	Thomas Rawlinsome, Sr.
Thomas Dorman	Joseph Redding
William Duglas	Nathaniel Rogers
✓ Thomas Emerson	Thomas Safford
William Fellows	Richard Saltonstall
Giles Firmin	Richard Schofield
Thomas Firmin	Thomas Scott
Reginald Foster	John Shatswell
Thomas French	Theophilus Shatswell
John Gage	Richard Smith
Edmund Gardner	Thomas Smith
George Giddings	Simon Stace
William Goodhue	Mark Symonds
Henry Greene	✓ Samuel Symonds
Thomas Hart	✓ John Tuttle
Richard Hatley	Jonathan Wade
Andrew Hodges	Daniel Warner

James Howe
Thomas Howlett
William Hubbard
✓ John Jackson
Richard Jacob
Francis Jordan
Richard Kimball
Henry Kingsbury
✓ Robert Kinsman
Alexander Knight

Richard Wattles
Thomas Wells
John Whipple
✓ Matthew Whipple
William White
Robert Whitman
John Whittingham
Theophilus Wilson
Robert Woodmansee
John Wyatt
Samuel Younglove

*Ipswich Grants, p. 84.

Within five years need arose for more commonage. The commoners voted in 1665 to divide 800 acres which included Plum Island, Hogg Island, and Castle Neck. It was to be divided among those with common rights according to the proportion of 4, 6, and 8 based on the amount of taxes paid as follows:⁷⁶

- 4 - those not exceeding 6s. 8d. in a county rate
- 6 - those not exceeding 16s.
- 8 - those exceeding 16s. together with magistrates, and elders

It was decided that a single share would be 3 acres—that is to say that those under the “4” proportion would receive 3 acres; under the “6” proportion $4\frac{1}{2}$ acres; under the “8” proportion 6 acres.⁷⁷ This manner of dividing resulted in the creation of 28 double shares, 70 divisions of $1\frac{1}{2}$ shares, and 105 single-share lots. That meant a total of 203 commoners in the town in 1665, although some of the commoners were not persons. For example, the meetinghouse was given a double share.

The most significant thing about the dividing of the commons in 1665 was the manner in which it was done. By basing it on taxation these records fill the gap caused by the lack of early tax lists. The list of commoners made in 1665 also served as a ranking of material wealth and to some extent social standing. It might be said that the double shareholders were the wealthy and leading citizens. The next group, those receiving $1\frac{1}{2}$ shares, could be considered to be those of upper or middle status. Listed in the first group were the Symonds, the Hubbards, the Appletons, the Paines, the Cogswells, and most of the other names which constantly occur in any discussion of public life in the town.

⁷⁶ Town Records, p. 16.
⁷⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 17.

5 years

This order of the General Court came up for consideration at a town meeting held in Ipswich, Feb. 25, 1645/6, and the following statement appears on their records, viz: "That since this order of (the General Court) they have not demanded any charges or contributions of their Inhabitants at the New Meddows, to the Towne of Ipswich, neither are they resolved to require (any) charges or contributions of the said Inhabitants hereafter either the present Inhabitants of the (Towne) of Ipswich or there successors shall see cause (to or) shall require charges or contributions of their Inhabitants at the New Meddows to the Towne of Ipswich, then the said Inhabitants of Ipswich or their successors shall and will forme themselves to the obedience of ye Court's order in ye case."

If the inhabitants at the New Meadows acting under this Order, did obtain some minister "to dispence ye word," no record of it has been preserved. The Rev. William Perkins seems to have been the next to regularly preach there. He was an old acquaintance of Zaccheus Gould and had been minister in Gloucester until his preaching became unacceptable to some of his congregation. He was living in Topsfield as early as Oct. 4, 1655, when he sold his house and land in Gloucester.

HOW THE TOWN GOT ITS NAME

Meanwhile the proprietors of the lands at the New Meadows were looking for yeomen to buy their farms and develop the settlement beside the river. A new name and an order of the Court creating a town was considered eminently desirable and in the summer of 1648, the following petition was presented to the Great and General Court, viz:

"Wee Humbly Intreate this honored Court that you wold bee pleased to bestowe a name Vpon oure Village at the new medowes at Ipswich Which wee suppose may be an Incoagment to others to Come to liue amongst vs: and alsoe a meanes to further a ministry amongst vs wee thinke hempstead wile bee a fit name if the Court plesse to gratifie vs herewith

Will Payne
Brian Pendleton
Zaccheus Gould

"The Dept. have granted this Pet: wth refference to the consent of or honourd magistrates. — William Torrey by order &c."

"The magistrates (upon consideration with these that are principale interested) doe thinke it fitt it should be called Toppesfield as they — to the counsel of or brethern the Deputies."

Jo: Winthrop: Govr.

"The Dept: consent wth or honord magistrates in answer to this Pet: — Wm. Torrey by order &c." *Mass. Archives*, Vol. 112, p. 23.

The entries in the Colony records follow: "The village at the newe medowes at Ipswich is named Toppesfield." *Mass. Colony Records*, Oct. 18, 1648.

"Vppon the request of those whom it most concerns, the village at the New Meddowes at Ipswich, shalbe henceforth called Toppesfield. By both." *Mass. Colony Records*, Oct. 27, 1648.

Zaccheus Gould, one of the petitioners, had lived at Hemel Hempstead, Hertfordshire, England, not far from St. Albans, and naturally desired to transplant to New England soil the familiar name of his former parish.

Samuel Symonds, one of the Assistants, sitting among the Magistrates when the petition came up for consideration, owned five hundred acres of land at the New Meadows. He had come from Toppesfield, a small parish in the county of Essex, about thirty miles north of London. Undoubtedly it was his influence that led to the adoption of the name Toppesfield to be given to the New Meadows settlement. Moreover, we must not lose sight of the fact that John Winthrop jr., in 1643, when selling his three-hundred acre grant to Edward Parke in London, had described the lands as being in the "Hamlett Village or place called Toppesfield." This was full five years before the Magistrates took official action and it therefore seems likely that the name Toppesfield had been in use more or less for some time. Samuel Symonds, gent., had lived at an ancient messuage in Toppesfield, called "Olivers," about three-quarters of a mile from St. Margaret's, the parish church, where twelve of his children had been baptized, and when the town of Ipswich granted him five hundred acres having its western bounds on Pye brook, at the New meadows, he promptly named the grant "Olivers" after his old home in England, and so the name still appears in the Ipswich records.

Symonds/
Gould

Allied Families

SYMONDS-READE

PLUME

I. ROBERT PLUME (Plume-Plumb) Spam's Hall, Great Yeldham and Botelers, passed from the Plume Family to Symonds (see below).

References

Visitation of Essex, Harleian M. A. 13, p. 470

Morant, Pp. 300-2

II. ROBERT PLUMME, gent., d. 1613, Co. Essex, Eng.; m. Elizabeth Pincas. She died June 25, 1596, Co. Essex. The first of the Plume family was Robert of Great Yeldham who was tenant of the manor (#1 above) of Great Yeldham under John de Vere, the great Earl of Oxford, in the reign of King Henry VIII. Robert, his son and heir, bought this manor of Edward, Earl of Oxford, for his two youngest sons, Thomas and Edmund. By marriage with the daughter of Robert, the manor passed to Richard Symonds.

Reference: *Morant's History County Essex*, p. 300

III. ELIZABETH PLUMME, second dau., born Dec. 9, 1560, d. Jan. 23, 1610/11, *Yeldham Church, parish register*; m. Richard Symonds Jan. 9, 1581, Yeldham, Co. Essex, Eng. He was born Dec. 5, 1560, Shropshire, Eng., and d. July 8, 1627, Great Yeldham Church, England.

References:

Morant's Hist. Co. Essex, Eng., pp. 300-2

Visitation of County Essex, Har. M.S. 13, p. 495

Diary of Richard Symonds. (By his marriage had in frank the Poole where he settled.)

IV. DEPUTY-GOVERNOR SAMUEL SYMONDS, m. second, Martha Reade Epps, wid. of Daniel Epps.

References:

Suffolk Manorial Families (Mass.) p. 64

Sewall's Diary, p. 72

Hammett Papers, p. 359

PLUMME ARMS: Arg. a bend vaire or and gules between 2 bendlets vert; Crest: a talbot sejant gules collared and lined or. (*Visit. Essex*, 1634, p. 471)



SYMONDS

HERALDIC NOTE ON THE COAT-ARMOUR OF SYMONDS

by
John Addington Symonds



REPPES



CONGREVE



MAINWARING



SYMONDS

I

A group of families, bearing the names Fitz Simon, Symons, and Symonds, are distinguished by similar coat-armour, though scattered over different parts of England. They claim common descent from Adam Fitz Simon, who received grants of land from William the Conqueror at Threxton in Norfolk, and Almshoe in Hertfordshire. The grandson of this first ancestor, Richard Fitz Simon (d. 1168) married Edith, the daughter and heir of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe in Norfolk. He had two sons, Simon Fitz Richard and Nicholas Fitz Richard, the elder of whom continued the family at Threxton, Penesthorpe, Almshoe, and other parts of Herts and Essex. The younger founded a cadet branch at Suffield in Norfolk. During the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, the elder branch of these Fitz Simons flourished, and became powerful in Hertfordshire and Essex. William Fitz Simon, the grandson of the above-named Richard Fitz Simon, received considerable grants of land from King John in that county.

The arms of the Hertfordshire and Essex Fitz Simons seem to have been originally "az, an eagle displayed or, a canton ermine." Sir Simon Fitz Adam, however, who died in 1266, married Finetta the only daughter and heir of Sir John d'Aviliers, in the year 1239. His descendants adopted the arms of d'Aviliers, "arg, three inescutcheons gules," in lieu of their paternal coat; and these were the arms of Sir Richard Fitz Simon, one of the Knights Founders of the Garter, who died at Calais in 1349.

relation to the estate of Mr. Vincent, 1665, is a very interesting page and one-half.)

New Eng. Hist. & Gen. Reg. V. 15, p. 96

Mr. Samuel Symonds, coming to town to make his residence, bought the 3-acre lot in Ipswich (including Cogswell's homestead), Jan. 6, 1637, with the house. Also, in 1637 he received grant of 500 acres, a planting lot of 6 acres, and 40 acres on hithermost side of Sagamore Hill. He also bought "Argilla Farm" of 320 acres and land on the south side. (Ipswich Deeds 1:13.) Here this distinguished Judge and Deputy Governor made his home for the rest of his long and useful life. After his death the estate was divided . . . sold by William Symonds, his son. The residence of Samuel Symonds was on the part reserved near the Great Bridge to the town.

Ips. Mass. Bay Col. page 275

The name of Samuel Symonds, Deputy Governor of Massachusetts, who migrated to America in 1637, is of frequent occurrence in our early records. He had a prominent part in the affairs of Massachusetts and was "an honoured magistrate who was barrister of law in England, and descended from an ancient and honorable family in Yeldham, County Essex, England, where he had a good estate."

He purchased on September 3, 1637, of Mr. Henry Sewall, a dwelling house in Ipswich, with about three acres of land. He kept this house in town for occasional residence, but usually resided on his large and valuable farm which he called "Argilla" and which has given its name to one of our school districts. Samuel Symonds was representative from 1638 to 1643 when he was elected to be one of the "magistrates" or "assistants" as commonly called and which office he sustained for 30 years. He was one of the founders of the Ipswich Grammar School in 1650. In addition to his various and distinguished offices, he did not disdain to be clerk of the Feoffees of the Grammar School, the earliest records of which are in his handwriting.

During the six years after the opening of the school, there were six young men of Ipswich who pursued their education at Harvard College, among them John Emerson, son of Thomas Emerson, who graduated from Harvard, A.B. 1656, and became the minister at Gloucester. He was ordained Oct. 6, 1663, and died Dec. 2, 1700, having preached more than 40 years. He married Ruth Symonds, daughter of Samuel Symonds. He was one of 17, out of 43 pastors graduated from New England colleges to be ordained. His son, John, brother of Martha Emerson Cogswell, graduated from Harvard in

1669, was preacher at Manchester, was ordained at Newcastle, and is credited with holding the longest pastorate of any minister in the Congregational Church, a period of 46 years. Cogswell Ancestors who were members of John Emerson's flock were Zaccheus Gould, Thomas Gould, and John Perkins.

Reference: *Hist. of Topsfield, Gen. Reg. First Families of New Eng.*
Lib. #G.929.1744 F 227 ge

"Samuel Symonds, Magistrate, living in Ipswich, was granted 500 acres in 1639. Whereas, at the Cort Houlden at Boston the 4th, 7th mo, 1639, there was Certaine Lands lying near Ipswich Ryver granted for a village. . . inhabitants who have farmes neere to said land . . . forasmuch as they for neere this two years maintained a church to dispense the word of God, it is therefore ordered and granted that Mr. John Endicott and the said inhabitants of Ipswich, viz, Mr. Bradstreet, Mr. Symonds, Mr. Whittingham, and Mr. Payne shall have liberty to settle a village neere the said Ryver of Ipswich, etc." called Toppesfield Oct. 27, 1648, "upon request of those most concerned." Although Zaccheus Gould, one of the petitioners, had lived at Hemal, Hampstead, Hertfordshire, England, near St. Albans, and wanted to transplant the familiar name of his former parish, Samuel Symonds, one of the Assistants or Magistrates, when the petition came up for consideration, and who owned 500 acres of land there at the New Meadows, undoubtedly used his influence to have the name Toppesfield adopted. Also, the name had been in use, informally, for more than five years. Samuel Symonds, gentleman, had lived at an ancient messuage in Toppesfield, Essex, called "Olivers" about three-fourths mile from St. Margarets, the parish church where his first 12 children had been baptized, and where his first wife, Dorothy Harlakenden Symonds, lay buried, and four of their children. So when the town of Ipswich granted him 500 acres having the western bounds on Pye Brook at the New Meadows, he promptly named the grant "Olivers" after his old home in England and so the name still appears in the Ipswich records.

In 1638 Samuel Symonds bought the great farm granted to John Winthrop at Ipswich. He gave it the name "Argilla Farm" which still holds. Mr. Symonds sold to his former servant, Edward Bragg, 9 acres on November 28, 1658, and a further nine acres later. Then the administrators of the Deputy Governor's estate sold to Bragg 35 acres adjoining, Feb. 8, 1679.

References

- History of Topsfield*, Geo. Francis Dow, G974.45 T 627 do
Candlewood, An Ancient Neighborhood in Ipswich, p. 10
Publications of the Ipswich Historical Society, V. 16. Proceedings at
the Annual Meeting, Dec. 1, 1908, Salem Press, 1909
Ipswich Deeds, V. 1, p. 45, 1937/8; V. 4, p. 40, 306

Samuel Symonds was considered to be a rich man. His estate was appraised at the then large sum of £2103 6s 10d. Besides, he had tracts of land in various places. His town house was sumptuously furnished, and his country estate was amply provided for. Having lived in his town house, which he had purchased from Henry Sewell in 1637, while his "Argilla Farm" home was being built, there had been no need to hasten its completion. He wanted a good, substantial dwelling, and knew how it should be done.

The people of East Anglia were accustomed to two distinct types of houses, the one-and-a-half story Flemish cottage, and the two-story medieval house. Both were brought to New England. As noted in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register* (V. 1 pp. 64-71, shortly after he had purchased the farm from his brother-in-law, John Winthrop, in 1638, he ordered the erection of a dwelling there as follows: "I am indifferent," wrote Mr. Symonds, "whether it be 30 foot or 35 foot long, 16 or 18 foot broad. I would have wood chimneys at each end, the frames of the chimneys to be stronger than ordinary to bear good heavy load of clay for security against fire. You may let the chimney be all the breadth of the house if you think good." (*Essex Inst. Hist. Coll.* V. 33, p. 57)

Build such a house of brick and it would be as much at home in the English villages of Cottenham or Braintree, as in early Massachusetts. It would almost duplicate John Bunyan's cottage at Elstow. In Boston it was possible to import the lime used for mortar, but the cost and difficulty of transportation over the colonial roads was so great that it was seldom feasible to use brick. The Colonial carpenters also soon discovered that half-timbering was impractical for without lime the clay and bough, "wattle and daub," would not withstand the heavy rains, bitter cold, and summer heat of New England. Thus wooden clapboards and shingles became typical of New England.

However small Samuel Symonds' house may seem to us now, it was too costly for the average settler. Average dimensions were 14' x 15', or as follows: Joseph Goodhue, 8 feet square; Thomas Burnham,

20 feet square; Ephraim Fellows, 16' x 16'. Thatch was used at first, but in the dry climate it often burned itself and the house, and Thomas Dudley issued an order in 1631, that "No man shall cover his house with thatch since it has caused divers burning of old houses."

Thus, Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds further specified "shakes"—no thatch. "Let the windows be small with diamond or oblong panes set in lead. Let them not be over-large in any rooms and as few as conveniently possible. Let all have current shutting draw-windows." His reason for this was that small windows were a safety measure offering less area for attacks from without.

"Argilla Farm" was very near "Cogswell's Grant," the Perkins farm, the Emerson place, the John Brown Farm, and holdings belonging to other Cogswell ancestors. They had mostly come from well-to-do families and had brought all kinds of furnishings and implements, livestock and supplies, and servants to New England. Many of the servants were indentured and, after seven or nine years of labor to pay for their passage, they were free to go and make a life of their own. Thus, many prominent names have descended from them.

John Cogswell brought several servants, among them Deacon Cornelius Waldo, known as "John Cogswell's farmer," who afterward married John Cogswell's own daughter, Hannah. They became the great-grandparents of Ralph Waldo Emerson and Oliver Wendell Holmes, and many other outstanding Americans. Samuel Haines was another of the Cogswell servants who founded a great American family. Samuel Symonds brought several and acquired others immediately after establishing residence. Edward Bragg was one, and Phillip Welch was another.

The problem of finding good help both in the house and in the fields was a difficult one in this new and primitive land. There were many ways of solving it. Hundreds were brought over by masters of ships and then put out to service by any who would repay the passage money. The very Honorable Samuel Symonds became involved in an embarrassing entanglement due to this perfectly lawful and customary practice. Rev. Joseph B. Felt, writing in the *History of Ipswich* commented on the evil phases of it, and on Governor Symonds' involvement, as follows:

"Among the crying wrongs to our race was the stealing of young people and bringing them to America and selling them into servitude. Two such sufferers were sold in 1654 for nine years to a re-

spectable gentleman of Ipswich, for £26 in corn and cattle. They were represented to him as having been transported hither by the state. Their names were William Downing and Phillip Welch, brought to Boston in the ship "Goodfellow." They, with a number of others from Ireland, were forcibly taken from their beds at night by men dressed as English soldiers and forced to go aboard the ship. These scoundrels were called "Spirits" and a Royal Order of England was passed against them in 1682." Just why it was put off so long is unknown.

Samuel Symonds, much chagrined, made a declaration to the General Court:

"DECLARATION OF DEPUTY GOVERNOR SAMUEL SYMONDS IN THE CASE BETWEEN HIM AND HIS SERVANTS, WILLIAM DOWNING AND PHILLIP WELCH. TO THE HONORABLE COURT:

The plaintiff declareth as followeth: That in the yeare of our Lord 1654, he wanting servants and being in Boston at a regular Court, endeavoured to purchase a supply out of yt ship that, as was said, was newly come from Ireland, and accordingly he made a bargain with George Dell, master of ye ship called "Goodfellow," for a certayne sune mentioned in writing betweene the saidd master and the plaintiff, which sune was alsoe truly paid according to law and to the condic'ons therein expressed. And because there had come over many Irish before that tyme, the plaintiff p'ceived that some questions were stirring in ye court whether it were not best to make some stop, in reference to the people of that nation, which occasioned the plaintiff to make a p'viso for good assurance, as it is in ye first part of ye said writing.

"But when ye Court had resolved to make an order onely p'venting of ye like for tyme to come, and the plaintiff having new occasion for treaty with ye said master about the yonger concerning a mistake in his name, etc., in reference to him, there was a new agreement made, as appeareth in said writing.

"And ever since, the plaintiff hath had the quiet possession and service of them accordingly, until about or near the tyme of ye date of ye attachment. Then these defendants, the two servants, came in to family prayer, without any p'vocation given, and did in ye p'sence of ye family assembled utterly refuse any more service for their master, ye plaintiff. And in the discourse, after the denial was

done, they p'pounded terms or condic'ons, but these were such as cannot stande with the rela'ion of servants to impose upon their master, as the plaintiff conceiveth, which if granted, namely that they had not the power of judgement; then still their denial, being such, remayned as before. And the rejecting of their service was greatly to the distracc'on and damage of their master in causing him to p'vide, in a legal way, for the securing of them, not knowing otherwise any grounds to hold them safely untill the matter be decided according to law. And ye damage was so much ye greater considering ye tyme when this distracc'on was made. Ye plaintiff then, though soe late in ye yeare, not having planted one handfull of Indian corne, nor plowed all ye ground appointed for that end; soe that unless he would come to their Termes, and what the p'pounded doth appeare upon evidence, he had little cause to expect any greate crop at harvest, workmen then being soe hard to p'cure.

"One of these servants, namely William, was very hasserdous. It is supposed that he remembereth and will not deny how ruffy his body was, and whether the Phizetian did not say that it was Leprous; and how his mistress was much afflicted and wept for feare of infecting the family, in case he should be taken when he was alone; nor likelihood of his cure, if he had bene forced to goe back to Ireland, or sent to Virginia, etc. And the plaintiff hopeth that, though they might have had better masters yet, they were free to be taken by such as would purchase them. The master of ye ship said he brought them over by order of ye then State of England; he meant, it seemeth, such as then ruled in all three nations; who if he did aught amisse against them he had brought over, they should have had their remedy at their hands p'sently; or afterward have sought it at the hands of ye executors, not of ye purchasers as it is supposed, unless the Bargains of soe many in the country should be dissolved, which as is thought the laws will not admit, noe nor of any other country that we ever heare of.

"Concerning Phillip, he was yonge; thought to be about eleven yeares of age; and though hes tyme be longe, yet the plaintiff supposeth that many in ye country have quietly enjoyed their agreements, w'out any act of justice to take them from their masters, though sould for a longer tyme. And it is thought that many from England are bound to serve for neare as longe as these, and paying little more than for their passage over; and it may be well for ye servants alsoe, considering their advantages in this place.

"The plaintiff reserveth liberty to expresse further, or make replye as occasions may require."

Signed: Samuel Symonds

NOTE: This Phillip Welch grew to manhood and became the grandfather of Father Samuel Welch of Bow, New Hampshire, who died April 5, 1823, at the extreme age of 112 years.

Note: Governor Simon Bradstreet, in 1680, after estimating that there were then 100 or 120 Negroes in Massachusetts adds that there might also be then in the colony "as many Scots brogt hither and sould for Servants in the time of war with Scotland, and most now married and living here, and about halfe as many Irish brogt hither serverall times as servants." (*New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, V. 8) A bill of sale dated May 10, 1654, from George Dell, master of the ship Goodfellow, shows that he "sould unto Mr. Samuel Symonds two of the Irish youthes I brought over by order of the state of England; the name of them is William Dalton (Downing), the other Edward Welch, to serve him, etc. for the space of nine years in consideration of £26 in merchantable corne or live cattle, before the end of the followinge October." (Later they became known by their true names of William Downing and Phillip Welch.) Signer GEORGE DELL. (*New Eng. Hist. & Gen. Reg.* V. 8, p. 77)

Since those involved in such illicit dealing were only anxious to receive their money, they cared nothing for the boys' health or happiness. The scanty fare served them during the long months aboard ship barely kept them alive and in the case of the "hasserdous" William, had doubtless given him the scurvy which, after thoroughly terrifying poor Martha Symonds, probably cleared up on a diet of good food, and care. Another of the unfortunate "youthes" aboard the Goodfellow testified that "divers others were stollen in Ireland by some ye English soldiers in ye dead of night out of theyr beds and brought to Mr. Dill's ship, where ye boat lay readye to receive them and others they took with them against theyr consent and brought them aboard ye said shipp where there were divers others of theyr countrymen weeping and crying because they were stollen from theyr friends and families; they all declairing the same; and there they were kept until upon a Lord's day morning ye master did sett saile and left some of his water and vessells behinde for haste, as I understand."

The two young servants wished to have their services terminated

and testified that they were stolen out of Ireland against their wishes and that the agreement between Master Dell and Mr. Symonds was without their consent. They said, "yet notwithstanding, we have endeavored to do him ye best service wee could these seven compleat yeares, which is three yeares more than they used to sell you for at Barbados when they were stollen in England. And for our service we have no callings or Wages but meat and cloths. Now seven yeares service being soe much as ye practise in olde England and thought meet in that place, and wee being both about 21 yeares of age, we hope this honored Court and Jury will seriously consider our Conditions."

However, the Court adjudged the covenant legal and ordered the two to serve their two years longer. (Note: Although Samuel Symonds had clearly been deceived, I think he felt the need to justify himself and, since he was a magistrate of the General Court, it did look as if they had favored him because of that. Nevertheless, it resulted in calling attention to the terrible practice, and an Edict was finally passed 28 years later. Again we wonder why it was put off so long. HCT)

Another solution of the servant problem was in effect. This was for young Indian Children to be put to service, being of those Indians who came in and submitted with John Sachem of Pakchoog; with names of the persons with whom they were placed; and the names and ages of the children, the names of their relations, and the places they did belong to. The terms and conditions upon which they would serve "is to be ordered by the General Court who will provide that the children are to be religiously educated and taught to reade the English tounge." (1676)

TWO—A BOY, A MAID: To Samuel Symonds esq., a boy named John; his father Olwilankus, late of Quantisit, his father and mother p'sent both consenting; the boy's age about twelve yeares. To him, Samuel Symonds, a girl named Hester, her father and mother dead, late of Nashaway; her age ten yeares; her uncle John Woosumpegin of Naticke. (Rules and instructions for their length and conditions of service are set forth in detail in the *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, V. 8, p. 271.)

"In many cases this plan was very satisfactory. The children were treated well and not worked excessively. They often became educated and self-reliant by the time their period of service was at an end. However, as always, there were cases that did not result so

well for either side. The Indian boy and girl in the Symonds menage were a happy choice, however, and became skilled and dependable." (Bay Col. Rec.)

There are innumerable items in the records of the times attesting to the fact that Samuel Symonds had an active part in the affairs of the colony. In *Builders of Bay Colony*, p. 253, "Samuel Symonds, Magistrate of Ipswich, wrote Governor Winthrop that the Childs' Remonstrance was making such headway among the younger generations in Ipswich that the Governor must send him some counter-propaganda." In the *Bay Colony Records*, V. 5, p. 57, "... the Court ordered that two men be appointed by the Major General or, in his absence, by the cheife comander in the toune of Ipswich during this dangerous warr, to be a guard of the Deputy Governor's house that is so remote from neighbors, and he was soe necessitated by the country's service."

Among the many offices and duties to which Samuel Symonds was appointed was that of Commissioner to New Hampshire. (*English Colonies in America—The Puritan Colonies*, V. 1, by J. S. Doyle, M.A., p. 332, 213, Henry Holt, New York, 1889) "Samuel Symonds accepted the appointment as Commissioner. In 1639, during the heat of their ecclesiastical disturbances, the settlers of Dover, New Hampshire, made overtures to Massachusetts for incorporation. (*Winthrop*, V. 1, p. 319) Two years later these were renewed and the settlers of Piscataque or, as it is now called, Strawberry Bank, joined in them. Massachusetts had to obtain a surrender of jurisdiction from the proprietors so Samuel Symonds and Simon Bradstreet were sent to negotiate and were immediately successful. The result: the government was forced to abandon the principle of requiring religious conformity as a condition of citizenship." (*Mass. Rec.*, V. 1, Pp. 270, 332, 342) (*Winthrop*, V. 2, p. 38) (*Belknap*, p. 30)

During the Stuart dynasty, the colonies had become involved in various disputes with His Majesty and his ministers, "their Lordships." Lord Clarendon had been sent to reduce Massachusetts, the ring-leader, to subjection but his mission was not successful. For nearly 10 years thereafter there had been almost a suspension of political relations between New England and the parent country. Now the dispute was being renewed. The king and his advisors decided to send a representative to bring the colonies to their senses about the disputed impositions and taxes. The agent selected to do the royal errand was Edmund Randolph who sailed immediately for

Boston where he waited upon the governor and his council, and appointed a time for the magistrates to assemble to hear the king's message. Those present were Governor Leverett, Dept. Gov. Symonds, the secretary, and six other magistrates who listened to the reading of the letter setting forth the "wrongs and usurpations of Massachusetts." During the reading three of the magistrates, Major Denison, Mr. Bradstreet, and Mr. Dudley, followed Randolph's example and "put off their hats and sat uncovered, but the governor, deputy governor, and the rest continued to keep their hats on." Ignoring this gesture of defiance toward the king, Randolph busied himself with other papers and letters while the magistrates considered.

After two days, Randolph made another visit where he formally complained of infractions he had seen in Massachusetts. Later he wrote to the king as follows: "They freely declared to me that the laws made by your Majesty and your Parliament obligated them in nothing but what conforms with the interest of the colony, etc." After a long resumé concerning the people and the economy of New England, he continued, "Even the government are not unanimous. Among the magistrates some are good men and well-affected toward Your Majesty and would be satisfied to have your Majesty's authority better established, but the major number are of different principles and having been in office since they formed the Commonwealth, they manage all of the affairs as they please, of which number are Mr. Leverett, Governor, Mr. Symonds, Deputy Governor, Mr. Danforth, Mr. Lyng, Major Clarke, and Major Hathorne." Then Randolph named those he considered the most "highly-principled men, Major Denison, Mr. Bradstreet, and Mr. Dudley" (the three who had removed their hats), "and of military men, Major Savage, Capts. Curwin, Saltonstall, Brattle, Gillam, Mosely, etc., with many others who only wait to express their duty to His Majesty. The clergy are for the most part, very civil and incline toward your Majesty's government, being subject to the ruling elders, and the ecclesiastical government is in the hands of the lay elders, these being the laws and Constitution."

Then, later, when Bradstreet and the accompanying Massachusetts agents returned from their mission to England's Court, the public spirit had never been so tame. Bradstreet, Denison, and Dudley, who had shown their tendencies ten years earlier, were now, in truth, disposed to yield to the encroachments of the king and his ministry.

One of the most bitter complaints against the Massachusetts Col-

only was the Maine incident. When the province was known to be available for purchase, John Usher, the Boston merchant had gone to London and paid Gorges, the owner of the grant, the sum of 1,250 pounds for his patent, and the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay had become, by purchase, Lord paramount of Maine. . . . The bargain had actually been completed, to the dismay of the king, who had intended to buy it for his son, the Duke of Monmouth, and the indignation of the Lords of the Committee. This was true. Massachusetts had outwitted the King. . . . the Lords of the Committee were . . . "stimulated very much to resent etc., etc. . . ." There followed much dispute concerning the charter, etc., etc., revenue, taxes, and the establishment of a General Governor of the Colonies for the crown. Upon the agents' return, they brought with them "as a parting word from the Lords of the Committee, a rebuke in set terms decrying the presumption of Massachusetts especially in buying the province of Maine," and would be expected to surrender all deeds and writings thereof unto His Majesty's hands, and at once swear allegiance to the King.

While Governor Leverett lived, they were kept in check by his paramount influence. Except for the first illustrious chief magistrate, the Colony had never had so thoroughly competent a head. Religious, experienced in civil and military action, sagacious, cautious, and bold, he was equal to his public career. Born and educated in England, he came in early manhood with his father to the feeble colony. Given important trusts almost immediately, he became expert in local administration and imbued with its patriotism. In long service in the camp and court of Cromwell, he never forgot Massachusetts. On his return from his long service in England at the critical time when the sharpest controversies between Massachusetts and the Commissioners were just beginning, he was at once elected to the Magistracy.

The clear-sighted old Governor Leverett had made up his mind at once as to what it was best to do in respect to the demand, and having resolved, had proceeded to action without delay. He "read His Majesty's letter, with the copy of the oath of allegiance sent therein, acquainting the Court that himself, Symonds, the Deputy-Governor, and Magistrates then present in Council of Cambridge, with the Secretary of August last, took the said oath in totidem verbis." Though things looked serious, the Court proceeded to do thoroughly what they had made up their minds to do. Having taken the oaths themselves, they ordered that it should be taken by all persons 16 and over, etc., etc., and thus disaster was averted. Samuel Symonds and Governor Leverett both died in office two months before the expiration of their terms. (*History of New England, During Stuart Dynasty*, V. 3, pp. 320, 326, 328, 329.)

As printed, this is too few generations

1629
1090
537 gens
11 generations inclusive
It does not make sense that the average
Symonds would become a father in his
54th year!

SYMONDS DESCENT

RAUNGWALDER of Moax and the Orcades, 9th Century
SIMON, Lord of St. Sever, Normandy, died 1090 and was buried
in church on his fief. He had two sons:

1. Richard de Goy, Viscount of Arranches, father of Hugh Lupus, Earl of Chester
2. ADAM FITZ SIMON, holder of lands and manors at Threxton, Norfolk, and Almshoe, Hertfordshire, under Bishop Odo. He died before 1118.

RICHARD FITZ SIMON, died 1168, m. Edith, daughter of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe, Norfolk. He was a founder of the Order of the Garter, Herts and Essex. He had two sons:

1. ADAM SYMONDS of Suffield, m. Joan, dau. and heir of William de Reppes of Cley-by-the-Sea
2. Richard, m. Margaret, dau. of William Boteler of Warrington & Suffield, Oremby, Runham Hall, Cley-by-the-Sea

WILLIAM FITZ SIMON, son of Adam, and grand-son of Richard Fitz Simon, m. in Leighton and received large grants from King John.

JOHN SYMONDS of Croft, Lancashire, m. dau. of Sir William 'Kording, Kt. (also spelled Cording)

→ ROBERT SYMONDS, went into Staffordshire, m. dau. and heir of Congreve of Stratton.

JOHN SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Gravenor of Bella-port, Co. Salop, England

THOMAS SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Thomas Worthington, Gentleman

JOHN SYMONDS of Newport, Co. Salop, m. Ann, dau. Thomas Bendbow

RICHARD SYMONDS of the Poole, "An antient seate in this parish, come out of Shropshire; one of ye Cursitors* of ye Chancery buried in Yeldham Church, July 8, 1627; m. Elizabeth, second dau. of Robert Plume of Yeldham Hall, Gent.; buried in Yeldham Church, January 27, 1611; they had these children:

1. John
2. Thomas] Both of these were listed as second sons — were probably
3. Edward] twins, and thus SAMUEL was listed as third son.
4. SAMUEL, 3rd son, one of the Cursitors of the Chancery, bought ye place in Toppesfield, Essex, called Olivers, 100 pounds per annum. Went into New England 1637. He became Deputy Governor of Massachusetts.
5. A daughter

SAMUEL SYMONDS, whose wife died in 1636, married 2nd, Martha (Reade) Epes and settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony with his family in 1637. His daughter, Ruth, married the Reverend John Emerson, Harvard A.B., 1656, whose second child, Martha, married, 1685, William Cogswell.

* CURSITOR—now Hist. 1523 (Med. Latin—a cursor or runner).

1. One of 24 clerks of the Court of Chancery, the Court of Lord Chancellor of England (the highest court of judicature next to the House of Lords—1658).
2. Cursitor baron—a Junior BARON of the EXCHEQUER who attended to revenue matters. Abolished in 1856.

Wickford, Co. Essex); m. ELIZABETH COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., d. 1637. Will of Edmund names loving wife, Elizabeth, Martha Epps, my dau., Elizabeth and Daniel and their children. Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade m. (2) after 1637, Rev. Hugh Peters. She was sister to Thomas Cooke of Great Yeldham, Essex, gent., who entered the pedigree in *Visitation County Essex*, 1623.

Children of Edmund and Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade:

1. Edmund (died young)
2. William
3. Margaret Reade, who married John Lake
- ✓ 4. MARTHA READE, who m. (1) Daniel Eppes of Kent, and (2) Samuel Symonds
5. Edmund
6. Samuel
7. Thomas, freeman 1634
8. Elizabeth Reade, who m. John Winthrop, Jr.

References

Suffolk Manorial Families, V. 1, Pp. 161-62
Gleanings in England, p. 674

V. MARTHA (READE) EPPS, m. (1) Daniel Eppes and had Mary, who m. Peter Duncan. She m. (2) Hon. Samuel Symonds and had four children: Priscilla, Ruth, Martha, and William.

READE ARMS: confirmed by the College of Arms in 1654 for Thomas Reade and his sisters, Margaret Lake, Martha Symonds, and Elizabeth Winthrop, Azure, a griffin and a canton gold; crest, a griffin's head erased azure, beak and ears gold.

COOKE



COOKE

COOKE:

Arms: Sa three bendlets arg.

Crest: a cockatrice statant arg wings or, beaked & combed gu.

Ref.: *Visit, Essex, Harl. Ms. 13*, p. 383

I. ROBERT COOKE, of Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., m. Joan Sydney.

II. THOMAS COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., made will Aug. 30, 1621, d. between Aug. 30 and Nov., 1621, Pebmarsh, Co. Essex; m. Susan Brand of Boxford, b. Boxford, Co. Suffolk, Eng.

References:

Visit. Essex, Har. M.S. V. 13, p. 381; *Har M.S. V. 14*, 32.

Morant's Hist. Essex, p. 263

Waters' Gleanings, p. 673

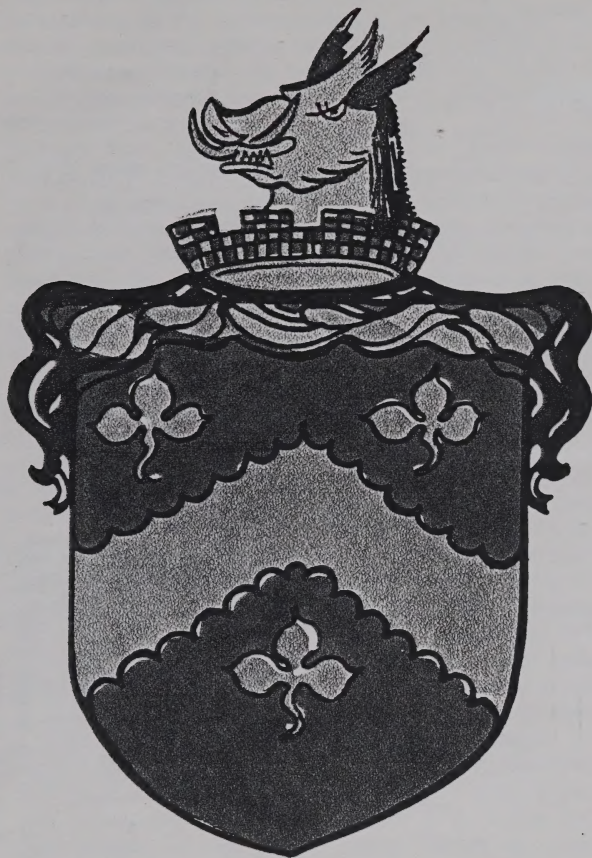
III. ELIZABETH COOKE, m. (1) Edmund Reade and (2) Rev. Hugh Peters.

COOKE ARMS: sable, three bendlets arg. Crest: a cocatrice statant argent, wings or, beaked and combed gules. (*Visit. Essex*, 1634, p. 382)

IV. MARTHA READE, who m. (1) Daniel Eppes of Kent and (2) Samuel Symonds. Martha Reade Eppes Symonds was the daughter of Edmund Reade of Wickford, whose great-grandfather was of the same place and died there in 1534. Her sister Elizabeth married John Winthrop, Jr. Her sister Margaret married John Lake and came to New England. Her children by her first husband, Epps, came also to this country, and lastly, her brother's sister-in-law, Lydia Banks, was of Salem for a while. This information is incorporated in a beautifully printed volume, *Ancestry of Priscilla Baker*, by William S. Appleton of Cambridge, Press of John Wilson and Sons, V. 8, p. 143, 1870. Mr. Appleton gives us a collection of valuable facts. There are 18 pages of the Baker pedigree. John Baker came to America in 1637 and settled in Ipswich, Mass. His son, Thomas, married Priscilla, dau. of the Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds, and their oldest child was Priscilla Baker, who became the wife of Isaac Appleton. Eighty-three pages, 19-102, are given to an account of the Symonds family, and 28 pages, 103-131, to the Reade family. These are accounts of two of the most distinguished families in Massachusetts.

References:

New England Historical and Genealogical Reg. V. 16, Pp. 49, 82, 83, 187, 215. (Note: Testimony of Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds in



SYMONDS

HERALDIC NOTE ON THE COAT-ARMOUR OF SYMONDS
by
John Addington Symonds



REPPES



CONGREVE



MAINWARING



SYMONDS

I

A group of families, bearing the names Fitz Simon, Symons, and Symonds, are distinguished by similar coat-armour, though scattered over different parts of England. They claim common descent from Adam Fitz Simon, who received grants of land from William the Conqueror at Threxton in Norfolk, and Almshoe in Hertfordshire. The grandson of this first ancestor, Richard Fitz Simon (d. 1168) married Edith, the daughter and heir of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe in Norfolk. He had two sons, Simon Fitz Richard and Nicholas Fitz Richard, the elder of whom continued the family at Threxton, Penesthorpe, Almshoe, and other parts of Herts and Essex. The younger founded a cadet branch at Suffield in Norfolk. During the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, the elder branch of these Fitz Simons flourished, and became powerful in Hertfordshire and Essex. William Fitz Simon, the grandson of the above-named Richard Fitz Simon, received considerable grants of land from King John in that county.

The arms of the Hertfordshire and Essex Fitz Simons seem to have been originally "az, an eagle displayed or, a canton ermine." Sir Simon Fitz Adam, however, who died in 1266, married Finetta the only daughter and heir of Sir John d'Aviliers, in the year 1239. His descendants adopted the arms of d'Aviliers, "arg, three inescutcheons gules," in lieu of their paternal coat; and these were the arms of Sir Richard Fitz Simon, one of the Knights Founders of the Garter, who died at Calais in 1349.

II

The cadet branch of Suffield in Norfolk counted among their members a Knight Templar and Crusader, Sir Alan Fitz Peter, son of the Peter Fitz Nicholas. This is probably the reason why we find his grand-nephew, Sir John Simons of Suffield (d. 1318), bearing the following arms: "sable, a fesse between three crescents argent." The brother of this knight, Adam Simons of Suffield, married Joan, daughter and heir of William de Rappes of Cley-by-the-Sea. From the younger son of this marriage, Richard Simons, who married Margaret, daughter of Wm. Boteler de Warrington, and settled in consequence at Croft in Lancashire, descended the families of Symonds of Croft and Newport in Shropshire. The last of these branches, that of Symonds of Newport, broke up into three minor lines: (1) that of Great Yeldham, &c., in Essex, which threw off (2) the family of New England, both now extinct; and (3) that of Symonds of Shrewsbury and Atherstone, which I (John Addington Symonds) represent. (By "extinct," he means there are no male descendants named Symonds. H.C.T.)

III

In consideration of the subject of heraldry, there were five main stocks of Fitz Simons, or Symonds, in existence; in Herts and Essex, in Cornwall, in Ireland, in Norfolk, and in Shropshire. The three branches of the family, which are destined to survival in England, namely Cornwall, Norfolk, and Shropshire, adopted the trefoil, registered in *Visitation of Norfolk*, 1563. Symonds of Newport in Shropshire bore the same coat-of-arms as Symonds of Cley-by-the-Sea, namely, "azure, 3 trefoils, or." When St. George Clarencieux, confirmed arms to Richard Symonds of Great Yeldham in Essex, in 1625, he wrote as follows: "The auntiant armes of Richard Symonds of Great Yeldham in Essex, son of John Symonds of Newport in Sallop, gent." But he blazoned them thus: "Azure, a chevron engrailed between 3 trefoils or."

We have abundant proof that the Cornish Symonds, and the Symonds of both Norfolk and Shropshire, had used, borne, exhibited, and confirmed their right to trefoils from a period far more remote than the end of the sixteenth century. St. George confirmed them as "ancient arms" to one of the scions of the Newport family in 1625, and they did so before Richard III incorporated the College of Arms by a charter in 1484.

The Symonds branch of my family in the sixteenth century were acquainted with their descent from the Norman family. Thus, Samuel Symonds' father, Richard Symonds of Great Yeldham had engraved upon his brass in that church the coat of trefoils quartering the ancient coat "azure, three eagles or." He also christened one of his sons Richard Fitz.

IV

In the 1625 *Visitation of Essex*, St. George Clarencieux, while exemplifying the ancient arms of Richard Symonds, adds "with the guift of this creast, viz., out of a mural coronet, chequy or, and azure, a boar's head argent, crined sable, tusked or."

An old tradition in our family records that the coronet was granted to one of our ancestors by a king of France. But there is no proof of this. I only know from seals and bookplates that the coronet has been used for more than two centuries.

Richard Symonds of Great Yeldham in County Essex, son of John Symonds of Newport in Co. Sallop, gent., was presented with the guifte of this creast in the first yeare of King Charles on the 10th day of Jan., 1625, to the said Richard Symonds and to his posterity forever.

Bolton's *Armoury* gives: Arms: az a chev engr. bet 3 trefoils slipped or. Arms granted Richard Symonds of Great Yeldham, Co. Essex, father of Samuel of Ipswich, 1625. Crest: out of a mural crown or a boar's head arg. tusked or crined gules. Motto: Dum Vivo Spero.

Matthew's *American Armoury and Blue Book* (1908 London, Eng., p. 73), SYMOND, SAMUEL, gent. of Ipswich, Mass., 1637, came from Yeldham Magna, Essex, Eng. Arms: azure a chevron engrailed between 3 trefoils slipped or. Crest: out of a mural coronet chequy argent and azure a boar's head of the first crined sable.

The family of Symonds, one branch of which I represent, is declared to be descended from Adam Fitz Simon, the second son of Simon, Lord of St. Sever in Normandy.* Adam received lands and manors at Threxton in Norfolk and at Almshoe in Herts, and died sometime before 1118. In the third generation after him the family

* This Simon of St. Sever is said to have been the brother of Richard de Goy, Viscount of Arranches, who was the father of Hugh Lupus, Earl of Chester. The pedigree prior to the Conquest of England is traced to Raungwalder of Moax and the Orcades in the ninth century. Simon of St. Sever died in 1090, and was buried in the church on his fief.

divided into two branches; the eldest continued to flourish for many generations in Herts and Essex. Its most distinguished member was Sir Richard Fitz Simon, one of the founders of the Order of the Garter. The second branch settled down in Norfolk, at Threxton, Suffolk, Ormesby, Runham Hall, and Cley-by-the-Sea. Already, in the beginning of the fourteenth century, they Englished their patronymic into Symonds. It is worth mentioning here that Fitz Simon, or Fitz Symond, as it is more correctly written, does not mean "Son of Simon," but "Son of Sigmund." This accounts for the short "y" in the name of Symonds, as frequently produced.

Arms: Azure a chevron engrailed between 3 trefoils slipped or.

Crest: out of a mural crown checky or and azure a boar's head argent tusks or and mane sable.

Ref.: 271 Roll; *Heraldic Journal* 1:44, 45, 52, 54, 58, 63, 68.

V

A collateral ancestor, Richard Symonds, removed to Great Yeldham, in Essex, and had, among many sons, *one Samuel, who migrated to New England in 1637, where he held the office of Deputy Governor, and founded an American family* (of which we are, HCT). The families of Congreve of Stratton, Grosvenor of Bellaport, Maynard, and Bendbow continued until the middle of the seventeenth century. An extensive pedigree is printed in Burke's *Landed Gentry* (ed. 1864); another of the American branch is Appleton's *Ancestry of Priscilla Baker*. The Harleian Society, in their edition of the Essex Visitation, have published several portions of the ancient Fitz Symon genealogy. Morant, in his *History of Essex*, relates in a confused way the descent of the Great Yeldham branch from the elder branches of Newport and Croft.

One of these Symonds entertained Oliver Cromwell in his house on the eve of the Battle of Worcester. Three cousins of the Essex family of Symonds were in the field together, one for Parliament and two for the King. Another group of cousins belonging to the same branch took refuge in New England. This was Samuel Symonds' cousin, John.

The name has been traced in Lancashire through twenty generations, six of which are recorded by Richard Symonds, antiquary and poet, who fought at Naseby.

Named after his grandfather, this Richard, 1617-1685, son of Edward Symonds — one of the twin brothers of Samuel Symonds — all through his life, at home or in his extensive travels, recorded such archeological, topographical, and genealogical memoranda as he came across. His writings are still preserved in the British Museum, the source of much later literature. He gives an ample Symonds pedigree of the previous six generations, and near his own name is an impression in red wax of a portrait, probably of himself, by Thomas Symonds, the medalist.

Note: The following excerpts are taken from Horatio R. Brown's biography of John Addington Symonds, noted English author who was born in England in 1840 and after a successful career, although in such frail health that he was compelled to live many years in Davos, Switzerland, died in Rome in 1893. As a young man, he emulated his distinguished kinsman, Richard Symonds (1617-1685), and travelled extensively, writing a long list of outstanding books, and translations from the Italian: *Shakespeare's Predecessors*, *Shelley, The Fine Arts*, *Life of Michelangelo*, *Renaissance in Italy*, *Autobiography of Benvenuto Cellini*, and many others.

NOTE ON THE ENGLISH FAMILY OF SYMONDS

by
John Addington Symonds (1840-1893)

Though so obscure at present, we happen to have a very long and full and varied pedigree, dating from Adam Fitz Simon, who was a large holder of lands in Hertfordshire, Essex, and Norfolk, under Bishop Odo. Since that early date the vicissitudes of the family embrace all the conditions to which gentle English blood has been liable, except enrolment in the peerage. We have a Knight Templar, a Crusader, a Founder of the Garter, a settler of Ireland, a settler of New England, a soldier of Agincourt, a regicide, several Cavalier officers, nonjuring clergymen, &c., &c., on the family tree.

SAMUEL SYMONDS, a gentleman of this ancient family, third son of Richard Symonds, one of the Cursitors of the Chancery, and

his wife, Elizabeth (Plume), was born at Yeldham, County Essex, England, in 1595, and baptized June 9 of that year. He married April 2, 1617, Dorothy Harlakenden, born 1596 and baptized Dec. 12, 1596, eldest daughter of Thomas Harlakenden of the old gentry of Earl's Colne, probably sister of Roger. He owned the estate "Olivers" in Toppesfield, next parish to Great Yeldham, and lived there 20 years. They had 12 children born at Toppesfield, 4 of whom died young. Wife Dorothy was buried there August 3, 1636. He went to America in 1637 and probably left some children, certainly John, at home. Children who accompanied him to America were: Richard, Dorothy, Samuel, Harlakenden, Elizabeth. At least one of the Epes children was among them as well as Samuel's younger brother. Being admitted freeman March, 1638, he was representative at the first succeeding General Court, and very often thereafter. Before coming to America he married (2) Martha (Reade) Epes, daughter of Edmund and Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade. She was the widow of Daniel Epes from Kent County, England, and Samuel Symonds had by her four children. Although Samuel Symonds was the father of 16 children, he had no male descendants named Symonds. His three sons, all named Samuel, died without heirs, so any Symonds descendants are from John. William and James died without heirs, also.

John Symonds, the founder of one line in America, and ancestor of Judge Joseph White Symonds, was closely related, believed to be first cousin to Samuel Symonds of Ipswich, Mass. The two men appeared together in Boston, March 1638, and took the freeman's oath together. The two men are of the same stock and may have come over from England at the same time (1637). About 1650 a desk and table, with a family genealogy and coat of arms, brought over to this country from England were destroyed by fire, but the descendants have kept alive the traditions of the arms and ancestry, the arms with its "three trefoils slipped Or."

The names of the two estates owned in England by these two men have been perpetuated in the names of the towns here, and we find Topsfield and Middleton associated with these estates. John Symonds' third child, was named Samuel in honor of his distinguished kinsman, Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds. (*Encyclopedia of American Biography*, V. 8, Pp. 207-212, New York, 1920.)

In 1643, Samuel Symonds was chosen as Assistant and so served till 1673 when, John Leverett being raised to governor, Samuel Symonds was made his successor as Deputy Governor in which office he

died at the age of 83 on October 12, 1678, during the session of the General Court. His widow (third wife) Rebecca, daughter of Benet Swayne of Salisbury, Wiltshire, England, born 1616, died July 21, 1695, aged 79. She was said to have been the widow of (3) Rev. William Worcester, (2) John Hall, and (1) Henry Byley. She married Samuel Symonds 1665/6. She survived him 17 years.

His daughter, Ruth, by his second wife, married in 1659 Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester, Mass., a graduate of Harvard, A.B., 1656. Their daughter, Martha, born 1662, married Oct. 9, 1685, William Cogswell, son of William and Susanna (Hawkes) Cogswell, and grandson of John Cogswell.

References:

- Genealogical Dictionary of New England*, V. 4, Pp. 244-247
New England Hist. & Gen. Reg., V. 25, p. 96; V. 19, p. 107
 Deed of confirmation of lands in Rowley, 1650 (Bellingham) ack.
Ancestry of Priscilla Baker, by Wm. S. Appleton, Cambridge Press, of John Wilson and Sons, V. 8, p. 143, 1870

GENEALOGICAL

VII. RICHARD SYMONDS

RICHARD SYMONDS (Gen. VI. John, V. John, IV. Thomas, III. John, II. Robert, I. John) was born December 9, 1560, in Shropshire, and died July 8, 1627. He married January 9, 1581, Elizabeth Plume who died January 23, 1610, at Yeldham Hall (Parish Register). (Also have date of death as Jan. 27, 1611.)

Children of Richard and Elizabeth (Plume) Symonds:

1. John
2. Thomas
3. Edward
4. SAMUEL, third son, b. 1595, bp. June 9, 1595

Richard moved to Great Yeldham, County Essex. In the church at Great Yeldham is a mural tablet to his memory with figures of himself, with these arms: Symonds of 4 quarterings: 1 and 4 — azure a chevron engrailed between three trefoils, slipped or. 2 or, 3 eagles displayed, 3 or a bend vaire or and gules. Richard received the estate known as "the Poole" by his marriage with Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Plume. Grant of arms recorded in *Visitation of Essex*.

References

Heraldic Visitation of Essex 1634, p. 495

Anc. Priscilla Baker, Pp. 22-34

Diary of the Marches of the Great Civil Wars, by Richard Symonds.
(The above Richard's grandson.)

VIII. SAMUEL SYMONDS

SAMUEL SYMONDS, Deputy-Governor, was born June 9, 1595, Great Yeldham, County Essex, England. His will is dated Feb. 16, 1673. He died October 12, 1678, Boston, Massachusetts, during session of court. He married on April 2, 1617, (1) Dorothy Harlakenden who was born 1596 and baptized December 12 of that year. She died August, 1636, and was buried August 3. She was the daughter of Thomas Harlakenden of the old gentry of Earl's Colne and is believed to be sister to Roger Harlakenden.

Samuel and Dorothy (Harlakenden) Symonds had 12 children, 4 of whom died young and were buried at Great Yeldham, Toppesfield. One, Samuel, Jr., was born and died in 1623. Another Samuel, born circa 1635, died and left a will. Of the eight children who survived, three, including John, remained in England when their father migrated to America with his second wife and their families. John died without issue.

Samuel Symonds married (2), in 1637 in England, Martha (Reade) Epes, widow of Daniel Epes, of County Kent, England, and daughter of Edmund and Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade, several of whose children by her first husband accompanied Mr. and Mrs. Symonds to America.

The children of Samuel and Martha (Reade) (Epes) Symonds are confusing because they comprised HIS children, HER children, and THEIR children. It is believed that the following tabulations are substantially correct.

Children of Samuel Symonds by his first wife:

1. Richard, b. circa 1618
2. Infant, _____
3. John, b. circa 1620, stayed in England
4. Samuel, b. 1623, d. 1623
5. Probably second Samuel, b. circa 1624, d. early
6. Elizabeth, b. ab. 1625, Toppesfield, Eng.; m. May 20, 1644, Daniel Epes, d. May 7, 1685, age 60
7. Dorothy, b. ab. 1627; m. Joseph Jacobs
8. Infant, _____

9. Harlakenden, b. England 1628

10. Samuel, Jr., b. 1629, d. 1669; unmarried, left will, dated November 22, 1653, naming father, Samuel Symonds, sisters Elizabeth, wife of Daniel Epes, Martha, wife of John Denison, Ruth, wife of John Emerson, Mary, wife of Peter Duncan, Priscilla, wife of Thomas Baker, brothers Harlakenden, James, and John in England, and William. Samuel, Jr., graduated from Harvard in 1663, intended for the ministry but refused and turned to secular employment.

11. James, b. 1633, was living, aged 37, in 1670

12. Son Chute and/or daughter who married _____ Hale. Both are named in Dept. Gov. Symond's will, but not identified further.

Children of Samuel Symond's second wife (Martha Reade) (Epes), by Daniel Epes, Sr., her first husband:

1. Mary, m. Peter Duncan
2. Martha, m. (1) John Denison (2) Richard Martyn
3. Daniel Epes, Jr.

Children of Samuel and Martha (Reade) (Epes) Symonds:

1. Priscilla, b. circa 1639, m. 1673/4, Thomas Baker. They had a daughter, Priscilla, who married Isaac Appleton, and who was the Priscilla in the *Ancestry of Priscilla Baker*, by her grandson, William Appleton.
2. RUTH, married 1659, Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester
3. Martha
4. William, b. circa 1641; m. Susanna Wade. He was admitted freeman 1670 and was the first regular ferryman between Haverill and Bradford. He lived for a time at Wells, Maine, and was Rep. of Wells, 1676. He died May 22, 1679, without male heirs.

The Hon. Samuel Symonds, in addition to other bequests in his will made in 1673, gives to his wife "twelve pound per annum, to be paid to her out of my farm, called "Argilla," during her natural life, to be paid one-half in wheat and malt at the price current among the merchants of Ipswich, the other half in pork and Indian corn. "My mind and meaning is, that the legacies here given to my children shall be paid not in money according to money, but in such pay as they usually pass from man to man, which is called the current price." According to a certificate made by appraisers Philemon Dane and Jacob Foster, "not as money but as country pay, two shillings in money is accounted as 3 shillings in pay." This is dated November 11, 1700.

Excerpts from "Cogswell-Haldeman Genealogy"



Richard Mather expounds the scriptures to John and Elizabeth Cogswell and their guests, three magistrates of the General Court at Ipswich, Simon Bradstreet, Samuel Symonds and John Leverett. These likenesses were taken from ancient wood-cuts, the paneling of the room was copied from William Cogswell's house at Chebacco, and the Cogswell chair and some of the other accessories are ancestral. Perhaps this never happened, but it might have, as these people were all contemporaries and neighbors.

Excerpt from "Caprice - Holden Caulfield"

4. Dorothy Emerson, b. Aug. 31, 1692; m. _____ Moulton
5. Lucy, b. 1699; m. _____ Moulton
6. Emerson, b. 1700; m. Dec. 30, 1736, Mary Pecker; d. Mar. 29, 1788
7. Eunice, b. 1704

Septemb the first 1673

There being eight of the committee mett upon the day above said, concerning the question whether there be a negative vote in the generall court, yea, or nay? according to patent?

This question being voted, there were five for the negative & three ~~carried the~~ did not vote either way.

This is the Decision of the
Committee of the generall Court

Samuel Symonds Dep. Gov.

READING OF ABOVE PHOTOSTAT

Septemb the first 1673

There being eight of the committee mett upon the day above said, concerning the question whether . . . there be a negative vote in any part of the generall court, yea or nay, according to patent?

This question being voted, there were five for the negative & three . . . did not vote either way.

This is the decision of the
Committee of the generall Court

Samuel Symonds, Dep. Gov.

Notes:

Two words in the second sentence, and one in the fifth line, were crossed out. I believe this is the correct "translation." (H.C.T.)

Oxford Dictionary gives this (1666) definition of "patent"—"An open letter or document from a Sovereign or person of authority."

A Sample of Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds' handwriting.
Letters of the alphabet are formed much differently in 1673.

specimens found in the vicinity of the mine.
 Carboniferous, from the (1864) collection of the
 U.S. Nat. Mus., Washington, D.C.
 The name is the same as that of the mine, but the name is not the same as that of the mine.

Committee of the General Court
 This is the decision of the

General Court of the State

... that the same is not the same.

The decision being made, there will be for the decision of the

State of the General Court, but of the, according to the

conclusion of the decision and the ... there is a decision made in the

There being eight of the committee were also the that those and

... that the same is not the same.

The decision being made, there will be for the decision of the

State of the General Court, but of the, according to the

conclusion of the decision and the ... there is a decision made in the

There being eight of the committee were also the that those and

... that the same is not the same.

The decision being made, there will be for the decision of the

State of the General Court, but of the, according to the

conclusion of the decision and the ... there is a decision made in the

There being eight of the committee were also the that those and

... that the same is not the same.

The decision being made, there will be for the decision of the

State of the General Court, but of the, according to the

conclusion of the decision and the ... there is a decision made in the

There being eight of the committee were also the that those and

... that the same is not the same.

The decision being made, there will be for the decision of the

State of the General Court, but of the, according to the

conclusion of the decision and the ... there is a decision made in the

Table of the ... and ... in 1868.

Table of the ... in 1868.

Table of the ... in 1868.

Table of the ... in 1868.

Table of the ... in 1868.

4. Dorothy Emerson, b. Aug. 31, 1692; m. Moulton
5. Lucy, 1699; m. Moulton
6. Emerson, b. 1700; m. Dec. 30, 1736, Mary Pecker; d. Mar. 29, 1788
7. Eunice, b. 1704

Septemb the first 1673

There being eight of the committee mett upon the day above said, concerning the question whether there be a negative vote in the generall court, yea, or nay? according to patent?

This question being voted, there were five for the negative & three for the affirmative did not vote either way.

This is the Decision of the } Samuel Symonds Dep. Gov.
Committee of the generall Court }

READING OF ABOVE PHOTOSTAT

Septemb the first 1673

There being eight of the committee mett upon the day above said, concerning the question whether . . . there be a negative vote in any part of the generall court, yea or nay, according to patent?

This question being voted, there were five for the negative & three . . . did not vote either way.

This is the decision of the } Samuel Symonds, Dep. Gov.
Committee of the generall Court }

Notes:

Two words in the second sentence, and one in the fifth line, were crossed out. I believe this is the correct "translation." (H.C.T.)

Oxford Dictionary gives this (1666) definition of "patent"—"An open letter or document from a Sovereign or person of authority."

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

... the ... of ...

1661-5

1678, Oct. Samuel Symonds d., and was buried the 11th. He was descended from an ancient and honorable family in Yieldsam, Essex County, where he had a good estate. He came to this colony and settled at Ipswich 1637, and was made freeman 1638. He was Town Clerk from 1639 to 1645, and sustained other municipal trusts. He was seoffee of the Grammar School, and Deputy to the General Court from 1638 to 1643, when he was chosen Assistant, and so continued to 1673. This year, he was elected Deputy-Governor, and held this office till his decease; and was long Justice of the Quarterly Court. As a part of his particular history we give the following. — * 1645, Oct. 4th. He succeeds R. Bellingham on the Essex Committee for drawing up a body of laws. — † 1646. He "addresses a letter to Governor Winthrop, in which he insists on what he considered to be the Divine purposes in the settlement of New England. The conversion of the natives to the Christian faith and practice, he mentions as one; 'which mercy,' he adds, 'if attained in any considerable measure, will make us go singing to our graves.'" In accordance with this suggestion, the General Court instructed the Elders, Nov. 4th, to choose, at the election, two ministers to teach the Indians. Mr. J. Elliot had very recently commenced his labors among the Aborigines. — ‡ 1647, Jan. 6th. Mr. Symonds writes to Governor Winthrop, that copies of the petition to the General Court by Dr. Robert Child and others were circulated at Ipswich, and that they were very popular among the young. He desired the Governor to send him a copy of the Court's answer to this petition. — § 1648, May 10th. He is on a committee "to pass the articles of our Confederation with the United Colonies," and to examine the proceedings of the Commissioners. The Legislature grant him five hundred acres of land in the Pequod country. Sept. 19th. He requests Governor Winthrop, by letter, to forward him a transcript of the doctrinal confession of the late synod. — 1651, Oct. 14th. He is granted three hundred acres of land beyond Merrimack River, "with free liberty for timber," if he set up a saw-mill there within seven years. — 1652, Oct. 23d. He is on a committee to visit Piscataqua and settle government there. — 1653, May 18th. He, with others and commissioners of the United Colonies, is to draw up the case between the Dutch and Indians. June 2d. He is of a committee who report, that these commissioners have no power to declare war for either of the colonies without its consent. Such a report

was considered by some as equivalent to nullifying the colonial league. It opened a long dispute between Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Haven, in which much wire-drawn argument was used and much excitement produced. The first was loth to have war with the Dutch, on account of their trade, while the two others were ready for immediate hostilities with them. — 1654, June 9th. Mr. Symonds was appointed, with others, to write an address to Cromwell. — 1658, Oct. 20th. He is one of the commissioners, who are to visit the country eastward, and receive the submission of the people at Black Point, and Blue Point, Spurwick, Caso Bay, and the Islands thereto belonging. This submission to the authority of Massachusetts took place July 13th. — 1662, May 7th. The General Court grant him five hundred acres of land north of the Merrimack. — 1665, May 3d. He is on a committee to answer Secretary Morrice's letter, and to consider what further is needful to be done about what has passed between the King's Commissioners and the General Court. — 1667, Oct. 9th. He is on a committee to revise and bring in certain laws which had been offensive to the King. Among them was one, which abolished the observance of Christmas, as a relic of Episcopacy. — 1672, May 15th. Mr. Symonds is designated to hold a court in Yorkshire. He frequently performed such duty as this out of the jurisdiction of Ipswich Court. — * 1675, June 8th. He is on a committee of the General Court to settle a difficulty between the Rev. Messrs. Higginson and Nicholet of Salem, who spent three days there on this business. Oct. 23d. Two men are appointed to guard his house here during this war, because it is so remote from neighbours and he is so much on the country's service. Dec. His mills are burnt by the enemy at "Lampere River." Thus called to experience various events, he closed his active career. The Legislature, as a mark of respect for him, voted £20 towards his funeral charges. — His first wife was daughter of Governor Winthrop, who mentioned her as living, Sept. 30th, 1648. For his second wife he married Rebecca, widow of Daniel Eppes. She survived him, and d. July 21st, 1695, *Æ*. 78. Mr. Symonds left children, — Harlakendine; Elizabeth, wife of Daniel Eppes; Martha, wife of John Dennison and afterwards of Richard Martyn of Portsmouth; Ruth, wife of the Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester; Priscilla, wife of Thomas Baker of Topsfield; Mary, wife of Peter Duncan of Gloucester; Rebeckah, wife of Henry Bylie of Salisbury, England, then of John Hall of England, then of the Rev. Wm. Worcester of Salisbury, Mass.; and William; and a brother, Richard

Fitts Symonds. He had other daughters, Dorothy, married to Joseph Jacobs, and Susanna. His estate was £2534 9s. His farm at Argilla has been long noted. Who, that reviews the different and multiplied duties of Mr. Symonds, and the devoted and patriotic spirit, with which he discharged them, can truly deny that he merited the full, repeated, important, and long confidence placed in him by the public authorities? Nor was he less honored in the more private walks of life. Whatever he undertook, whether business of town, county, colony, or country, he did not leave it, till he had expended upon it all the time, attention, and exertion which he ought. His politics, principles, and practices, were not swayed by corrupt ambition, but were deeply seasoned by the salt of piety, which induced him to seek first for the approbation of God, and then, as a consequence, to act for the best good of those, whose interests were committed to his care. The circle of his benevolence, his motives, and conduct, was not merely confined to the civilized, but also extended to the heathen, to whom he was an instrument of sending the Gospel more fully than it had been. His was a mind which looked at earthly concerns in the light of Revelation. His was a soul affected and moved more by eternal realities than by things temporal. His was a life which took hold on judgment, and secured the blessedness of justification through the Redeemer.

1679, May 22d. William, son of Deputy-Governor Symonds, d., and was buried the 27th. He became freeman 1670, and was Representative from Wells, Maine, to the General Court 1676. He m. Mary, daughter of Mr. Jonathan Wade, and left children.

✓ 1693, Jan. 8th. Captain Daniel Eppes d. Æ. about 68. His wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Deputy-Governor Symonds, d. May 7th, 1685, Æ. 61. He left children, of whom were Symonds and Daniel, the latter of whom removed to Salem. He frequently held offices in the town, was Representative to the Legislature in 1684, 1686, 1689, and Justice of the General Sessions Court. — 1689, July 3d. He was on a committee of the House to raise men in the Upper Essex Regiment.

*Pioneers of Massachusetts
by Charles Henry Pope
p. 446*

✓ Samuel, gent., Ipswich, propr., frm. March, 1637-8, deputy and Asst. 6 June, 1638; deputy governor. A man of large ability and excellent record as a citizen and public official. Mentions cousins Gallop, Waite and Harris in a letter to J. Winthrop, Jr. in 1652. In a letter in 1632, mentions his only brother, who dwells at Much Yeldham, Essex.

He m. 1, Dorothy Harlakenden; m. 2, Martha, dau. of Edmund Reade and widow of Daniel Epps, Sen.; m. 3, Rebecca, widow of John Hall of Salisbury. Ch. Samuel, (d. in 1654; will on file); John, (in England in 1653); Harlakenden, William, Martha, Ruth, Priscilla, Dorothy, (m. Thomas Harrison of the parish of Dunstons in the East, London; they sent power of attorney 10 Feb. 1653, to her bros. Samuel and William S., for the collection of anything due them).

His will dated 16 Feb. 1673, and Jan. 8, 1677, prob. Nov. 6, 1678, beq. to wife Rebecca all that belonged to her in Eng. before marriage with him; also ample provision at his farm in Ipswich called Argilla, or elsewhere, if she prefer; to sons Harlakenden and William; to son and dau. Epps; she to have the "damaske sute which was the lady Cheynies if she desire"; to dau. Martha and her husband John Denison; to son and dau. Emerson; to daus. Baker and Dunkin; to son Chute; to gr. dau. Sarah Symonds; to wife's gr. dau. Rebecca Stace; son John Hale one of the overseers; refers to brother Mr. Richard Fitz Symonds, from whom a legacy is expected for son Harlakenden. The widow Rebecca d. July 21, 1695. Her inv. showed articles marked W.

R. and others marked R. H.; son and dau. Hall mentioned. Mrs. Martyn is one of the ch. to whom Mr. Symond's estate was divided 15 Oct. 1679.

NEW ENGLAND MARRIAGES PRIOR TO 1700

by Clarence Allen Terry age 674-5

SYMONDS, Harlackenden (1627-) (ret'd to Eng) & Elizabeth [DAY?] (1641-); b 1668; Wells, ME/Gloucester/Ipswich

SIMONDS, Henry (-1643) & Susan ?; m/2 Isaac WALKER; by 1643; Boston/Lancaster

SIMMONS, Isaac & Martha [CHANDLER]; b 1696; Marshfield

SYMONDS, James (1633-1714) & Elizabeth BROWNING; 20 Nov 1661; Salem

SIMONDS, James (-1717) & Susanna BLODGETT (-1715); 29 Dec 1685; Woburn/Lexington

SYMONDS, James & Mary ROBINSON (1669-); 25 Mar 1697; Salem

SIMMONS, Job (1674-) & Hannah BUSHOP/BISHOP; 15 Jun 1700; Plymouth

SYMONDS, John & 1/wf Ruth [FOX]; b 1625; Salem

SYMONDS, John (-1671) & 2/wf Elizabeth [BLOTE]; b 1630?, b 1637; Salem

SYMONDS, John & ? Ann ?; b 1640; Braintree

SYMONDS, John (1614+) & 1/wf ?; b 1651; Kittery, ME

SIMMONS, John & Mary ?; b 1663; Boston

SIMMONS, John (?1640-) & 1/wf Elizabeth BOYNTON (1642-1677); 9 Nov 1664; Rowley/Bradford

SYMONDS, John (1614+) & 2/wf Welthen (?) GODDARD, w John; by 4 Jun 1668, aft 12 Nov 1666; Oyster River, NH

SIMONS, John (-1715, 1716) & Mercy PABODIE (1650-1728); 16 Nov 1669; Duxbury

SYMONS, John & Martha MOORE of Southold; b 1677?; Boston/Taunton

SIMMONS, John & 2/wf Mary PIERCE; 19 Jul 1678; Bradford

SYMONDS, John & Ann ?; b 1686/[?]; Boston

SYMONDS, John (1666-1728/9) & 1/wf Sarah WATERS; 3 Mar 1689/90; Salem

SIMMONS, John & Hannah HATHAWAY; 14 Dec 1697; Taunton

SIMMONS, ? John (1670-) & Experience [PICKNELL?]; b 1701?; Plymouth

SYMONDS, Joseph (1652-1733) & Mary TEED/TIDD; 7 Mar 1680/1; Cambridge/Lexington

SYMONDS, Mark (1584-1659) & 1/wf ?; b 1612?, b 1614; Ipswich

SYMONDS, Mark (?1584-1659) & 2/wf Joanna ? (-1666); b 1620; Ipswich

SIMMONS, Moses (-1689, 1691?) & Sarah ?; ca 1630; Duxbury/Bridgewater

SIMMONS, Moses (-1676?) & Patience [BARSTOW] (1643-); m/2 Samuel BAKER 1677; b 1660?, b 1662; Scituate

SYMONDS, Peter & Katherine BRADISH; m lic 30 Oct 1665; Southold, LI

SYMONDS, ? [Richard] & Hannah [MONE] (1644-1691+); Southold, LI

SIMONDS, Richard (-1682) & Hannah WELLS (-1682+); 16 Aug 1679; Salem

SIMONS, Robert (1645-1724, ae nearly 79) & Thomasin [WALDEN]; b 1678?; Windham, CT

SYMONDS, Samuel (1595-1678) & 1/wf Dorothy HARLAKENDEN (1596-1636); Great Yeldham, Eng, 2 Apr 1617; Salisbury

SYMONDS, Samuel (1595-1678) & 2/wf Martha (READE) [EPES] (-1662), w Daniel; ca 1637; Salisbury

SYMONDS, Samuel (1638-1722) & Elizabeth ANDREWS (-1725); 14 Apr 1662; Salem/Boxford

SYMONDS, Samuel (1595-1678) & 3/wf Rebecca (SWAYNE) (BYLEY) (HALL) (WORCESTER), w Henry, w John, w William; Apr or May 1663; Salisbury

SIMONS, ? Samuel (-1669) & Martha [MOORE]; Southold, NY (see John SYMONS)

SIMONS/SYMONDS, Samuel (-1711) & Elizabeth [WEBSTER] (1646+-); ca 1668; Haverhill

SYMONDS, Samuel & ?; b 1681; Ipswich

SYMONDS, Samuel (1672-) & 1/wf Abigail PORTER (1676-1716); 8 Jun 1698; Boxford/Salem/Topsfield

SIMONDS, Samuel & Hannah [JOHNSON] (1669-); b 1700; Woburn

SIMMONS, Simon & Tabitha BENTON; 27 Nov 1684, no issue; New Haven

SIMONS, Solomon & Elizabeth ?; b 1686; Hempstead, LI

SYMONDS, Thomas (-1642) & ?; b 1638; Braintree

SYMONS, William & 1/wf Sarah ? (-1641); b 1638?; Concord

SYMONDS, William (-1642) & Anne (GARWOOD) [BARRELL], m/3 Abel PORTER; b 1640; Boston

SIMONDS, William (-1672) (ae 41 in 1658) & 2/wf Judith (PHIPPEN) HAYWARD (-1689/90, w James; 18-1 mo, 1643, 18 Jan 1643, [1642/3]; Woburn

SYMONDS, William (-1667?) & Elizabeth ?; b 1645; Ipswich/Haverhill

SYMONDS, William (1632-1679) & Mary [WADE]?, m/2 Francis LITTLEFIELD by 1689; b 1668/9; Ipswich/Wells, ME

HAMMATT PAPERS

by Abraham Hammatt

(18)

EARLY INHABITANTS, IPSWICH, MASS

355

SYMONDS. Births of the children of Samuel and Dorothy Symonds, copied from the Register of the Parish of Toppesfield, Co. Essex, England: copied by T. Cleaveland:

Anne, born April 25, 1622

Margaret

Samuel, born October 29, 1623

Elizabeth, born December 22, 1624

Samuel, born January 3, 1625

Samuel, born April 17, 1627

John, born July 15, 1628

Robert, born August 13, 1629

William, born June 22, 1632

Roger, born December 5, 1633

SAMUEL SYMONDS, was among the most distinguished of the First Settlers of Ipswich.

He was descended from an ancient and honourable family in Yeldham, Essex, where he had good estate.

He was born in 1595. He married (1) Dorothea Harlackenden in 1620. The children he brought with him to New England:

William,

Harlackenden,

Samuel,

Dorothea and Elisabeth

His second wife was Martha Eppes, widow; daughter Edmund Reade, of Wicksford, Kent; married 1659. 163-

Their children were:

Martha,

Ruth, married John Emerson

Priscilla, married Baker

Samuel, (probably)

Mr. Symonds married for his third wife, Rebekah Swayne. He was her fourth husband, and she outlived him. She died July 21, 1695, aged 78.

Mr. Symonds took the freeman's oath at Boston, March 1637-8.

He had previously, viz., Sept. 3, 1637, purchased of Mr.

Henry Sewall, a dwelling house which stood near where the Female Academy now stands. The lot contained three acres, on the north side thereof abutting on the Meeting-house Green: upon the northeast end thereof abutting on the house lot of William White; upon the south east side thereof it abutteth upon Ipswich River; upon the south west end thereof it abutteth upon the highway leading to the Meeting-house.

This house and lot descended from Mr. Symonds to his grandson, Major Symonds Eppes, who sold the property to Mr. Edward Eveleth, Jan. 9, 1715. (Eveleth married Elizabeth, the daughter of Eppes.)

Under the marginal date, 1637, is recorded: Granted by the freemen of the Town of Ipswich to Samuel Symonds, Ipswich, in New England, Gent, a farm of five hundred acres of ground, upland and meadow, which farm was laid out accordingly, and is since called Argilla; bounded, viz. that end thereof toward the northeast, abutting on the now common ground of the Town of Ipswich, beyond part of the West meadows; that part thereof toward the south east, abutting upon the farm grounds of Mr. William Payne; that end thereof toward the south west, abutting upon a little Brook called Dry Brook; that side thereof toward the north west abutting partly upon the ground of Thomas Dorman, partly upon common grounds, and partly upon the farm now or lately of Mr. John Winthrop the younger.

Also, a planting lot of six acres abutting upon the south west end of Mr. Richard Saltonstall's meadow, lying near a creek called Labour-in-vain,—the north end upon the land of Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, pastor of the church at Ipswich.

Also, all that parcel of ground both upland and marsh, lying at the hithermost side of Saggamore hill, not exceeding forty acres.

The date of giving out these copies is the 5th day of December, 1745, by order of Court: Signed, Richard Saltonstall, Daniel Denison, Samuel Appleton.

"Said Symonds is also possessed of a farm containing about three hundred and twenty acres more or less, which lyeth upon and beyond ye creek called labour in vain—towards the south in a place called Shebacco, which farm was granted by ye freemen of ye Town (divers years since) to John Winthrop ye younger,—which said farm said Winthrop sold to said Symonds, 8, 12mo, 1637."

"Also, one acre and half abutting on the east side thereof on lower end of Mr. William Hubbard's shop, before the town house, and the rest of said parcel of land is surrounded by highways, which parcel of ground was part of Mr. John Winthrop's six acre lot, which the freemen of the town of Ipswich granted him, and which said Winthrop granted to said Symonds, 24 October, 1638.

1665, January 1. Samuel Symonds conveys to Daniel Eppes, "all my farm called Castle hill, containing two hundred acres."

"Also, the Islands containing one hundred acres, divided from Castle hill by a small creek."

"Also, Dec. 1, 1664, four hundred acres between Mr. Saltonstall and Mr. William Hubbard."

Mr. Hubbard was Town Clerk from 1639 to 1645; and a Feoffee of the Grammar School, the earliest records of which institution are in his hand writing.

1667, Sept. 24. The Judges of the Court were: Mr. Santuell Symonds, Mr. Symon Bradstreet, Maj. Gen. Denison, Maj. William Hathorne.

Mr. Symonds was Representative from 1638 to 1643; when he was elected one of the Magistrates or Assistants, which office he sustained thirty years. In 1673 he was chosen Deputy Governor, in which office he remained until his decease, October, 1678.

He left wife Rebekah; sons Harlakinden and William; daughters, Elisabeth, wife of Daniel Eppes; Martha, widow of John Denison, who afterwards married Richard Martyn of Portsmouth; Ruth, wife of Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester; Priscilla, wife of Thomas Baker of Topsfield; also, Susannah, his granddaughter, who married Dec. 18, 1690, Joseph Jacobs.

His will is dated Feb. 16, 1673, and proved Nov. 6, 1678. By a codicil, dated Nov. 8, 1677, he bequeaths certain property to his son Harlakinden, "provided, that if in the life time of my son Harlakinden, my loving brother, Mr. Richard Fitts Symonds decease in the interim, and be bountifull unto my son Harlakinden (which I believe he will,) and bequeath him more than the value of five pounds per annum, then my will and mind is, &c.

He bequeaths to his wife Rebecca, all the property he had with her, "as by a note of particulars, bearing date the last day of November A. D. 1669, under my hand and seal."

"Also, I give to my wife a good breeding mare, or one of my riding horses, which she shall choose."

"Also twelve pound per annum, to be paid her out of my farm called Argilla, during her natural life; to be paid, one half in wheat and malt, at the price current among the merchants of Ipswich; the other half in pork and Indian corn."

"She shall have liberty to make use of my town house in town, with my children, as formerly, and to take what apples, pears, and plums, and what ground she pleases for her garden,"—at Argilla.

"I give to my dear wife my feather bed and bolster, which we usually lye upon."

"I give to my wives grand daughter one Cow, viz: Rebeckah Stacy, because of her diligent attendance on me.

"I give to my grand daughter Sarah Symonds, land which was her father's in Coxall." [Coxall, Maine.]

"To sonne and daughter Eppes, one hundred pounds promised before marriage, to be paid in one year or two, after my decease; and if she still desire to have the suit of damask which was the Lady Cheynies, her grandmother, let her have it upon appraisement."

"Whereas I promised to give to my daughter Martha one hundred pounds as a portion upon her marriage with her husband,—Mr. John Denison,—it being desired by the Major and herself so to do, according to the bond I entered into, I do by this my last will confirm the same."

"Son and daughter Emerson, four score pounds. * * Having paid son Baker forty pounds. * Daughter Hale, twenty shillings. Sonne Chewte, twenty shilling. Daughter Dunkin 20s. * Rev. Mr. Cobbett our pastor, 40s.

"My mind and meaning is that the legacies here given to my children shall be paid, not in money, according to money, but in such pay as they usually pass from man to man, which is called the current price."

Mr. Symonds gives his real estate to his two sons Harlakinden and William; except the Argilla farm, which seems not to have been disposed of.

He appoints his son William to be his executor; and his loving friends Captain John Appleton, Lieutenant Samuel Appleton, and sonne John Hale, to be overseers.

This "sonne John Hale," was the first minister of Beverly. He married December 15, 1664. Rebecca Byley, daughter of Mr. Symonds last wife, by her first husband, Henry Byley of Salisbury.

The "daughter Dunkin" was probably the wife of Peter Duncan of Gloucester; how she became the daughter of Mr. Symonds does not appear. Neither can I discover who was the "sonne Chewte."

In a deed dated June 11, 1662, Peter Duncan, of Gloucester, Merchant, styles Daniell Epps of Ipswich, his brother.

Mr. Symonds had lost three sons: Samuel, died 1653; another Samuel who was graduated at H. C. in 1663, and died November, 1669; and John.

The will of Samuel, jun'r, is dated November 22, 1653. By it he gives to his brother Harlakinden Symonds all his lands in Wenham; to brother John Symonds, £2, 10; to brother Samuel Symonds, sisters Martha, Ruth, Priscilla, and nephew Samuel Epps, twenty shillings a piece;

To sister Mary Epps, a little piece of new Holland cloth;
To Killicross Ross, his chest with lock;
To brother Samuel, all his books;
To Rebecca Ward, five shillings;
To brother William all his lands at Chebacco.

Madam Rebecca Symonds, the last and surviving wife of Dep. Gov. Symonds, was, first, the wife of Henry Byley, who came from Sarum, England, and settled at Salisbury as early as 1640. By him she had a daughter Rebecca, who married the Rev. John Hale. The record reads: "Mr. John Hale, son of Robert Hale late Deacon of ye Church of Charles Town, and Rebecca Byley, late of Salisbury in England, Gent'n, were married Dec. 15, 1664, at Ipswich, before me: Samuel Symonds." John and Rebecca Hale had a son Robert who graduated at H. C. 1686. Of this son Robert it is written: "Many years Magistrate in Beverly." A letter of attorney, written to his father, dated September 16, 1695, styles him "Minister of the Gospel in Preston, Con't., grandson of Mrs. Rebecca Symonds."

Mad. Symond's second husband was Mr. John Hall, of Salisbury, who left property for her in Salisbury.

In 1682, Mr. Samuel Hall, sometime a resident in Massachusetts, had died at Langford, near Malden, Essex, England. He bequeathed £100 to those who lost by the great fire in Boston and by Indian Wars in this colony. Mr. John Hall of Islington, near London, was his executor, who sent an order to his mother, Mrs. Rebecca Symonds of Ipswich, to dispose of the bequest.

Mrs. Symonds married for a third husband, August 22, 1650, the Rev'd William Worcester, the first minister of Salisbury, who lost his first wife, Sarah, April 23, of the same year. He died October 28, 1662. In his will dated ten days previous to his decease, are these bequests:

"My will is that my beloved wife shall have that bond of fifty pound wh is due unto mee from Thomas Clark of Boston, Iron monger; she securing my daughter in law, Rebeckah Bilie of wt remains due to her out of yt bond."

"Also my will is that my wife shall have the use of my dwelling house, orchard, &c., during the time of her widowhood."

"Also, that my wife shall have wt moneys soever are due in England for rent; for wt lands and housings belong unto her, or any otherwise due."

After several bequests to his children he adds:

"All ways provided that the marsh lott that was formerly my wife's by her former husband, Mr. John Hall: remayne to the use of my said wife hir heirs and assigns forever."

He had a daughter Susanna by a former wife, who married Thomas Stacey of Ipswich, and had Rebecca, who married May 25, 1681, James Burleigh, and died before 1695. She is the granddaughter, Rebecca Stacey, mentioned in the will of Mr. Symonds.

Mr. Worcester further bequeaths "to my daughter Rebecca Bylie my brass chafindish: and also I give unto her a book of Mr. Anthony Burgases concerning the tryals of grace, as a small token of my special love unto her."

"To my grand child, Rebecka Stacy, five pounds in household stuff such as her grandmother may think meet."

Seven years after the decease of Mr. Worcester, Mrs. Rebecca, his widow, entered into a covenant of marriage with the Honourable Samuel Symonds. In his will Mr. Symonds directs to be returned to his wife, according to the covenant, various pieces of property, among which are: land in Salisbury, being six acres of meadow; seventy acres of land in Salisbury, now called Amesbury; £62, 12s, New England money which I received of Mr. Clark, Iron monger, of Boston.

Mrs Rebeckah Symonds died in the summer of 1695:

MEMENTO MORI

The Relict of Samuel Symonds

Esquire, Mrs. Rebeckah Symonds

Dec'd July ye 21, 1695, in ye 79th year
of her age

A Memory blest thou hast & shalt tho here in dust
The matron, pious, prudent, grave & just

From her will are made the following extracts:

I give unto my Kinsman, Bennett Swaine, in England, three pounds, if he have so much in hand;

To granddaughter Elisabeth Rogers, twenty shillings and the gold ring wh was my mothers;

Son, Mr. John Hale, my horse ;

→ Son, Mr. John Emerson, my ffrench history ;

To the two ministers of Ipswich, twenty shillings each ;

Son Hierlackendine Symonds, one good cowe ;

To daughter Baker, my Grogram Gown and coul'd silk petticoat ;

→ To daughter Emerson one silk petticoat ;

→ To grandson Daniel Epps, one Jacke ;

→ To grandson Symonds Epps ye Bedstead in ye parlour ;

To cousin Martha Harris, a good new scarf ;

To cousin John Staniford, a gold ring and £3 ;

To daughter Elisabeth Symonds all my wearing linen, excepting the value of twenty shillings out of it, which I give unto my maid, Elisabeth Ross ;

To granddaughter Sarah Low [wife of Thomas Low of Gloucester,] one silver poringer ;

To daughter Hale, my black cloth gown and peticoat ;

To grandson Robert Hale all the rest of my estate.

Rebecca Hale, the daughter of Mrs. Symonds had died, and Mr. Hale had married, March 31, 1684, Sarah Noyes.

Martha Harris was widow of Thomas Harris who died in 1687 ; she was the daughter of Mrs. Margaret Lake, and mother of Margaret, wife of Dea. John Staniford.

Sarah Low : 1709, Nov. 14. Sarah Loe, ad'x of the estate of Thomas Loe late of Glocester, who left a widow, and Simonds Loe, his eldest son ; other children, Thomas Elizabeth, John.

Mrs. Symonds appointed her two sons Jno : Hale and Thomas Baker and cousin Jno : Staniford overseers of her will, to each of whom she bequeathed a gold ring.

The will was witnessed by Jn : Staniford, James Fuller, Margaret Pynchon.

The appraisers were Robert Kinsman and John Harris.

→ The estate of Mr. Symonds was appraised at £2534. The Argilla farm, containing 300 acres. £1500 ; houses, barns, &c., on the farm, £220.

The house and two acres of land at Town, £50.

1652, 1st of 2d mo. Samuel Symonds and Martha his

wife, convey to Isaac Cummings, in consideration of £30 paid to my sons Harlakinden, John and William, 150 acres of land butting on land of Daniel Clark.

Harlakinden Symonds 2, Samuel 1, was living in 1695, aged sixty years. He was of Ipswich in May, 1666, when he was fined by the Essex county Court for driving cattle on ye Sabbath. He remained in Ipswich until the division of the Argilla farm in 1694 ; soon after which he removed to Maine. He had purchased, April 24, 1664, of Thomas Kemble, merchant, of Boston, five hundred acres of land on the west side of Damara Cotta River, which Kemble bought of an Indian, Sagamore Witta Noies.

June 12, 1688, he sold Coxhall, which he inherited from his father, being six miles long and four miles broad, lying at the head of Wells and Arundel, York county, Maine, to Roger Haskins and thirty-five others.

[An examination of the York Deeds confirms Mr. Ham-matt's statement, and also reveals the fact that more than the "thirty-three" were proprietors by previous purchase. The Ipswich Land-owners in Maine would make an interesting chapter. We copy the thirty-three names from the Deeds:]

12 June 1688.

The sale of Coxall, County of
Yorkshire in the Province of Maine

→ Harlackenden Symonds, Gentleman, of Ipswich, Haue Giuen, Granted, bargained, sold, Enfeoffed and Confirmed and by these presents Doe fully, Clearly and absolutely Giue, Grant, bargain, sell, Alienate, and Infeoff and confirme vnto

Roger Haskins	Thomas Shepherd	John Gitting, s'r
Edwrd Bishop	William Goodhew	Paul Thordike
William Baker	Samuel Gittings	Isack Fellows
George Herrick	Barnett Thorne	Richard Walker
Thomas Edwards	Michell farlo	John Brown farmer
Samuell Ingalls jr	Mesheck farlo	Nathaniel Brown
John Low, Jn'er	Moses Bradstreete	Zachary Herrick
William Dixey	Mathew Perkens	Thomas Higginson

John Staniford Nicho: Woodberry John Harris
 Thomas Low, senr Marke Haskell John Burnham
 Samuell Ingalls sr William Cleaves Nath'l Rust, sen'r
 Robert Lord, jr. William Haskell Andrew Elliot, jr.
 Robert Bradford

to them and their heires and Assignes for ever, a Certaine Tract of land, six miles in length and foure Miles in breadth, known by the name of Cokshall in the County of Yorkshiere, in the Province of Maine: and is bounded as followeth, viz: at the South east end partly vpon the line of the township of Wells, and partly vpon the line of the Township of Cape porpus, and on the north east side partly bounded by the line of the land formerly Majr Wm Phillips his land, and partly uppon the Coman land; and on the north west end the said land is bounded on the common land, and bounded on the south west side with the land of the sd Symonds. Acknowledged in Boston:

Symonds "Did make Delivery by Turff and Twig."

William Symonds 2, Samuel 1, was born in England. He has the title of Gentleman, Jan. 4, 1655, under which date he conveys a lot of land to William Story, carpenter.

He and Elisabeth his wife, Nov. 19, 1656, convey to Jno: Woodam a house and about an acre of land in the street called Brook street.

June 29, 1657, hs styles himself of Preston, alias Wells, gentleman, when he sells to Thomas Wells of Ipswich, a farm of 200 acres, and other lands.

He was admitted freeman in 1670, and was the Representative of Wells in 1676. He had the rights of Commonage, 1678. He died May 22, 1679.

He married Mary, daughter of Jonathan Wade, Esq., and had:

Susanna, born Jan 3, 1668, m. Jos. Jacob Dec. 18, 1690
 Dorothy, b. Oct. 4, 1670, m Cyprian Whipple Dec. 19, 1695
 Mary, b. Jan. 6, 1673, m. Joseph Whipple, Dec. 10, 1697
 Elizabeth, born July 20, 1678

The two last were minors in 1694, and under the guardianship of their uncle, Col. Thomas Wade.

There was an agreement entered into by the heirs of Mr. Symonds (1) for the division of the Argilla farm, dated April 10, 1694. They divided it into two equal parts, one of which was assigned to the children of William 2: Susanna, Dorothy, Mary, Elizabeth. The other half to:— John and Ruth Emerson of Gloucester; Thomas and Priscilla Baker of Topsfield; Daniel Eppes of Salem, Symonds Eppes of Ipswich, sons of Daniel and Elisabeth Eppes both deceased.

MARK SYMONDS. Took the freeman's oath at Boston, May 2, 1638; was commoner of Ipswich, 1641.

He died April 28, 1659, aged 75 years. At the time of his decease he possessed a house and twelve acres of land lying in ye common fields on ye north side ye river, and a planting lot at Reedy Marsh. Inventory, dated May 16, 1659, £257, 6, 9.

Joanna Symonds, died April 29, 1666. Her will was dated April 6, proved May 9. She left two daughters:

Priscilla, married John Warner

Abigail, married Robert Pearce

John Symonds made a will August 16, 1671. Wife Elisabeth. Their children:

James, Samuel,

Katherine, married ——— Downe

Ruth

His property, consisting of house, orchard, land, was valued at £230, 14. Personal £100. He is styled John Symonds carpenter.

William Symonds, [also spelled Simmons,] was an inhabitant in 1635.

December 28, 1647. William Symonds, laborer, sells to Simon Bradstreet a planting lot containing seven acres, being on the hill in Ipswich, on the north side of the river. He lived at the upper end of High street, near the Burying Ground, and was for many years herdsman of the town. Several contracts made with him as herdsman are



FAMILY OF SYMONDS.

I WILL begin the account of this family by quoting all that is printed in "THE HISTORY AND ANTIQUITIES of the COUNTY of ESSEX," by Rev. Philip Morant, M.A., 1768. It is found under "The Pool," an estate in the parish of Great Yeldham.

The family is originally of Croft in Lancashire, where they continued in a direct line for about 20 generations, and at length terminated in females. — From Richard, in the third generation, sprung the Symonds's of Norfolk; and from John, in the eighth generation, sprung the Symonds's of Cambridge-shire. — Thomas Symonds, in the eleventh generation, married daughter of Mr. Tolleshunt, of Tolleshunt Darcy. — Thomas, in the fourteenth descent, married . . . daughter of Robert Osbaldeston. — John, in the seventeenth descent, by daughter of William Lering, had two sons, William of Croft, and Robert who marrying . . . daughter and heir of

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

21

in that Church. He had 3 sons, and 1 daughter. Richard, the eldest son, was a Cursitor in Chancery, and *Collector* of the *Three Volumes* in folio, preserved in the Heralds Office, containing the Arms, Epitaphs, and other Antiquities in this county, to which we so often refer in the course of this work. On the 25th of March 1643, he was committed to prison by Miles Corbet for his loyalty to K. Charles I. but escaping, he went into the King's Army, and served in his troop, under the command of the Lord Bernard Steuart Earl of Litchfield, at the battles of Cropedy-bridge, Lestwithiel, Newbury second and third, Naseby, and relief of Chester, where that noble Lord was slain: After that, he was at Denbigh with Sir William Vaughan, and at other places. — Edward, the second son, baptized 20 Decemb. 1621, dyed at Oxford in 1645, being in arms for the King. . . . John, the third son was baptized 10 April 1627. And Anne 31 March 1631. 5 Richard, the fifth son of the first Richard Symonds settled here, was of Magdalen College, Cambridge, and of Lincoln's-Inn. He purchased the manor of Panfield, where he sometimes resided, and dying 26 Sept. 1680, aged 83, was buried in this Church, with a monument.

JOHN, the eldest son abovementioned, of Richard Symonds, who first settled at the Pool, and Elizabeth Plumb, married Anne daughter of Tho. Elyott of Godalming in Surrey, Esq.; by whom he had 4 sons, Richard, John, Samuel, and Fitz-Symonds: and 4 daughters, Agnes wife of Tho. Bacon of

20

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

. . . Congreve of Stratton in Staffordshire, settled in that county; and from his descendents issued the Symonds's of Oxfordshire. . . . John, in the twentieth generation, was of Newport; and, by Margaret his wife, daughter of Thomas Maynard, was father of . . . John: who, by Anne daughter of Thomas Bendbow of Shropshire, had his son and heir

RICHARD SYMONDS above-mentioned. He was a Cursitor in Chancery; and marrying, 9 Janu. 1580, Elizabeth daughter of Robert Plumb of Yeldham-Hall above-mentioned, had in frank marriage with her the Poole, where he settled. His wife was interred in this Church 24 Janu. 1611, and he himself dyed 8 July 1627, and was also buried here. — Richard, then aged 40 years, is set down in the Inquisition as his son and heir. But, according to the pedigree, he had also 4 other sons; viz. John; Thomas, who dyed without issue 5 June, 1625; Samuel; and Edmund; and Richard is set down as the fifth. Of John, who is placed as the eldest in the pedigree, we shall give a particular account, after taking proper notice of the others. 3. Samuel, the 3d son, married Dorothy daughter of Thomas Harlakenden of Earl's-Colne. He was a Cursitor in Chancery; and had Olivers in Toppesfield; but retired to New England with his family. . . . — 4. Edmund the 4th son, was also a Cursitor in Chancery. In right of his wife, Anne only daughter of Joshua Draper of Braintree, to whom he was married 2 February 1614, he had an estate at Black-Notley, where he dwelt, and dying 9 Decemb. 1627, was buried

22

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

London, merchant; Elizabeth, of Antony Wolmer of Lincoln's-Inn Esq.; Thomasine and Dorothy, twins, born 16 August 1627. Thomasine was married to . . . Pepys Esq.; . . . Richard, the eldest son, born 13 Octob. 1616, being of Lincoln's-Inn, was in several battles with the Earl of Essex against the King; and slain at Naseby 1645, fighting under the command of Sir Thomas Fairfax. . . . John, the second son, born at Yeldham, 4 Sept. 1618, became one of the Cursitors in Chancery upon his father's resignation in 1641. He was of Lincoln's-Inn, and near 40 years a Justice of Peace for this county. He had two wives, but issue by neither. The first was Elizabeth daughter of Sir Robert Quarles of Rumford Knt. She was buried in this Church 18 Decemb. 1666. His second wife was Jane daughter of Sir Robert Burgoyne, of Sutton in Bedfordshire, Knt. This worthy person dyed 19 Febr. 1692-3, in the 74th year of his age, and was buried in the South Chapel of this Church. By will he left this and other his estates to his nephew,

John Pepys Esq."

This account is copied almost exactly in "THE HISTORY AND TOPOGRAPHY OF THE COUNTY OF ESSEX," by Thomas Wright, 1836.

Our more positive information is derived from the Heraldic Visitation of Essex in 1634, (British

ANCESTRY OF PRISCILLA BAKER. This is about the family in England. p. 22 35, then New England.

Museum, MS. Harleian, 1542), and from the researches of Richard Symonds, a nephew of the settler in New England and a devoted antiquary, whose MS. Collections for the County of Essex, made about 1638-40, in three folio volumes, are now in the library of the College of Arms, London. He gives six generations of ancestors before Richard, who married Elizabeth Plume of Great Yeldham; and this is probably as far as he could trace his lineage with any certainty: Morant's twenty generations would carry the family back beyond the Norman Conquest. The following pedigree is from the second volume of Symonds' Collections: it has been already printed by the Camden Society, together with the contents of four small MS. volumes by Symonds in the British Museum, in which he recorded the armory of such churches as he visited while serving in the Royal army in 1644-5, as well as much military and other matter. The same library contains ten more MS. volumes by Symonds, some of which I have examined. The compiler made a strange mistake in giving the date of death of his father, Edward Symonds of Black Notley, as 1627, whereas it should be 1636. The pedigree in the Visitation differs slightly from



The Auntiant Armes of Richard Symonds of great yeldham in com. Essex son of John Symonds of newport in com. Sallop gent wth the guifte of this creast allwch S^r Rⁱ St. George K^t Clarenceux king of Armes exemplified by lres pattents dated in the first yeare of king Charles the Xth day of January a^o 1625 to the said Richard Symonds and to his posterity fforever.

this, but is much shorter, and adds little information. It tells the baptismal name, "Dorathey," of the wife of Samuëll of Topesfeld, and gives him nine children, — Richard, Samuëll, Harlakenden, John, William, Dorathey, Jane, Anne, Elizabeth. It has the coat of arms, and attestation, as printed below the wood-cut opposite.

There is little to be added to the pedigree, except the few facts obtained from the wills here printed. John⁶ Symons of Newport, Shropshire, who married Ann, daughter of Thomas Benbow, died in 1574, and left a nuncupative will, in which he mentioned his wife Ann, his sons Richard,⁷ John,⁷ Thomas,⁷ Thurston,⁷ Francis,⁷ and Roger,⁷ and his daughters Elizabeth,⁷ Margaret,⁷ and Isabel.⁷ Of these sons, Richard⁷ moved to Great Yeldham, Essex, and died there in 1627; John⁷ and Roger⁷ lived at Newport, and died in 1597 and 1604; Thomas⁷ was presented by his brother Richard to the rectory of Farnham in Essex, which he held till 1634; Thurston⁷ was of London, and died in 1628, leaving an only son, Thomas⁸; by his will he appointed as his executors, his "well-beloved kinsmen and nephewes" Edward Symons of Black Notley and Thomas Symons, son of his brother Thomas Symons

of Farnham, Clark, Parson of Farnham. Ann, widow of John⁶ Symons, died in 1597.

Richard⁷ Symonds, eldest son of John, moved to Great Yeldham in Essex, where he married, 9 January, 1581, Elizabeth, daughter of Robert Plume* of that parish, and received with her the estate known as The Pool. They had five sons, — John,⁸ Thomas,⁸ Edward,⁸ Samuel,⁸ and Richard-Fitz;⁸ and one daughter, Margaret,⁸ who married Edmund Eyre of Windsor, and of Burnham, Buckinghamshire. He was a Cursitor† in Chancery, and died in 1627; his wife had died in 1611. His will has not been found. In the church of Great Yeldham is a mural brass tablet to his memory, with figures of himself and wife, five sons, and one daughter, in prayer, and, below, a shield with these arms: SYMONDS, of four quarterings: 1 and 4, Azure, a chevron engrailed between three trefoils slipped Or; 2, Or, three eagles displayed —; 3, — on a bend — three eagles displayed —; empaling PLUME, Argent, a bend Vairy Or and Gules, cotised Vert.

* Robert Plume was son of John Plume of Great Yeldham, and married Elizabeth Purchas: she died in 1596, and he in 1613.

† A cursitor is an officer in the Court of Chancery, whose duty it is to make out original writs.

(26)

John^s Symonds, eldest son of Richard, inherited The Pool, where he lived. He was a Cursitor in Chancery, and married Ann, daughter of Thomas Elyott of Godalming in Surrey. They had four sons, — Richard,^s John,^s Samuel,^s and Fitz;^s and seven daughters, of whom three died in infancy. Ann,^s born in 1612, married, 1 November, 1627, Thomas Bacon;^s Elizabeth,^s born in 1614, married, 6 June, 1639, Anthony Wollmer, and had a daughter, Elizabeth, who married Martin Carter; Thomasine,^s born 1626, married John Pepys, and had, with other children, a son, John Pepys, who inherited part of the estates of the family in Great Yeldham. John^s Symonds died in 1657.

Thomas^s Symonds, second son of Richard, died childless at Great Yeldham, 5 June, 1625. He may have been the same Thomas Symons, from Essex, who was admitted fellow-commoner of Jesus College, Cambridge, 8 July, 1615.

Edward^s Symonds, third son of Richard, was a Cursitor in Chancery, and married Ann, only daughter of Joshua Draper of Braintree in Essex, with whom he had an estate at Black Notley, in the same county, where he lived, and died in 1636. They had

(27)
three sons, — Richard,^s Edward,^s and John;^s and one daughter, Ann,^s who married — Wright.

Samuel^s Symonds, fourth son of Richard, moved to New England, and founded the family in America. He will be fully noticed farther on.

Richard-Fitz^s Symonds, fifth son of Richard, born in 1598, was a barrister of Lincoln's Inn. He bought the estate of Panfield in Essex, and died unmarried, 26 September, 1680, leaving his property to the sons of his brother John. In the church of Great Yeldham is a mural marble monument to his memory, with the family arms, and the following inscription: —

In Memoriam
RICI FITZ-SYMONDS
Armigeri qui bene latuit
beneq. vixit. Et sup 26^{um}
diem Septembr, A^o Dñi
1680 ab hac luce
Migravit =
A^o Ætatis sue
83^o.

Richard^s Symonds, eldest son of John, born in 1616, was killed at Naseby, in 1645, in the Parliamentary army under Sir Thomas Fairfax.

(28)

John^s Symonds, second son of John, born in 1618, was a Cursitor in Chancery, and succeeded his father in the estates at Great Yeldham. He married, first, Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Robert Quarles of Romford in Essex, Knight, who died 15 December, 1666, and was buried at Great Yeldham; and secondly, Jane, daughter of Sir Robert Burgoyne of Sutton, Bedfordshire, Knight. He had no children, and died 19 February, 1693, leaving his extensive estates in Great Yeldham, Castle Hedingham, Toppesfield, Panfield, Shalford, Stamborne, &c., to his nephew, John Pepys of Cambridge, and his grand-nephew, Martin Carter. In the church of Great Yeldham is a mural marble monument to his memory, with a shield of four quarterings, and the long inscription following. Arms, 1 and 4, Symonds, as before; 2, Azure, a talbot passant Argent, for Burgoyne; 3, Or, a fess dancettée Ermine between three sea-pewits Vert, for Quarles.

Hic in pace quiescit,
Non nisi novissimâ tubâ evocandus,
JOHANNES SYMONDS,
De Yeldham magnâ, in Comit. Essexiæ,
Armiger.
In Hospitio Lincolnensi

(29)

Legibus impensè studuit, sed paci magis,
Cujus per quadraginta ferè annos
Custos erat vigilantissimus:
Juris impruiis, sed & æqui simul,
Consultissimus:
Id enim unicè curavit
Vt lites extingueret impensis & similitate senescentes:
Vnde ubique habitus est
Pauperum patronus & asyllum. Spectatæ erat
Erga Deû pietatis, erga amicos fidei, erga egenos liberalitatis.
Duas suscepit Vxores,
Vtramque æquo & singulari coluit affectû:
Primam Dñi Rob. Quarles Filiam
De Rumford in Comit. Essexiæ Militis;
Secundam, Dñi Rogeri Burgoyne
De Sutton in agro Bedford. Militis & Bar^o Filiam.
Memoria justî non peribit in æternum.
Obiit Feb. XIX, Anno Salutis, MDCXCII. Ætatis suæ
LXXIII.

Samuel^s Symonds, third son of John, born in 1623, was rector of Colne Engaine in Essex, from 1662 to 1667, in which year he died, and was buried at Great Yeldham. He left a wife, Hannah, but no children.

Fitz^s Symonds, fourth son of John, born in 1629, was living in 1666. Probably he was the person called

Orlando-Fitz Symonds, of Steeple Bumpstead in Essex, who died, unmarried, 20 February, 1692, and was buried at Great Yeldham. Letters of administration were granted to his brother John.

Richard⁹ Symonds, eldest son of Edward, born in 1617, was a Cursitor in Chancery. He has given a biography of himself in the pedigree following page 24. He appears among the compounded royalists of the county of Essex, with an estate of £295. Mr. Charles E. Long, editor of his manuscript diary for the Camden Society, gives him this well-merited praise: "We are indebted to him, then a very young man, for many a family record which time, neglect, and Vandalism have since swept away; and, if his narrative is not always lively, and attractive to the general reader, it is valuable as affording corroborative testimony to the truth of other publications of that period." He was living in 1660, but the date of his death is not known.

Edward⁹ Symonds, second son of Edward, born in 1621, died at Oxford in 1645, being then in the King's army.

John⁹ Symonds, third son of Edward, born in 1627, was of Pater-Noster Row. London, and may have

been the person mentioned thus in Richard Smyth's Obituary of persons he knew, (British Museum, MS. Sloane 886): "1654. May 19, Mr. Symonds, the printer, died."

Edward Symonds, rector of Rayne in Essex, was a member of the family, but his exact relationship is not known. He was son of Edward, is called "cousin" by Richard, the antiquary, and is commemorated by Cotton Mather, in his "Magnalia Christi Americana," for the following words in a sermon preached in 1637: "Many now promise to themselves nothing but successive Happiness at New England; which for a time, thro' God's Mercy, they may enjoy; and I pray God, they may a long time, but in this World there is no Happiness perpetual."



DOCUMENTS.

EXTRACTS FROM THE REGISTER OF NEWPORT, SHROPSHIRE.

- 1573-(4). January. John Simons sepult the ———.
 1592-(3). William Simons son of Roger bapt. march 22.
 1593. September. Mary Simons filia John bapt. the 2.
 1594. Margaret Simons filia Thomas bapt. novemb. 4.
 1595. February. Mary Simons filia John sepult the 7.
 1595. Elizabeth Simons filia Roger bapt. January the 23.
 1596. June. William Simons sepult the 22.
 1597. June. Anna Simons widow sepult the 2.
 1597. July. Margaret Simons sepult the 2.
 „ „ Jane Simons widow sepult the 17.
 „ „ Elizabeth Simons sepult the 25.
 1597. August. Thomas Symons draper sepult the 6.
 1597. September. John Symons draper sepult the 8.
 1598. May. Atealanta Simons filia William bapt. the 25.
 1598-(9). February. Margaret Simons filia John bapt. the 1.
 1604. Julij. Rogerus Symmons sepultus fuit vicesimo septimo Die i Rogerus occisus fuit p——.*

* The last word I could not decipher.

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

33

EXTRACTS FROM THE REGISTER OF GREAT YELDHAM, ESSEX.

- 1580-(1). Richard Symons and Elizabeth Plūme weare married the ixth day of January Anno Elizabeth the xxij^o anno dñi p'dic.
 1617. Samuel Symons and Dorothe Harlakinden were married the second day of April 1617 annoq regni Jacobi Regis etc 15^o.
 1595. Samuell Symons the sonne of Richard Symons was baptised the ixth of June 1595 Eliz. xxxvijth
 1598. Richardfitz Symons the sonne of Richard Symons was baptise1 the xxxth day of march anno dñi 1598 anno Eliz. the xlth
 1610-(1). Elizabeth Symons late wife of m^r Richard Simons was buried the xxiiijth of January 1610, añoq regni Jacobi regis etc octavo.
 1625. Thomas Symons, soñe of Richard Symons, was buried the sixt day of June 1625 añoq regni Caroli Regis etc primo.
 1627. m^r Richard Symons the elder was buried the xth day of July 1627.
 1657. M. John Symons senyor was buryed the 6th day of october 1657.
 1666-(7). M^r Samuell Symonds was buryed Jan. 15th 1666.
 1680. Richard Fitz-Symonds Esq was buryed Octob. 1st 1680.

EXTRACTS FROM THE REGISTER OF TOPPESFIELD, ESSEX.

1618. Jun. 15. Richard the sonne of Samuel Simons gent. was baptized.
1619. Nouemb. 9. Dorothe daughter of Samuett Simons & Dorcthe his wife was baptized.
1621. Apr. 29. Jane daughter of Samuelt Simons & Dorthee his wife baptized.
1622. Anne Simons the daughter of Samuelt Simons gent. & Dorothy his wyfe was baptized y^e 25th day of Aprill A^o p^dicto.
1623. Samuelt Symons the sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized the 29th day of October Anno p^dicto.
1624. Elizabeth Symons the daughter of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 22th day of December Anno p^dicto.
- 1625-(6). Samuelt Symons y^e sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 3 day of January Anno p^dicto.
1627. Harlakinden Simons y^e sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 17th day of Aprill Anno p^dicto.
1628. John Simons the sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 15th day of Julie Anno p^dicto.

English records to here

1629. Robert Simons the sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 13th day of August Anno p^dicto.
1632. William Symons y^e sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized y^e 22th day of June A^o p^dicto.
1633. Roger Symons y^e sonne of Samuelt Symons gent. & Dorothy his wife was baptized the 5th day of December A^o p^dicto.
1623. Samuelt Symons the sonne of Samuelt Symons was buried the 4th day of November Anno p^dicto.
1630. Robert Symons y^e sonne of Samuelt Symons was buried y^e 2 day of September Anno p^dicto.
1634. Roger Symons was buried the 10th day of June A^o p^dicto.
1634. Anne Symons was buried y^e 27th day of Nouember A^o p^dicto.
1636. Dorothy Simons y^e wife of m^r Samuel Simons was buried y^e 3^d day of August A^o p^dicto.



FAMILY OF SYMONDS IN NEW ENGLAND.

SAMUEL^s SYMONDS, founder of the family in America, fourth son of Richard of Great Yeldham, Essex, was born in that parish in 1595, and baptized 9 June of that year. He was a Cursitor in Chancery, and married at Great Yeldham, 2 April, 1617, Dorothy, eldest daughter of Thomas Harlakenden, of Earl's Colne, Essex, where she was baptized 12 December, 1596. He owned the estate of Olivers in Toppesfield, next parish to Great Yeldham, and lived there twenty years. They had twelve children born at Toppesfield, four of whom died there young. His wife was buried there 3 August, 1636.

In the next year he moved to New England, and settled at Ipswich, and was made Freeman of the Colony of Massachusetts in March, 1638, without the

title of Mr., to which he certainly had good claim. Before this, he had married Martha, daughter of Edmund Read of Wickford in Essex, widow of Daniel Epes, step-daughter of Rev. Hugh Peter, and sister of the second wife of John Winthrop, Jr. Among the Winthrop Papers, printed by the Massachusetts Historical Society (Collections, Fourth Series, Vol. VII.), is a letter from Samuel Symonds, written probably from Boston to his brother-in-law Winthrop at Ipswich, containing most particular directions about a house, of which the latter was superintending the building. I shall not reprint the letter here, but it is interesting as giving perhaps the fullest contemporary description known of such a house as was at this early date built by one of the richer settlers in New England. The letter is unfortunately not dated. In it Symonds says, "my wife her tyme draweth very near," and mentions his daughter as at Ipswich, probably on a visit, unless he means his step-daughter Elizabeth Epes, who seems to have lived with John Winthrop, Jr. In another letter, apparently dated 14 December, 1637, Symonds says, "I resolved to take the opportunity of my father's barke, now at Boston, to send certaine necessarie things by it, as far as Salem, that

(64)

1643, when he was "chosen an Assistant, & tooke his oathe." He was a Selectman of Ipswich in 1644 and a few other years, and was a member of the committee of the town "for makeinge of a Rule for settleinge of mens pprieties in respect of the variacon from the Grants." His duties as a Colonial Magistrate seem to have interfered to prevent him from holding offices of honor in the town, and his name is not often found on the records of the latter.

In 1644 he was on a committee with Bellingham and Saltonstall with "full power to heare & determine all businesses at Hampton, both about their differences, offences, & a new plantation," and the same year was again appointed to keep a Court at Pascataqua, as also in 1645, when it is called Dover. In this year he was put in Bellingham's place on the committee for Essex County to meet on 12 November, "to consult together, & to returne to this Co't a result of their thoughts, that this Co'te may pceede there-upon to satisfy y^e expectation of the country in establishing a body of lawes." He also appears as one of seven gentlemen who petitioned the General Court to be established a free company of adventurers, with extensive privileges, which was granted.

soe by some meanes or other, they may be gotten to Argilla," his farm at Ipswich.

He was sent Deputy from Ipswich to the General Court of 2 May, 1638, and the same year was appointed, with Mr. Woodbridge and Mr. Hubbard, to join the Magistrates in keeping the County Court at Ipswich. The latter duty he also discharged the three following years, and in 1640 was chosen to record all mortgages, bargains, sales and grants of houses, lands, rents, and other hereditaments within the jurisdiction of Ipswich Court. The first volume of these records, now at Salem, is almost wholly written in his beautiful round hand, as are also the town records of Ipswich for a few years between 1639 and 1645. We shall find that he was constantly employed in this colony in duties, for which his professional education and experience in England particularly fitted him. He was one of six gentlemen, appointed 9 October, 1641, to keep Court at Pascataquack, then decided to be within the jurisdiction of Massachusetts. In 1642 he was one of a committee of the General Court "to consider whether in tryall of causes to retaine or dismise juries." He was a Deputy to most of the General Courts before 10 May,

(65)

In 1648 he was one of the committee "to puse the articles of o^r confederation wth the United Colonies," with instructions as to its duty and powers. Next year he was appointed to keep Courts for Norfolk County at Salisbury and Hampton; and also in 1651, in which year he was chosen by the inhabitants of Ipswich as one of the Feoffees of the Grammar School of that town, founded by Robert Payne, and held the office till his death. 23 October, 1652, the General Court issued a commission to him as one of six gentlemen, "to settle the civil government amongst the inhabitants of Kittery, the Ile of Shoales, Accomenticus, and so to the most northerly extent of our patent," charging them with various duties to be performed, "as in your wisdomes and discretions yow shall judge most to conduce to the glory of God, the peace and welfare of the people there, and the maintenance of our oune just rights and interest." The return of the commissioners may be read at full length in the fourth volume of the Records of Massachusetts. In 1653 he was chairman of a committee "to joyne with such of the comissioners for the United Colonies as they shall please to nominate, to draw up the case respecting the Dutch and In-

deans," and of another to consider "whither the commissioners of the United Colonies have power, by the articles of agreement, to determine the justice of an offensive or vindictive warre, and to ingage the colonies therein," which was decided in the negative.

In 1654 he was chairman of an important committee of three; "to examine, compare, reconcile, and place together, in good order, all former lawes, both printed and written, and make fitt titles and tables for ready recourse to any particular contained in them, and to present the same unto the next Court of Election, to be considered of, that so order may be taken for the printing of them together in one booke, whereby they be more usefull then now they are or can be." This year he was also on a committee "to drawe up severall letters, to his highnes the Lord Protector's letter, y^e letter for y^e gent^m of y^e corporation, & M^r Winslows, as also to drawe up a narrative, in way of remonstrance, of all matters respecting that which is charged on this Court concerning the breach of the confederacy, for the vindication of this Courts actiones in such respect." About the same time he appears as buying from George Dell, master of the ship Goodfellow, "two of the Irish youthes brought

(68)

previous year, 1657, as Justice of the County Court of Essex, he gave judgment in the case of George Giddings, plaintiff, against Edward Browne, defendant. The documents relating to this case occupy more than twenty pages in Hutchinson's Collection of Original Papers. The clergymen in New England being usually supported by voluntary contributions, the town of Ipswich, in 1656, voted to give £100 towards building or buying a house for Rev. Mr. Cobbet, and the question was whether this vote was binding on those who objected to it and refused to pay. The selectmen of Ipswich ordered the marshal, Edward Browne, to distrain on such as refused, and this action of trespass upon the case was brought by one of those, whose houses he had entered for that purpose. The judge, Symonds, found for the plaintiff, and expressed at some length the grounds of his judgment. His opinion is too long to be quoted here, and all the documents are curious and well worth reading. Appeal was taken from the decision, and the whole matter was finally referred to the General Court, which decided in favor of the vote of the town as binding, thus reversing the judgment of Mr. Symonds.

over by order of the State of England: the name of one of them is William Dalton the other Edward Welch—sum six & twenty pounds in corn merchantable or live cattell at or before the end of October next." There seems to be some doubt about the names of these unfortunate men, as they are afterwards called William Downing and Philip Welch. Mr. Symonds was obliged to bring an action to enforce his authority and ownership, and his declaration in the case may be seen in the New-England Historical and Genealogical Register for 1865.

In 1655 he was appointed to keep Courts at Dover and York, and to take under the government of Massachusetts "all persons not yet subjected to this government that are inhabiting wthin the northerly line of our patent, so farr as it is extended," and also to keep the Courts in Norfolk. In 1658, in consequence of disorders in the eastern parts, he was one of the commissioners appointed "to repaire to Black Point, Richmonds Island, & Casco, . . . to take in the inhabitants thereof into our jurisdiction." The return of the commissioners is printed in the fourth volume of the Records of Massachusetts. In the

(69)

In June, 1661, he was a member of an important committee of prominent men, appointed "to consider & debate such matter or thing of publicke concernment touching our pattent, lawes, priviledges, & duty to his maj^{ty} as they in their wisdome shall judge most expedient, & drawe up the result of their apprehensions, & present the same to the next session for consideration & approbation, that so (if the will of God be) wee may speake & act the same thing, becoming prudent, honest, conscientious, & faithfull men." He was this year ordered to keep Courts at Hampton and Salisbury; in 1663, was ordered to keep the next County Court for Suffolk, and in 1664 again in Norfolk.

Among the Winthrop Papers, in the volume before named, is a letter from Symonds to his brother-in-law Winthrop, written in 1662, in which is the following interesting and touching passage:—

"I have still one brother living. He hath a good estate; he is a batchellour. When I was in England he loved me well. I know not now, how I am in his minde; * but brother, if you did make a journey to see him, & (as occasion may be taken)

* This was Richard Fitz Symonds, who by will left his brother Samuel one hundred pounds.

to speake of me, as you shall see good, I shall add this courtesy to the heap of your former high deservings. The rest of my cosens are (I take it) well provided for. I am loath to be as one utterly forgotten by one soe related (if God see meet). But I confesse it is a tender stringe, & he hath need of wisdom that can finger it weil. He dwelleth at the Poole in Much Yeldham, neare Castle Henningham in Essex, about six miles from Erls Colne, where my kinrid of the Harlakindens live, which if alsoe you please to vizitt, kindly commending me to them all & every one of them, it wilbe very gratfull."

our Martha (Reade) (Epps) (Symonds) (with of Rats Symonds)
From the same letter we learn that his second wife was living in the early part of 1662, but was "very crazy"; she certainly died during that year, and in April, or May, 1663, he married Rebecca, widow, first of Henry Byley, secondly of John Hall, and thirdly of Rev. William Worcester. Her parentage was long a matter of doubt, but she is now plainly identified as daughter of Bennett Swayne, of Salisbury, England. She survived her fourth husband, and died 21 July, 1695, aged 78.

In 1665 he was chairman of a committee "to give answer to Secretary Morrise his letter, & to consider what is further necessary to be donne in reference to what hath past betweene the honorable comissioners

& this Court as it relates to England." The same year he and Thomas Danforth were ordered to repair to York, to keep a County Court, and to appoint civil and military officers and commissioners. In 1668 he was appointed to keep County Courts in Norfolk, and in 1672 in Yorkshire. 7 May, 1673, he was chosen Deputy Governor, in succession to Leverett elected Governor. His services certainly deserved this compliment, a barren one, it must be confessed, to a man of 78 years. In this year he was chairman of a committee to consider of these three questions:—
"1 Q. Whither according to pattent there be a negative vote in any part of the Generall Court; if there be, then in what cases. Secondly. How farr our positive lawes doe in this matter agree wth or disagree from the patent. 3 Q. Where the use of the negative voat causeth an obstruction in any matter of necessity to be concluded or of great moment to the publick, what may be the best expedient for an issue, whither by lot or otherwise." In 1675 he was on the committee * to settle the trouble in Salem Church between

* I have a copy of the return to the General Court, in an unknown hand, but indorsed, "This is a true copy according to the originall left with me by y^e committee under their own hands. Attested by JOHN HIGGINSON, senior."

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

72

73

Rev. Messrs. Higginson and Nicholet; and the same year, on account of the Indian war, obtained a guard of two men for his house, which was "so remote from neighbours, & he so much necessitated to be on the country's service."

In the records of the General Court for October, 1678, we read, "The Court judgeth it matter of incumbancy to take care for an honnoble & decent interment of y^e late Deputy Gov^{no}, & doe hereby order, that the country Treasurer forthwith deliver the sum of twenty pounds, in money or such other pay as may be necessary for such an end, to M^r Daniel Epps, Senio^r, to be as an addition to what shallbe expended by his relations on that account." The exact day of his death is not known. It is on record among the papers at the State House, Boston, that he died on 13 October; John Hull's Diary says, "Oct. 12. Samuel Symonds, Esq., the Deputy-Governor, died in Boston, the General Court sitting," while the following entry is found in an interleaved almanac of Samuel Sewall, "1678. 8, 11, Samuel Symonds Esq. Dep. Gov. buried."

The Rev. Dr. Felt thus writes of him in the "HISTORY OF IPSWICH, ESSEX, AND HAMILTON":—

"Who, that reviews the different and multiplied duties of Mr. Symonds, and the devoted and patriotic spirit, with which he discharged them, can truly deny that he merited the full, repeated, important, and long confidence placed in him by the public authorities? Nor was he less honored in the private walks of life. Whatever he undertook, whether business of town, county, colony, or country, he did not leave it, till he had expended upon it all the time, attention, and exertion which he ought. His politics, principles, and practices, were not swayed by corrupt ambition, but were deeply seasoned by the salt of piety, which induced him to seek first for the approbation of God, and then, as a consequence, to act for the best good of those, whose interests were committed to his care. The circle of his benevolence, his motives, and conduct, was not merely confined to the civilized, but also extended to the heathen, to whom he was an instrument of sending the Gospel more fully than it had been. His was a mind which looked at earthly concerns in the light of Revelation. His was a soul affected and moved more by eternal realities than by things temporal. His was a life which took hold on judgment, and secured the blessedness of justification through the Redeemer."

I will only add that he seems to me to have possessed that combination of true religious feeling with great firmness, not to say obstinacy, which was so much needed in the founding and early days of this

colony, and which was so perfectly in place, and fully in agreement, with the men, among whom he found himself in Massachusetts.

I quote from his letters various passages illustrating his character. 1637, to John Winthrop, Jr., at Ipswich:—

"I heare that your Church hath settled the choyce of your ministers in their offices, & that now things are likely to goe on very well & comfortably, which ministers matter of great joy to all that love Jesus Christ. And truly the peace of any Church (because pretious) is soe difficult to preserve, in respect of the subtilty & mallice of the common enmy, that it requires answerable cautelousnes on all hands, every one waighing well that one sentence of the Apostle, Let every one esteeme an other better then him selfe, & study the vally-way to rise to true honour."

1647, to Governor John Winthrop:—

"Troubles and difficulties we must looke for (if we will reere a building to the Lord) but the encouragement exceeds when we consider the worke is his. . . . The scope of what I would expresse is, to observe Gods providences in mans motions at this tyme seeme plainly to tend to settle his people here, and to recover new English spirit for Christs kingdome againe. . . . Is not government in church and common weale (according to

will make us goe singing to our graves. . . . Sir, its conceived this place will prove either very honourable or very meene and contemptable, according as religion is attended or neglected."

1654, to John Winthrop, Jr., on the death of a child of the latter:—

"If I were present with you & my sister, in these two things I should endeavour; first, to help support your spirits under such a stroke, then to cast which way may be best for spirituall improvement. For the first, it tends to support to consider who it is that hath done it: he that is bound to give noe account of his matters: & not too much to pore upon this, or that, which might have prevented, as its likly you are apt to conceive; and secondly, that you therewith labour to apply that generall soule comforting promise, viz: All things shall worke together for the good of them that love God. And for spirituall improvement, such providences may well minde us of the uncertainty of all earthly enjoyments, therefore to put us on the move to obtayne assurance of such as are both full & lasting. When, through spetiall grace, the heart, seeing the emptines of the creature, rests in the fullnes that is in Jesus Christ, it is in spirituall health. Health you know is sweet, though the pill that procureth it be bitter. I might add, you have many children still; count you have none, give them all to the Lord; & then shall you be sure to have them againe with advantage."

Gods owne rules) that new heaven and earth promised, in the fullnes accomplished when the Jewes come in, and the first fruites begun in this part New England, though neglected by many and opposed by some? Now to name what seemes to be Gods ende in bringing his people hether, whatever more there may be which tyme may yet discover. 1. To be an occasion to stirre up the zeale of the two nations to sett upon reformation of religion. and that with good successe. 2. To have liberty and power to sett up Gods owne ordinances in church government, and thereby to hold forth matter of conviction to the episcopacy and others that this way of church government and civill government may stand together. 3. To exercise the graces of the richer sort in a more mixt condition, they shall have the liberty of good government in their hands, yet with the abatement of their outward estates. And that the poorer sort (held under in England) should have enlargement. 4. To afford a hiding place for some of his people that stood for the truth while the nation was exercised unto blood. 5. To have an opportunity to trayne up a godly skillfull soldiery, which shortly may be employed against that blasphemous city. And to these may be added (at least a sprinkling) of godly seamen, formerly rare in the world. 6. To make this place a rendezvous for our deare English friends when they shall make their voyages to the West Indies; to dry up that Euphrates. 7. To be hopefull instruments in Gods hand to gaine these Indians to Christs kingdome. Which mercy if attained in any considerable measure

1662, to John Winthrop, Jr., at London:—

"I heare what a dangerous passage you had; it may put us in minde of the extreame difficulties & hassards doe attende our pilgrimage to that heavenly country. We had need labor with all our might, to get a sure & safe arrivall at that haven."

Samuel Symonds left a good property, consisting principally of real estate, of which he had bought, and received by grant, from the town of Ipswich and the General Court, a very large amount. The following is on record at Salem in the first volume of Ipswich Deeds, written in his own clear hand:—

Granted by the freemen of the Towne of Ipswich to Samuel Symonds of Ipswich in New England Gent a farme of five hundred acres of ground vpland & meadowe pporconable Anno Dñi 1637: which farme was laid out accordingly: It is since called Ollivers; * The said farme (at the day of the Date of this & other Coppies following) is thus bounded viz: that end thereof towards the North-east abutteth vpon the now comon ground of the Towne of Ipswich beyonde part of the west meadowes: that part thereof towards the south-east abutteth vpon certayne ground of m^r William Payne that end thereof

* It was so named after his estate at Toppsfield, England; and the town of Toppsfield, Mass., probably received its name at his suggestion, or in compliment to him.

towards south west abutteth vpon a little Brooke called Pye Brooke that side thereof towards the North, west abutteth partly vpon the ground of Thomas Dorman partly vpon comon ground & pty vpon the farme now or late of m^r John Winthrop the yonger To have & to hold the said five hundred acres of ground with the app^tn^{es} to him the said Samuel Symonds his heires & assignes for ever./

Item granted as aforesaid vnto the said Samuel Symonds & at the time aforesaid a planting Lott of six acres of ground, which planting Lott was laid out, and abutteth vpon the south-west end of m^r Richard Saltonstalls meadowe lying neare a Creeke called Labour in wayne Creek according to marked trees betweene m^r Saltonstalls said meadow & the said six acre Lott, the North-end of the said planting lott abutteth vpon the ground of m^r Nathaniel Rogers Pastor of the Church of Ipswich from a marked tree neare the corn^r of m^r Saltonstalls said meadowe all a longe the middle of the said Swampe to the marked tree which is the corner tree vpon Argilla farme-line runninge thence to a little meadowe of the said m^r Rogers the rest of the said Lott abutteth partly vpon a pcell of ground granted to m^r John winthrop the yonger in considera^on of a high-way taken out of his then farme now the farme & ground of the said Samuel Symonds called Argilla & partly vpon other grounds of the said farme./

Item Granted as aforesaid to the said Samuel Symonds all that pcell of ground both marsh & vpland lying at the hethermost side of Saggamore hill not exceeding forty acres (which

80

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

Lott there which the freemen of the Towne of Ipswich granted to him; and which said pcell of ground the said John winthrop hath granted to the said Samuel Symonds by his Deed bearing Date 24 of October Anno Dñi 1638./

Item the said Samuel Symonds is possessed of a Towne-howse & howse-Lott containyng by estima^on three acres be it more or lesse which howse-lott on the North side thereof abutteth vpon the meeting-howse greene vpon the North east end thereof it abutteth vpon the howse lott of william white vpon the south east side thereof it abutteth vpon Ipswich River & william fullers Lott and vpon the south west end thereof it abutteth vpon the highway leading to the meeting-howse which howse lott first mentioned the Towne of Ipswich viz: the freemen thereof granted to Henry Sewall the elder gent to have & to hold the same with the app^tn^{es} to him the said Henry Sewall his heires & assignes for ever. which said howse-Lott the said Henry Sewall sould with the app^tn^{es} to the said Samuel Symonds by his Deed bearing Date the sixt day of the first month Anno Dñi 1637.*

The Date of giving out these coppies is the xvith day of December Anno Dñi 1645./

by vs selected herevnto according to order of Court/

RICHARD SALTONSTALL	THOMAS ROWLINGSON. Constable/
DANIEL DENISON	JOHN GAGE Lott-layer/
SAMUELL APPLETON/	

* I feel sure that this is a mistake for 1638.

proveth in quantity much vnder forty acres) and the said ground abutteth as followeth viz: that side thereof towards the west abutteth vpon the land nowe of Thomas Bishop, part vpon the land of Thomas wells part vpon the land of Mathias Button & part vpon the marsh ground of the widdow Lumpkyn and the rest vpon the marshes belonging to Castle-hill & the marshes belonging to the other hills called the Ilands now the lands of the said Samuel Symonds./

Item the said Samuel Symonds is possessed of a farme called Argilla containyng by estima^on three hundred & Twenty acres (with the addi^ons aforesaid) be it more or lesse, as it is now geⁿally fenced round; and it lyeth vpon & beyonde the Creek called Labour in wayne Creeke towards the south in a place formerly called Chebaccoe; which farme was granted by the freemen of the Towne of Ipswich (divers yeares since) to John winthrop the yonger, Esqr. To have & to hold the pmisses with the app^tn^{es} to him the said John winthrop his heires & assignes for ever: which said farme the said John winthrop sould to the said Samuel Symonds by his deede bearing date the eight day of 12th month Anno Dñi 1637./

Item the said Samuel Symonds is possessed of a pcell of ground containyng by estima^on one acre & a halfe be it more or lesse abutting on the east side thereof vpon the lower end of m^r William Hubbards Close before his Towne-howse & the rest of the said pcell of ground is surrounded with high-ways which said pcell of ground was part of m^r John winthrops six acre

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

81

10 December, 1642, the town of Ipswich passed this vote:—

"Granted to m^r Samuel Symonds that his farme consisting of 500 acres of ground which lyeth towards the west side of the Towne (& is Comonly called Ollivers) shall or may (for the prop use of the farme) be constantly supplied with Timber & fire wood, off the Comons. To injoye to him his heires & Assignes."

On 1 January, 1645, he bought of his brother-in-law Winthrop the estate call^d Castle-Hill, which the town of Ipswich had granted to Winthrop in 1636. Symonds had to prove his title at a trial in 1647, and the trouble he had is told in a letter to Winthrop, printed by the Massachusetts Historical Society in the volume before quoted. The General Court of Massachusetts made him many large grants of land, as follows: 1648, five hundred acres of land in the Pequot country. 1651, three hundred acres "beyond the River of Merremacke, . . . with free liberty for timber, provided he sett up a sawe mille there wth in the space of seven yeeres." 1653, five hundred acres, in reference to his "service donne for the countrie at Yorke, Kittery, &c." 1657, he was allowed to take three hundred acres on this side of the Connecticut River in

exchange for part of his former grants. 1658, in right of these grants he took possession of six hundred and forty acres on Lamper Elele River, between Dover and Exeter. 1659, he is desired to take land in some other place instead of on the Connecticut, as before granted, but the same year he was granted one hundred and sixty acres on that river above Northampton. 1659, he was also granted any island in Casco Bay not exceeding five hundred acres, as a recompense for services done. 1660, in consideration of the resignation of his three hundred acres on the Connecticut, he was granted one hundred in another part, additional, probably, to the one hundred and sixty. 1661, he was allowed to change the grants of an island of five hundred acres and of one hundred and sixty acres at Northwotocke for eight hundred to be laid out in one or two places.* 1662, five hundred acres were laid out for him "in the wilderness on the north of Merrimacke River, . . . at the mouth of Concord Ryver, upon a brooke called by the Indians Pophessgosquockegg." 1664, in obedience to former

* This land had not been laid out in 1716, when Cyprian and Dorothy Whipple and Elizabeth Allyn petitioned the General Court for a Committee to lay it out, which the Court in 1717 gave them leave to do.

grants, three hundred acres were laid out for him at Assibath Plaine, between Concord and Lancaster. 1666, he was granted two hundred and fifty acres, which were laid out near the former grant on Lamperlele River.

Samuel Symonds left a will with three codicils, here printed, which caused long litigation. His son William, whom he appointed executor, died intestate 22 May, 1679, when the General Court appointed Daniel Epps, Harlakenden, Symonds, and Richard Martin, administrators; a final settlement of the estate was not made till 1694. The case came often before the General Court, as may be read in the fifth volume of the Records of Massachusetts. The inventory is recorded as £2103 6s. 10d. Many petitions and other papers relating to the case may be seen among the records at the State House, Boston, and at Salem; I have not thought worth while to take particular notice of them here.

Samuel Symonds had certainly these sixteen children:—

- I. Richard,⁹ born at Toppesfield, Essex, in 1618, was a student in Grey's Inn, and left in England by his father; I presume he died a few years later, as he is not mentioned in letters.

- II. Dorothy,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1619, married, probably about 1648, Rev. Thomas Harrison, who had been in Virginia as Chaplain to the Governor, was afterwards a short time in Massachusetts, but returned to England, and, in 1653, was of St. Dunstan's in the East, London; he was afterwards of Dublin, of Chester, and again of Dublin, where he died. I think his wife was dead in 1657; certainly she died before her father.
- III. Jane,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1621, living in 1634, but probably died a few years later.
- IV. Anne,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1622, died there in 1634.
- V. Samuel,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1623, died there the same year.
- VI. Elizabeth,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1624, married at Ipswich 20 May, 1644, her step-brother Daniel Epps, to whom she bore several children, and died 7 May, 1685; her husband died 8 January, 1693.
- VII. Samuel,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1625, died unmarried at Ipswich in 1653; in his will he mentioned his brothers Harlakenden, John, William, and Samuel, and his sisters Martha, Ruth, Priscilla, and Mary Epps.
- VIII. Harlakenden,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1627, lived at Gloucester, Mass., and became Freeman of the Col-

ony 3 May, 1665; married Elizabeth Day, granddaughter, by her first husband, William Story, of Sarah, wife of Rev. John Cotton; he visited England in 1672, but returned the next year, and is thus mentioned in a letter from Samuel Epps to Fitz-John Winthrop, written at Boston 5 December, 1673. (Collections of Mass. Hist. Soc., 3d Series, Vol. X.) "Uncle Lack is come over in his own person as little varying from himself as most that have travelled the world as he hath done, hath as high an apprehension of his own prowess valour activity, ingenuity understanding, wit and memory as any in old or New England can have of him; he saith he went out with nothing, spent 100th there, and is 100th better then when he left New England; his relations have sent him over to lay in for an heir (to bear the name of John) to possesse the inheritance." He was living at Ipswich in 1695, and died in 1697. He left an only daughter and heir Sarah,¹⁰ born at Gloucester 2 July, 1668, who married about 1692 Thomas Low of that place. His widow died there 31 January, 1728 or 29, aged 90.

- IX. John,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1628, seems to have been but little in this country, and was in England in 1653; he probably died within a few years from that date.

- X. Robert,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1629, died there in 1630.
- XI. William,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1632, lived some time at Wells, now in Maine, from which he was Deputy to the General Court of 3 May, 1676, and in 1677 and 1678 was one of the persons chosen to be associates with the Magistrates in keeping the County Courts for Yorkshire. Before and after this he lived at Ipswich, where he married Mary, daughter of Jonathan Wade of that town; he died there 22 May, 1679, leaving four daughters and coheirs.
- I. Susanna,¹⁰ born at Ipswich 3 January, 1669, married there 18 December, 1690, Joseph Jacob, who died in 1697.
- II. Dorothy,¹⁰ born at Ipswich 21 October, 1670, married there 19 December, 1695, Cyprian Whipple, who moved to Stonington, Connecticut, about 1708.
- III. Mary,¹⁰ born at Ipswich 6 January, 1674, married there 10 December, 1697, Joseph Whipple, who died 11 May, 1699; she died 20 June, 1703.
- IV. Elizabeth,¹⁰ born at Ipswich 20 July, 1678, married — Allyn.
- His widow died probably in 1693 or 94.
- XII. Roger,⁹ born at Toppesfield in 1633, died there in 1634.

88

Ancestry of Priscilla Baker.

It is seen that Samuel Symonds had no grandsons of the family name, which of course soon became extinct in this country. It was, however, given in baptism in the families of Eppes, Low, and Baker, perhaps in others; but I cannot say how long it continued in use. The descendants of Harlakenden and William are, of course, entitled to quarter the arms of Symonds: that is, provided they have arms of their own, with which to quarter them.



By his second wife:—

- XIII. Martha,⁹ born probably at Ipswich, married John Denison, who died 9 January, 1671, leaving children she married secondly Richard Martyn of Portsmouth New Hampshire, and died in February, 1684, having also had children by her second husband, who died 2 April, 1694.
- XIV. Ruth,⁹ born probably at Ipswich, married in 1659 Rev. John Eperson of Gloucester, who died 2 December 1700; she died 23 February, 1702, leaving several children.
- XV. Samuel,⁹ born probably at Ipswich, graduated at Harvard College in 1663, and died unmarried in 1669; in his will written 18 December, 1668, being then about to make a voyage for England, he mentioned his sisters Elizabeth Epps, Martha Denison, Ruth Emerson, Mary Duncan, and Priscilla Symonds.
- XVI. Priscilla,⁹ born at Ipswich in 1648, being undoubtedly the child mentioned by Governor Winthrop in a letter to his son of 30 September in that year: "Your sister Symonds is delivered of a daughter;" married at Topsfield 26 March, 1672, Thomas Baker of that place, who died there 18 March, 1718; she died at Ipswich 2 January, 1734. (See p. 13.)



WILL OF SAMUEL SYMONDS.

I SAMUEL SYMONDS of Ipswich in New England gent, being desirous by setting these things in order now in tyme of my health that I may be the more free (if god please) when death approacheth to leave this world, & to attende the matters of my soule, & the blessed hopes for life to come, doe make, & ordayne this my last will, & testament, in manner & forme following, viz: first I comend my soule into the handes of Jesus Christ my euer blessed Saviour, in hope of a joyfull resurrecon, & meeting of my body at the last day w^h I leave to be decently Buried (without any vayne pompe) and my fuñall expences & debts to be paid, & discharged. Item my will is that all the estate of my deare wife Rebeckah Symonds, be returned to her in kinde, to her owne pp use to have & to hold the same to her, her heires & assigns for ever: viz: the lande at Salisbury, being six acres of meadow, now in the tenure of Henry Browne Sen^r and the seaventy acres of vpland at Salisbury new-towne, now called Amesbury.

Alsoe sixty two pounds twelve shillings of New England mony, which I received of M^r Clarke Ironmonger of Boston, whereof there is now in M^r Russells hande, as Treasurer of this country fifty pounds, and twelve pounds twelve shillings in my owne handes. Also the cattell, for numb, & kinde, with all other particulars of estate & howshold stuff, & goods, as they are exprest in a note of particulars bearing date the last day of Novemb Anno Domⁱ 1669 vnder my hande & seale; alsoe what is impaired, or lost of the very things in the said note of particulars, are to be made good, according to her owne word & Judgment. Item I give to my wife a good breeding mare, or one of my riding horses which she shall chuse. Item I give to my wife two milch yonge cowes, Beside the three expressed in the saide note of particulars. Alsoe I give, or leave to my wife (insteade of Dower) twelve pounds p^a annⁱ to be paid to her, or her assignes, out of my farme called Argilla, during her naturall life, in two severall payments viz: six pounds on the 25th day of March, & the other six pounds on the last day of Septemb yearly: this payment to be made in wheate 40^s, mault four pounds at the price current amongsts the merchants of Ipswich, and the other six pounds to be paid in porke, & indian corne, accordingly and to be paid where she appoynt in Ipswich. Alsoe my will & meaning is that my wife shall have the sole vse of part of my dwelling howse at Argilla viz: The east end of it with free liberty of ingresse, egresse, & regresse into the said part of my howse, as alsoe the vse in com^on of the

(92)

my wife Rebeckah, being due by her right in England shalbe hers, & at her owne disposing. Provided alwayse that if my wife shall chuse rather to leave Argilla, & live elsewhere signifying her desire soe to Doe vnder her hande in writing, during her absence from Argilla, then she shall have her 12th allowed in stead of Dower made twenty pounds p^a annⁱ, to be paid in manⁿi & quality as in her foresaide Dower: For which eight pounds being added to her Dower she shall abate all these p^articulars following viz: The keeping of six neat cattell, ten sheep, horse, attendance of the servants, requiering of horse meat for frends, bringing of wood to the dore, vseing of ground for gardening and the vse of the howses, except one roome which she shall chuse for her owne vse during her naturall life, with free ingresse, egresse, & regresse. Provided alwayse that when she thinks meete to returne, & live at Argilla againe, she shall have liberty soe to doe; expressing her minde in writing Things shalbe as aforesaide for her more comfortable being there, and the eight pounds added to her dower aforesaid is to be abated againe. Moreover I binde my farme called Argilla for the due payments of what is in this my will exprest.

Item: I give to my sonne Harlakinden Symonds all my part of my farme at Lampele River, with the sawing mill there vpon erected with all the vtenses, & app^atunacs therevnto belonging, with all my part of the howses therevnto app^atyning. And alsoe one half of my part of the meadow, & vpland lately laid out to me, which the hon^d gen^all Court latly granted to me,

kitchin or hall, Seller, dayry, back howse, brewhowse or other places to the said howse belonging during her naturall life. Alsoe my will is that wife shall keepe or have liberty soe to doe, vpon my farme during her naturall life six neate cattell, 10 sheep, & one horse, to be p^avided for, all of the cattell both summer & winter at the care, & charge of my executor: alsoe my wife shall com^and attendance of the servants of my executor for her selfe & creatures, & she may as she please require horse meate, & attendants for her frends, that come to vizit her; from tyme to tyme, at the charge of my executor. Alsoe my minde is that all the wood she please to spende shall be brought out of my farme to her dore, ready cutt out for her fire at the charge of my executor from yeare to yeare. Alsoe she shall have liberty to make vse of my Towne howse in com^on with my children, as formerly. Alsoe my wife shall have liberty to keep what foules she please at my farme of Argilla. Also my wife shall have liberty to take what apples, pearces & plumes for her vse, & to take what ground she please, for her gardan. All which liberties & priviledges she shall have during her naturall life, with free liberty of water at the well, & elsewhere vpon my farme. Provided alwayse, & it is intended, that vpon my wife her acceptance of these things before mentioed, she shall relinquish the agreement made betwene me & her before marriage, & stande onely to this my last will & testament; moreover my will is that whatsoever rent, debts, & estate is due to me at the tyme of my death, by reason of marriag wh

(93)

lying beyond the Bounds of Dover; & mostly out of the Bounds of Exiter. And alsoe all my liberty in the landes of Dover, which I lately purchased of Robert Wadley wth all its singular priviledges & app^atunacs. To have & to hold the p^amisses to him the said Harlakinden during his naturall life, and to the heires of his body lawfully begotten male or female, and for want of such heires, to remayne to the said Harlakinden & his heires forever.

Item I give to my sonne Harlakinden my great silver salt seller, and my best suit of apparrell both linen, & wollen. Item I give to my granddaughter Sarah Symonds all that pcell of lande lying in Coxall, which remayneth of that I had of her father it being three hundred acres be it more, or lesse.

Item I give to my sonne, & daughter Epps, one hundred pounds p^aro^mised before marriage to be paid within one yeare, or two, after my decease, and if she still desire to have the sute of damask, which was the lady Cheynies her grandmother, let her have it upon apprizment. Item wheras I p^amissed to give my daughter Martha one hundred pounds, as a porcion vpon marriage with her husbände m^r John Denison, it being desired by the major & herself soe to doe, according to the bonde I entered into I doe by this my last will confirme the same. Item I give to my sonne & daughter Em^aerson four score pounds haveing given them 20th at the least soone after her marriage to be paid within one yeare or two after my decease. Item I give to my daughter Baker, having paid my sonne Baker Thirty

pounds already Three skore & teñ pounds to be paid within one, or two yeare after my decease. Item I give to my daughter Dunkin * twenty shillings.

Item I give to my daughter Hale † twenty shillings. Item I give to my sonne Chewte ‡ Twenty shillings. Item I give to the Reverend Mr Cobbett our Pastor forty shillings. Item I give to my wives granddaughter one Cow viz : Rebeckah Stacy, because of her diligent attendance on me. Item I give to my deare wife my fether bed & boulder which we vsually lye vpon. My mind, & meaning is that the legacies here given to my children shalbe paid not in mony nor according to mony, but in such pay, as they vsually passe, from man, to man, which is called the Currant price. And I doe make, & ordayne my sonne William Symonds to be my executor of this my last will, & testament. And considering there are many payments to be made, & discharged by my executor, I doe give, & bequeath to him my said sonne William Symonds all my howses & lands in Ipswich with all my comonages, & priviledges therevnto belonging.

Item I give to my sonne William Symonds, (having ingaged to him before the writing of this my will soe much) half of my

* Peter Duncan married Mary Eppes, daughter of his second wife by a former husband.

† Rev. John Hale married Rebecca Byley, daughter of his third wife by her first husband.

‡ James Chute probably married Elizabeth Eppes, sister of Mary Duncan.

A codicil testamentary to the last will & testament of Samuel Symonds gent which will beareth date the sixteenth of February Anno Dom̃ 1673.

Whereas in that my will I bequeathed to my sonne Harlakinden Symonds all my part of my farme at Lamperle River with the Sawinge Mill therevpon erected with all the vtenses & app'tunācs therevnto belonging, with all my part of the howses therevnto belonging, and alsoe one half of all my part of the meadow & vpland lately laid out to me which the hon^d Gen^{all} Court lastly granted to me, lyinge beyonnd the Bounds of Dover & mostly beyonnd the Bounds of Exiter; and alsoe all my liberty in the lands of Dover, which I lately purchased of Robert Wadley with all its singular priviledges & appurtenances. To have & to hold the p'misses to him the said Harlakinden during his naturall life, and to the heires of his body lawfully begotten, male or female and for want of such heires to remayne to the saide Harlakinden & his heires for ever: Now therefore I doe hereby disanull & revoke all this my gift to my sonne Harlakinden as for terme of his naturall life and doe give him all the p'misses to have & to hold the same together with all & singular its app'tunācs to him the said Harlakinden Symonds & his heires & assignes for ever. Alsoe whereas I bequeathed in my will to my sonne Harlakin Symonds my fourth part of the sawing mill at Lampeelee River with all its priviledges & app'tunācs the providence of god hath soe ordered it that the mill itself hath bene fired & wholly consumed by the

meadowe, & vpland ground, which lieth beyond my farme at lamperle River, beyond the Bounds of Dover, & mostly out of the bounds of Exiter, together with all the priviledges, & app'tunācs therevnto belonging. Also my will & desire is that my loving frends, Captaine John Appleton, & Levetenant Samucl Appleton, & my sonne John Hale, to be overseers of this my last will & Testament. My request is that the advice, & counsell of my said overseers, be indeayoured to be taken about my executors arduous concernments, that soe love & concord may continew, & be increased amongst those I leave behinde me.

In wittnesse that this is my last will & Testament, I have herevnto sett my hande & seale, the sixteenth day of February Anno Dom̃ 1673./

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

Subscribed, sealed, delivered,
& published, in the p'sence of vs./

HENRY ARCHER

JOHN GREAVES

The *W* marke of

EDWARD BRAGG

enymy and soe made vnprofitable for the p'sent; and considering that my sonne William Symonds who is my executor is in my debt for rent for my said mill more then the building & finishing the fourth part of the said mill will cost. My will is that when the rest of the owners doe rebuild & finish the saide mill that then this my fourth part soe bequeathed be alsoe carried on to the finishing of the same at the onely cost & charges of my sonne William Symonds for the onely vse of my sonne Harlakinden Symonds. Alsoe considering what lands I formerly have given to my sonne, Harlakinden, and that I highly esteeme this at Lampeelee River. My advice & desire now is that he doth not sell, or putt it away, or any part of it vnlesse extreame necessity compell and that he doth what he doth in reference to the mill &c with very good advice. And though I have gained very little by it, yet if he can waite, & poure honest dealing workmen, he will finde sufficient recompence for his waiting, for there is store of timber, with that which is added to it from Dover, & the meadow &c the Court gave me vp into the country. In wittnesse whereof I have herevnto sett my hande & seale the thirteenth day of January 1676.

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

Subscribed, Sealed, delivered,
& published in the p'sence of vs./

WILLIAM GOODHUE Sen

the mark of

WILLIAM W. SMYTH Jun

A codicil testamentary which is added to the codicil bearing date the 13th day of february 1676, which refereth to my last will & Testament dated 16th of February 1673.

I Samuel Symonds being in good health of body & of good vnderstanding (blessed be god) thought good to add by this codicil annexed to the former bearing date as above. I say some considerations moving me therevnto I give to my sonne Harlakinden five pounds (in comon pay) p an^o during his naturall life, to be paide by my executor: Provided that if in the life tyme of my sonne Harlakinden my loving brother Mr Richard Fitts Symonds decease in the interim, and be Bountifull to my sonne Harlakinden (which I beleive he will) and bequenth to him more then the value of five pounds p an^o; Then my will & minde is, that this five pounds shall cease: and that my executor thenceforth be wholly free from the payment thereof. In wittnesse whereof I have herevnto sett my hande & Seale dated November the eighth day 1677.

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

Subscribed sealed & delivered, & published in the p'sence of vs

JOHN WOOD.

JOHN WOODIN

MARTHA GRAVES.

This third codicill testamentary I Samuell Symonds doe now add to the former, which refereth to my will dated 16th day of February 1673. The occasion & reason of my soe doing is because I mistooke in my date of my last codicill viz: I dated it 13th day of February 1676, which should have bene January 1676. Alsoe whereas I have mentioned in my will 100^l to my daughter Martha Its onely named I doe not thereby give it, for I have given my bond for it, soe that mention is voide. The reason why I make these codicills is to spare writinge being longe.

Dated January 8th 1677.

SAMUEL SYMONDS.

Sealed, subscribed & deliud in the p'sence of vs

The m^{rk} of + EDWARD BRAG

TIMOTHY BRAG

Proved at Ipswich 6 November 1678.

AGREEMENT OF SYMONDS FAMILY.

Articles of Agreement Indented made and agreed upon this April 10: Anno Domj: 1694. Between Harlackinden Symonds of Ipswich in New England; John Emerson & his wife Ruth Emerson of Gloucester in New England: Thomas Baker & his wife Priscilla Baker of Topsfield in New England, Daniel Epes

*Note - from page 70.

The year she died, ^{John Emerson} Samuel Symonds said his second wife, our ancestress Martha (Reed) (Epes) Symonds was "very crazy." She was in the throes of a fatal illness, which certainly could have effected her mind. However, language changes over the years. In 1662 there was a second definition of the word "sick" which also meant "in such severe pain that one is incapacitated." Our poor many-great grandma must have suffered terribly!

The American Genealogist

founded 1922 by Donald Lines Jacobus

April 1995

EDITORS

DAVID L. GREENE, Ph.D., C.G., F.A.S.G., Demorest, Georgia
ROBERT CHARLES ANDERSON, C.G., F.A.S.G., Derry, New Hampshire

MANAGING EDITOR

A. JANE McFERRIN, Ed.D., Cleveland, Georgia

CONTRIBUTING EDITORS

JEROME E. ANDERSON, A.M., Boston, Massachusetts
DAVID CURTIS DEARBORN, F.A.S.G., Brookline, Massachusetts
JANE FLETCHER FISKE, F.A.S.G., Boxford, Massachusetts
CHARLES M. HANSEN, F.A.S.G., Sausalito, California
GALE ION HARRIS, Ph.D., F.A.S.G., East Lansing, Michigan
NORMAN W. INGHAM, Ph.D., C.G., Granby, Massachusetts
HENRY B. HOFF, C.G., F.A.S.G., New York, New York
MYRTLE STEVENS HYDE, F.A.S.G., Ogden, Utah
ROGER D. JOSLYN, C.G., F.A.S.G., New Windsor, New York
JOHN PLUMMER, Waterbury, Connecticut
JAMES A. RASMUSSEN, C.G., F.A.S.G., La Jolla, California
MARSHA HOFFMAN RISING, C.G., F.A.S.G., Springfield, Missouri
DONNA VALLEY RUSSELL, C.G., F.A.S.G., Middletown, Maryland
KIP SPERRY, C.G., F.A.S.G., Orem, Utah
ROBERT S. WAKEFIELD, F.A.S.G., Redwood City, California

Back Issues – See insert in the January issue, or send a self-addressed, stamped envelope for list.

Indexed in *Genealogical Periodical Annual Index* and *Persi*, and microfilmed by University Microfilms International, Ann Arbor, Michigan.

The American Genealogist [TAG] (ISSN 0002-8592) is published quarterly by David L. Greene, P.O. Box 398, Demorest GA 30535-0398. \$25.00 (US) a volume (four issues), \$48.00 (US) for two volumes, \$70.00 (US) for three volumes; single issues \$7.00.

All books for review, correspondence, manuscripts, address changes, requests for permission to reprint, and subscriptions should be sent to the Demorest address below. Second Class postage paid at Cleveland GA and at additional mailing offices.

Copyright © 1995 by David L. Greene.

POSTMASTER: Please send all address changes to:

The American Genealogist, P.O. Box 398, Demorest, GA 30535-0398.

The American Genealogist

Whole Number 278

Vol. 70, No. 2

April 1995

JOHN¹ PLUMB OF CONNECTICUT AND HIS COUSIN, DEPUTY GOVERNOR SAMUEL¹ SYMONDS OF MASSACHUSETTS

Additions to Their English Ancestry

By Clifford L. Stott

The English ancestry of John¹ Plumb of Wethersfield and Branford, Connecticut, was set forth by H.B. Plumb in *The Plumbs, 1635-1800* (2d ed. [Perly, Pa., 1893]).^[1] His parents were identified as Robert^A Plumb (Robert^B, John^C) and Grace (Crackbone); the Plumbs were a visitation family of Great Yeldham, Essex. Plumb used the 1634 Visitation of Essex to show that Grace was the daughter of Robert Crackbone and that Robert^B Plumb, grandfather of the emigrant, married Elizabeth Purcas. Recent research has added to our knowledge of the Plumb family and extended the lines of Crackbone and Purcas. Some of this information will also be of interest to the descendants of Samuel¹ Symonds of Ipswich, Massachusetts, whose mother Elizabeth^A was a daughter of Robert^B and Elizabeth (Purcas) Plumb.

PLUMB

While this section does not extend the Plumb pedigree, it contains new information concerning the families of Robert^A and Robert^B. Most of the chil-

^[1] Additional material on this family is found in Ernest Flagg's *Genealogical Notes on the Founding of New England* . . . ([Hartford, 1926], 209, 337-39). Flagg's material is based largely on the work of H.B. Plumb but includes details from other published sources.

After this article was completed, it was learned that John A. Brayton included significant Plumb-Purcas material in his excellent *Ancestry of Tennessee Williams* ([Winston-Salem, N.C., "1993" (i.e., 1995)], 317-24). The present account goes into considerably more detail than does Mr. Brayton's, and it reaches several different conclusions. Readers, however, will want to consult both discussions.

dren of Robert^A Plumb and Grace (Crackbone) are recorded in the parish registers of Great Yeldham, Essex. However, the marriage of Robert and Grace and the baptisms of the eldest children are not found in this parish. From clues in the International Genealogical Index [IGI], the family was traced to the parish of East Hanningfield, Essex, where the following entries were found in the parish register (Family History Library [FHL], Salt Lake City, film #1,472,340, item 6):

Marriages:

14 Dec. 1583 1584 [*sic*] Robert Plumb and Grace Crackbone

Baptisms:

29 March 1584	Mary Plumb, dau. of Robert
20 May 1586	Robert Plumbe, son of Robert
14 July 1588	Mary Plumb, dau. of Robert
18 Oct. 1590	Thomas Plumb

Burials:

4 April 1584	Mary Plumb, wife of Robert
15 May 1585	Mary Plumb, dau. of Robert

These entries document the marriage of Robert^A and the baptisms of his first three children by his wife Grace Crackbone. Robert (baptized 1586) is mentioned in the 1634 Visitation of Essex (Harl. Soc., 13[London, 1879]:470). Mary and Thomas were already known because their burials are recorded in the registers of Great Yeldham on 30 November 1599 and 7 October 1599, respectively. The above christenings and burials also make it clear that Robert had an earlier wife Mary, who was buried on 4 April 1584, and a daughter Mary from this marriage, who was baptized on 29 March 1584 and buried on 15 May 1585. This agrees with Philip Morant, *History and Antiquities of the County of Essex* (2 vols. [London, 1760–68], hereafter Morant's *Essex*, 2:301): "Robert Plumme Esq; married two wives, and by the first, had only a daughter."

No will has been found for Robert^A Plumb, but he died at Great Yeldham on 14 August 1628, as shown by his inquisition *post mortem* [i.p.m.] (Public Record Office [PRO], C142/738). His property included the manors of Spaynes and Butlers in Great Yeldham and other messuages and tenements in the parishes of Great Yeldham, Little Yeldham, Castle Hedingham, and Toppesfield. Robert's son Robert, age forty, was heir to the estate. His age is a reasonably good age match with that of the Robert Plumb baptized at East Hanningfield on 20 May 1586. The i.p.m. also shows that the wife of Robert Jr. was Frances Gawsell, daughter of Thomas Gawsell. In a transcript of the parish register of Cowlinge, Suffolk, is found the following marriage entry (FHL film #993,238, item 9):

Robert Plume, Gent. and Mrs. Frances Gawtell [*sic* in transcript], 14 January 1616

Marriage records for two of the brothers of Robert^A Plumb were also located. Morant's *Essex* (2:300) indicates that Thomas, second son of Robert^B Plumb, was seated at Yeldham Hall, Essex, and married Mary Hammond of Ellingham, Norfolk. The 1634 Visitation of Essex calls her a daughter of Richard Hammond. A parish register transcript of Ellingham contains the following (FHL film #887,893, item 3):

Thomas Plome and Mary Hamond married 2 October 1588

Edmond Plumb, youngest son of Robert^B, was called the husband of "... Heron" by Morant's *Essex* (2:300). He was seated at Hawkedon-Hall, Suffolk. The Visitation of Suffolk, 1664–68, shows that Edmund Plume of Hawkedon-Hall was married to Elizabeth, daughter of William Heron of Tibbenham, Norfolk (Harl. Soc., 61[London, 1910]:180). Tibbenham parish registers include the following (FHL film #1,472,781, item 6):

Thomas Plume & Elizabeth Herne married 27 August 1593

Thomas is apparently a clerical error for *Edmund*. No other Plumb entries were found in the Tibbenham registers. The Candler Manuscript (fo. 43) also identifies Elizabeth Herne, daughter of William Herne of Tibbenham, as the wife of Edmund Plumme of Hawkedon-Hall. The Rev. Matthias Candler of Codenham, Suffolk, appears to have been acquainted with the family of Edmund Plumb when he wrote in 1660. (The original manuscript is in the British Library; transcribed copies are available in the Family History Library in Salt Lake City [call no. 942.6 D2c] and elsewhere.) Edmund Plumb died between 1 July 1642 and 19 June 1643, the dates of the execution and probate of his will (Archdeaconry Court of Sudbury, reg. wills, 55:15 [FHL film #97,089]).

CRACKBONE

Grace Crackbone, the wife of Robert^A Plumb of East Hanningfield and Great Yeldham, was buried in the latter parish on 22 July 1615. An inquisition *post mortem* examined her estate on 2 January, 4 Chas. [1628], the same date as that of her husband Robert (PRO, C142/445). The document shows that Grace died on 21 July 1615, possessed of the manor of Takely Grange and lands in Broxted, Mountfitchett, and Hatfield Broadoak. Her son Robert, age twenty-eight, received the manor of Takely Grange.

Morant's *Essex* (2:573) demonstrates that the manor Takely Grange,

consisting of five messuages and two cottages, came into the Crackbone family in 1566, when Thomas Crackbone received it from Ralph Wiseman. Thomas died on 23 June 1593, and Robert Crackbone, his brother and heir, succeeded to the manor. From Robert it descended to his daughter Grace, wife of Robert Plumb. The i.p.m. of Thomas Crackbone, dated 19 October, 35 Eliz. [1593], confirms that all of Robert's lands were inherited from his brother, who had died on 3 June 1593 (PRO, C142/236).

No probate record has been found for Robert Crackbone, but his i.p.m., dated 4 October, 41 Eliz. [1599], shows that he died on 14 August 1599, seized of Takely Grange and lands in Broxted, Stansted Mountfitchett, Hatfield Broadoak, and elsewhere. Grace, wife of Robert Plume, was his only daughter and heir. She was said to be age thirty-five years and more. (PRO, C142/279.) Hence, Grace was born about 1564.

The inquisitions cited above do not indicate the place of residence or death of either Robert Crackbone or his brother Thomas. And no wills have been located for either. However, a Robert Crackbone/Cragbone of Terling, Essex, appears frequently as a supervisor, overseer, witness, etc., in the wills of several other Essex testators between 1570 and 1592 (F.G. Emmison, ed., *Essex Wills*, 2[Boston, Mass., 1983]:217, 3[Boston, 1986]:336, 4[Chelmsford, Essex, England, 1987]:151, 6[Chelmsford, 1991]:141, 160-61, 7[Chelmsford, 1990]:91). From the positions of trust placed upon him, it would seem that Robert Crackbone was a man held in high esteem in Terling.

The parish registers of Terling were searched by the staff of the Essex Record Office at Chelmsford and supplemented with a transcript of the parish register made by Charles R. Strutt. The following Crackbone/Cragbone and related entries were found:

Bp.	7 May 1564	Grace Cragbone, dau. of Robert
Mar.	1 Feb. 1562/[3]	Robert Cragbone of Whyte Notley to Avice Hare, widow
Mar.	22 Oct. 1542	John Hare to Avice Bret
Bur.	12 May 1567	Margaret, a poore woman who for a certain tyme lay sick in Robert Cragbones Barne & there dyed
Bur.	12 Jan. 1562 [1561/2]	John Hare of Skarletts, householder
Bur.	5 Nov. 1591	Avice Cragbone, wife of Robert
Bur.	15 Aug. 1599	Robert Cragbone, householder

The conclusions are obvious. The Robert Cragbone buried at Terling on 15 August 1599 is identical with the Robert Crackbone of the i.p.m., who died the previous day. His daughter Grace, baptized 7 May 1564, is the wife of Robert^A Plumb mentioned in the i.p.m. Grace was twenty years old when she married Robert Plumb at East Hanningfield on 14 December 1584.

Robert Crackbone married rather late in life. At the time of his marriage, his wife Avice was a widow and had married her first husband, John Hare,

more than twenty years earlier. The following children of John Hare were baptized and buried at Terling:

Baptisms:

15 Dec. 1538	Robert, son of John Hare
22 April 1540	Elizabeth, dau. of John Hare & Elinor
14 April 1542	Margery, dau. of John Hare & Elyn
2 Sept. 1543	John, son of John and Avice Hare
8 Dec. 1544	John, son of John and Elyn Hare
27 Oct. 1547	William, son of John Hare
9 Dec. 1547	Elizabeth, dau. of John Hayre
5 Jan. 1550	Margaret, dau. of John Hayre of the Greene
2 March 1550 [1549/50]	John, son of John Hayre of Skarlets
19 April 1552	John, son of John Hare of the Green
28 Sept. 1552	Robert, son of John Hare
12 May 1555	Ann, dau. of John Hare of Skarlets

Burials:

19 April 1552	John, son of John Hare of the Green
1 June 1558	Elizabeth, dau. of John Hare
28 Nov. 1571	Robert, son of John Hare of Skarletts
8 Jan. 1586 [1585/6]	Ellen Hare, wife of John

There were clearly two or more John Hares having children at Terling at approximately the same time. Nevertheless, it is known that the husband of Avice was residing at "Skarlets" at the time of his death. With this information, we suggest that John and Avice were the parents of John (1543), John (1550), Robert (1552), and Ann (1555).

The parents of the two children baptized in 1547 cannot be determined from the christening entries alone, but the will of John Hare, the Elder, of Terling resolves the matter. John made his will on 10 January 1561/2. To his wife Avice, he bequeathed his tenement in Terling called "Sparrowes." His children were listed as John, Robert, Elizabeth, and Agnes (interchangeable with *Ann*), all under twenty-one. The document also alludes to the will of his father Robert Hare, dated 1550. Richard Brett, no doubt a relative of Avice, was a witness to John's will. (Archdeaconry Court of Essex, reg. wills, Lupton 144 [FHL film #91,213].)

The will of Nicholas Hawes of Terling, glover, dated 4 July 1598, calls Robert Crackbone "father-in-law." The Archdeaconry Court of Colchester, orig. wills, Box 3, #198 [FHL film #150,500]. This relationship is explained by the following marriage at Terling:

Nicholas Hawes and Agnes Hare married 26 September 1580

Clearly, this was the marriage of Robert Crackbone's stepdaughter Ann/Agnes (baptized 12 May 1555) to Nicholas Hawes. The marriage record of

Robert Crackbone to Avice (Brett) Hare indicates that Robert was of the parish of White Notley, three miles north of Terling. The parish registers of White Notley begin in 1538. The following Crackbone/Cragbone entries were found in a transcript of the parish register, 1538–1590 (FHL film #962,530):

Bp.	4 Feb. 1539/40]	John, son of Thomas Cragbone
Bur.	25 Feb. 1556/7]	Thomas Crackbone
Bur.	8 Feb. 1558/9]	Felyce Cragbone, widow

In all probability, Robert Crackbone was born prior to the commencement of the parish register, as his wife Avice was of marriageable age in 1542.

No will was found for Thomas Crackbone, but the will of Felis^[2] Crackbone, widow, of White Notley, was located (Court of the Bishop of London's Commissary, Essex & Herts. div., orig. wills, Box 8, #296 [FHL film #940,350]):

In the name of God Amen the fyfth day of february An^o Dm 1558/9?]. I Felyce Cragbone wydow of the p[ar]ysh of Whyte Notley in the Countie of Essex and of the dioces of London beyng in good & p[er]fect Reme[m]brance do ordayne & make my last wyll & testament in forme & man^r folowyng. . . . I wyll my body to be buried in the church yard of Whyt Notley. Item I wyll to be distributed at my buriall bread cheese & drynke at the dystretion [scribal error for *discretion*?] of my sonnes. Item I will to Ryc Spon^r, to Willm Clay, to Willm May, to Thomas Sowbert, to Robert Pratt a pecke of malt to ev^{ry} one of them. Item I forgeve to Christoph^r Stokes a bushell of pesyn [plural of *pease*] that he hath alrede. Item I geve & wyll to my son Thom^s Cragbone a lytell hutche [i.e., a clothes chest], ij platers[,] ij pewter dyshes, ij saucers[,] the best ca[n]delstyk[,] a salt seler, & fyve shepe. Item I geve & wyll to my son Robert a brasse pott, ij hutches, ij platters, ij dyshes, ij saucers[,] ij candelstykes, a skellet[,] a salt seler, six lames of the last yere, fyve store [stour?, i.e., strong] hogges[,] all the pultri [i.e., poultry] hennes duckes & gess [i.e., geese] & all the corn that is already sowing at Godfeyes. Item I geve and wyll to my son John iij hutches, the best ketyll, a lytell ketyll, a skelett, a posnett [i.e., a small metal pot with three feet and a handle], viij peces of pewt^r, iij saucers, ij candelstykes, a salt seler, a tryndoll flooke bedd [i.e., a trundle flock bed], a bolster, ij bulockes[,] fyve shepe, iij store hogges. All the Resydue of my goods [etc.?] above not bequethed I geve wyll & bequeth to my sonne Robert Cragbone whome I make my only executor of this my last wyll & testament. These wytnesses Gefrey Jones p[ri]est, Willm may, John philybrowne, Thomas Spon^r[,] Thomas Wodwarde wth others. (Proved 26 February 1558/9?].)

Since John (baptized 4 February 1539/40) is a proven son of Thomas Crackbone of White Notley, and John is mentioned as a son in the will of Felis Crackbone, widow, it appears that Felis was the widow of Thomas, who was buried on 25 February 1556/7. No other Crackbone/Cragbone males were recorded as buried in the parish during the period from 1538 to 1558.

That the son Robert mentioned in the will of Felis Crackbone is the ancestral Robert Crackbone of Terling is suggested by the fact that he had the required brother Thomas. When considered in light of Robert Crackbone's stated residence of White Notley in his marriage record and the lack of other Crackbone families in the parishes of Terling and White Notley, it seems reasonable to conclude that the ancestor is the son of Thomas and Felis Crackbone of White Notley. Thomas may be the son of Richard Crakbon of White Notley and his wife Joan, who quitclaimed a messuage in Chelmsford to the heirs of John Bolles in 1483 (*Feet of Fines for Essex*, 6 vols. [Colchester, 1899–1993], 4[1964]:82).

PURCAS

The 1634 Visitation of Essex identifies the wife of Robert^B Plumb as one Purcas (given name not stated). Morant's *Essex* (2:300) calls her Elizabeth Purcas of the parish of Great Yeldham. Great Yeldham burial records confirm that "Elizabeth Plume, wife of Robert Plume the elder," was buried on 25 June 1596 (FHL #857,068). An examination of Purcas wills and the parish registers of Great Yeldham strongly suggests that Elizabeth was a daughter of Thomas and Alice Purcas.

her brother? ✓ The will of Thomas Purcas of Great Yeldham, tanner, was executed on 2 November 1574 and proved on 22 March 1574/5 (Archdeaconry Court of Middlesex, reg. wills, 3:211 [FHL film #94,730]). The document mentioned Robert Plumb several times. It stated that Thomas had purchased land from Robert Plumb lying at "Saxies Bridge" against "Brad Meadow" in the parish of Great Yeldham. Thomas also directed that Robert should complete "my new house." And more importantly, Robert Plumb was made executor of the will. The will mentio^{ned} ~~red~~ ^{ed} ~~Seas~~ Edmund, Thomas, and Anthony and daughters Joan, Elizabeth, and Mary. A legacy to five of the children from their ✓ "grandfather Bigge" was mentioned, and a legacy from their "grandfather Purcas" to Joan, Elizabeth, and Mary was acknowledged. However, the legacy was to remain unpaid until the three granddaughters reached the age of twenty-one or were married. Although Thomas had a daughter Elizabeth and was closely associated with Robert Plumb, it must be concluded that this Elizabeth was not Robert Plumb's wife, as she was an unmarried minor in 1574. Nevertheless, it is clear that Robert Plumb was closely allied with Thomas Purcas, the testator of 1574.

The will of Alice Purcas of Great Yeldham, mother of the above Thomas Purcas, was executed on 13 November 1575. She was styled "The late wiffe of Thomas Purcas the Elder late of Much Yeldham aforesaid deceased." Portions of her will are transcribed below (Commissary Court of the Bishop

[2] For this name, which is frequently confused with *Phyllis*, see E.G. Withycombe, *The Oxford Dictionary of English Christian Names* (3d ed. [Oxford, 1977], 116, 246).

of London, Essex and Herts. div., orig. wills, Box 29, #29 [FHL film #94,384]; interlined words in the document are italicized below):

It[em] I will ther shalbe given and dystrubuted amongst the poore people of their Townes hereunder named their sev[er]all sumes of mony here underwryten . . . the poore people of much yeldm Twente shillings[,] heningh[a]m at Castle tenn shillings, heningh[a]m Sible tenn shillings, Toppesfield Tenne shillings[,] Stamborne vjs viij^d[,] Redgewell vjs viij^d[,] over Yeldham vjs viij^d[,] Tilbury vjs viij^d iij^s iij^d and Asshon iij^s iij^d It[em] I Give and bequeth and freely forgive unto Richard my sonne The sume of Thirtye pounds of lawfull mony of england which the said Richard doth now owe unto me upon this condicon That the said Richard nor any other for hym shall goo about to molest vexe or dysturbe Francis my sonne myne executor hereunder named for any Landes or tenfemen[ts] as well free as custumlye given assigned or bequethed to the said Francis by the said Thomas Purcas my late husband. . . . It[em] I Give and bequeth unto margery purcas daughter of John purcas my Late sonne Twenty poundes of lawfull mony of england to be paid unto her at her age of twenty & one years upon this condicon that the said margery nor any other for her or in her name shall not clayme or demand any ryght title or interest of in or to those Lands called Lyndwoods in gosfild and hemingham Sible in the seid county now Willm purcas my sonnes And Also upon this condicon that the said margery shall at her seid age of xxj years being therunto required by the said Willm his heirs or assignes Release unto the said Willm & to his heirs & assignes all her ryght and interest which she hath or can have of in or to the seid lands called Lyndwoods or any p[ar]te therof And if the said margery shall refuse to make this release as is aforesaid Then I will the said Twenty pounds to her bequethed shalbe paid to the said Willm my sonne any thing herein to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding Which said twenty pounds was in thands [i.e., the hands] and occupieing of Late Thomas purcas my sonne deceased and was to be paid by Robte plome executor of the testament of the said late Thomas Purcas my sonne which said some of twenty pounds. . . . It[em] I give and bequeth unto the said francis my sonne and to his heirs forever one p[ar]cell of land which I Late bought of the said Thomas Purcas my son cont[ain]ing by estymacon half an acre be it more or less being in Litall yeldham in the seid county of Essex. It[em] I do give and bequeth and frelie forgive unto the said Robte plome Thirty pounds of Lawfull mony of England which remayneth in his hands by hym owing unto me. It[em] I Give and Bequeth unto evry one of my children That ys to saie Richard Willm Elizabeth Alice and marye Five marks apece of lawful mony of England & one pair of shetes to be paid to them and evry of them within twoe years next after my decease by the said Francis my sonne in recompence and in consideracon that the said francis shall have all my household stuff It[em] I Give and Bequeth unto Richard purcas my [serv(an)te?] vj^d xiiij^s iij^d lawful mony of England to be paid to hym within two years next after my decesse It[em] I give to maude Grymstan my servant Five pounds of Lawfull mony of England to be paid unto her within two years next after my decesse It[em] I give and bequeth unto every one of my childrens children vjs viij^d apece Except marye and Elizabeth Daughters of Thomas my sonne [saving?, i.e., except] I will that Joane purcas daughter of the said Thomas shall have for her p[ar]te xs^s to be paid to them and evry of them within twoe years next after my decesse All the rest of my goods [etc.] I do wholie give and bequeth unto Francis my sonne whome I do ordeyne and make my sole executor of this my seid testament. . . . I do ordeyne name and appoint my welbeloved Richard purcas my seid sonne supervisor hereof to be aydable and helping the said francis. . . . [Witnesses:] Edmund [Barowne?] Robte Fynche Richard darman Willm Ungar (Proved 16 May 1578)

✓ Alice Purcas, widow, was buried on 4 April 1578 at Great Yeldham. Her

will mentions a daughter Elizabeth, who appears to be about the right age to have been the wife of Robert^B Plumb. The ages of several of Elizabeth's siblings are suggested by the baptismal dates of their children. In her will, Alice does not indicate a relationship to Robert Plumb, but it is clear that they were well acquainted, as she forgave his debt of £30. An almost identical bequest was made to her son Richard. Furthermore, the references to Robert Plumb in the will of her son Thomas Purcas, the testator of 1574, are consistent with those made to a close relative. No will has been found for Thomas, the husband of Alice Purcas, although legacies to his children from their "Grandfather Purcas" are alluded to in the will of Thomas Purcas in 1574. It is possible that these legacies are the reason why Alice Purcas exempted her granddaughters Mary and Elizabeth from a general bequest made to her grandchildren in her own will. It seems most probable that the wife of Robert^B Plumb was Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas and Alice Purcas.

The following Purcas entries were extracted from the parish registers of Great Yeldham:

Baptisms (1560–1590):

20 Aug. 1560	Robert Purcas
1 Jan. 1560/[1]	Jone Purcas
1560	Tomas Purcas "The Sunday after St. Nicholas"
13 April 1563	Elizabeth Purcas
10 July 1565	Anthony Purcas
20 July 1565	Richard Purcas
20 Jan. 1565/[6]	Mary Purcas
7 Aug. 1566	Richd Purcas
"last day" Feb. 1567/[8?]	Thomas Purcas
5 July 1568	John Purcas
26 July 1568	John, son of William Purcas
21 July 1569	Jone, dau. of William Purcas
15 Feb. 1578/[9]	Robert, son of Robert Purcas
5 April 1580	Agnes, dau. of Robert Purcas
9 Oct. 1580	Elizabeth, dau. of Francis Purcas
9 July 1581	Amy, dau. of Robert Purcas
30 Dec. 1582	Elizabeth, dau. of Robert Purcas
23 Feb. 1582/[3]	Francis, son of Francis Purcas
13 Aug. 1585	Susan, dau. of Robert Purcas
3 Aug. 1585	Susan, "the younger daughter of the same Robert was baptized at home"
3 July 1586	Robert, son of Francis Purcas
8 July 1586	Richard, son of Richard Purcas
10 Dec. 1587	Anthony, son of Anthony Purcas
3 March 1587/[8]	Ann, dau. of Richard Purcas
12 Jan. 1588/[9]	Agnes, dau. of Richard Purcas
22 June 1589	Thomas, son of Francis Purcas
22 April 1590	Elizabeth, dau. of Richard Purcas
23 Aug. 1590	Edmund, son of Richard Purcas, the Elder

Marriages (1560-1600):

7 Feb. 1574[/5?]	William Purcas & Elizth Mott this par.
3 Feb. 1577[/8?]	Josias Sansum de Wethersfield & Jone Purcas this par.
13 April 1578	Robert Purcas & Susan Heymer
4 July 1579	William Harrington & Mary Purcas
12 June 1582	William Ares alias Smith & Elizabeth Purcas
28 Nov. 1587	Richard Purcas & Elizabeth Warren
7 July 1588	Edward Alistone & Agnes Purcas
23 July 1593	George Parmenter & Elizabeth Purcas

Burials (1560-1600):

23 Jan. 1561 [1560/1]	John Purcas, son of Thomas
28 Aug. 1567	Richard Purcas
6 July 1568	John Purcas
11 Aug. 1568	Jhon Purcas
26 May 1569	Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Purcas
20 Sept. 1570	Jone, dau. of William Purcas
29 Jan. 1570[/1]	Jone, wife of William Purcas
16 Jan. 1573[/4]	John Purcas, servant of Goodman Richard Purcas
3 Feb. 1575[/6?]	Thomas Purcas
4 April 1578	Alice Purcas, widow
11 March 1578[/9]	Robert, son of Robert Purcas
4 June 1584	Elizabeth, dau. of Francis Purcas
4 Aug. 1585	Susan, younger dau. of Robert Purcas
9 Sept. 1586	Richard Purcas, the Eldest
21 March 1589 [1588/9]	Anthony, child of Anthony Purcas
5 June 1590	Elizabeth, dau. of Richard Purcas
5 June 1593	Susan, dau. of Richard Purcas
25 Aug. 1598	Robert, son of Richard Purcas
16 Sept. 1599	Thomas Purcas

(to be continued)

Clifford L. Stott is a paramedic with the Provo, Utah, Fire Department and a professional genealogist. He lives at 840 East Heather Rd., Orem UT 84057.

JOHN¹ PLUMB OF CONNECTICUT AND HIS COUSIN, DEPUTY GOVERNOR SAMUEL¹ SYMONDS OF MASSACHUSETTS

Additions to Their English Ancestry

By Clifford L. Stott

(concluded from page 74)

FAMILY SUMMARIES PLUMB OF TOPPESFIELD AND GREAT YELDHAM, ESSEX

- ✓ 1 JOHN^C PLUMB,^[1] yeoman of Toppesfield, Essex, was born perhaps about 1504, and was buried at Toppesfield on 1 October 1586. He married ELIZABETH —. His will, dated 29 September 1586 and proved 16 February 1586/7, gives to wife Elizabeth, sons Robert and Thomas, "my four daughters" (not named), and the children of his son John, deceased (Arch. Court of Middlesex, reg. wills, 4:102 [FHL film #94,731]). Two daughters are apparently identified in the will of their brother Robert^B Plumb.

Children of John^C Plumb (order uncertain):

- 2 i ROBERT^B PLUMB, of Great Yeldham, Essex, b. ca. 1530; m. (1) ELIZABETH PURCAS, (2) ETHILDRED (—) (FULLER?).
- ii JOHN PLUMB, b. ca. 1532, bur. Castle Hedingham, Essex, 3 Nov. 1569 (FHL film #1,472,365, item 11); m. (1) —, (2) Belchamp St. Paul, Essex, 12 Oct. 1561, ROSE GARROLD (FHL film #1,471,847, item 10).
- iii (prob.) ALICE PLUMB, mentioned but not named in her father's will (Sept. 1586); called sister Alice Easterford in (Jan. 1611/2) will of her brother Robert^B; m. — EASTERFORD, poss. JOHN EASTERFORD, the servant mentioned in the will of Robert^B Plumb. (She could have been a sister of Robert by marriage rather than by blood.)
- iv (prob.) MARGARET PLUMB, mentioned but not named in her father's will; called Margaret Edgeley in the will of her brother Robert^B; m. — EDGELEY. (She could have been a sister of Robert by marriage rather than by blood.)
- v THOMAS PLUMB, mentioned in the will of his father and his brother Robert^B; n.f.r.
- vi dau., mentioned but not named in the will of her father.
- vii dau., mentioned but not named in the will of her father.

- 2 ROBERT^B PLUMB (John^C) was born about 1530. He is mentioned in

[1] On the identity of John^C and Elizabeth (—) Plumb as the parents of Robert^B, see the appendix to this article.

the will of his father and is called a son of John Plumb in the 1634 Visitation of Essex. He was buried at Great Yeldham on 19 May 1613. The entry in the burial register is in large, bold script, suggesting that Robert was a man of importance in the parish. He owned extensive lands in Essex and Suffolk, including the manors of Yeldham Hall and Spaynes Hall in Great Yeldham, which he bequeathed to his sons, and The Poole, inherited by his daughter Elizabeth. Robert was married first about 1555 to ELIZABETH^B PURCAS, daughter of Thomas^C and Alice Purcas of Great Yeldham. (See "Purcas Family," below.) She was buried at Great Yeldham on 25 June 1596. He married second, ETHELDRED —, widow, who is mentioned in his will. She was probably the widow of a Fuller, as Robert's will mentions his wife's daughter Jane Fuller, who was later called the wife of Richard Purcas in the will of her mother. Unless Jane was widowed between 1612 and 1614, it is likely that her maiden name was Fuller. Etheldred died, probably at Great Yeldham, between 10 February 1614, the date of her will, and 22 May 1615, the date of probate (Prerogative Court of Canterbury [PCC] 35 Rudd [FHL film #92,061]). The will of Robert^B Plumb of Great Yeldham was written on 9 January 1611[2] with codicil 17 May 1613, and proved 22 June 1613 (PCC 64 Capell [FHL film #92,053]).

Children of Robert^B Plumb and his 1st wife Elizabeth (Purcas), from Great Yeldham parish registers and the 1634 Visitation of Essex, except as noted:

- i MARGARET PLUMB, b. ca. 1556, mentioned in the (Jan. 1611/2) will of her father and in the 1634 Visitation of Essex; m. — RAYE. Called the mother of John and Joseph Raye in her father's will.
- 3 ii ROBERT^A PLUMB, b. prob. Great Yeldham, ca. 1558; m. (1) MARY —, (2) GRACE CRACKBONE.
- 4 iii ELIZABETH PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 9 Dec. 1560; m. RICHARD SYMONDS.
- iv THOMAS PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 12 March 1563/4, d. there. 23 Feb. 1615 (Morant's Essex, 2:300), bur. 23 Feb. 1614[5] (par. reg.). He m. Ellingham, Norfolk, 2 Oct. 1588, MARY HAMMOND, dau. of Richard Hammond. He received the manor of Yeldham Hall from his father.
- v MARY PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 2 Oct. 1566; m. [NICHOLAS?] WILBORE. She is called the mother of Nicholas and Robert Wilbore in her father's will. A Nicholas Wilbore witnessed the will.
- vi ANNE PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 2 May 1569; m. there, 13 Nov. 1589 JOHN SORRELL.
- vii EDMUND PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 2 Sept. 1571; d. Hawkedon-Hall, Suffolk, bet. 1 July 1642 and 19 June 1643, the dates of execution and probate of his will (Arch. Court of Sudbury, reg. wills, 55:15 [FHL film #97,089]); m. Tibbenham, Norfolk, 27 Aug. 1593, ELIZABETH HERON, dau. of William Heron. Edmund received estates in the parish of Clare, Suffolk, and £300 from his father's will. His pedigree is included in Visitations of Suffolk, 1664-68 (Harclean Soc. Pubs., 61[London, 1910]:180).
- viii son, bur. Great Yeldham, 27 May 1575.

Child of Robert Plumb and his 2d wife Etheldred (—) (Fuller?):

ix JOSEPH PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 25 Feb. 1601[2], bur. there, 29 May 1602.

CT before

3 ROBERT^A PLUMB (Robert^B, John^C) was born probably in Great Yeldham about 1558. He was mentioned in the 1634 Visitation of Essex as a son of Robert^B Plumb and grandson of John^C Plumb. Robert^A died on 14 August 1628 (i.p.m. [PRO C142/738]), presumably at Great Yeldham, although his burial is not recorded in the parish register. He was married first to MARY —, who was buried at East Hanningfield, Essex, on 4 April 1584. He married second at East Hanningfield on 14 December 1584, GRACE CRACKBONE, who was baptized at Terling, Essex, on 7 May 1564, daughter of Robert^B and Avice (Brett)^[2] Crackbone. She died on 21 July 1615 (i.p.m. [PRO C142/445]), and was buried at Great Yeldham the following day.

From the will of his father, Robert received the manor of Spains-Hall in Great Yeldham. Morant's Essex (2:301) declares that the manor house stood on the east side of the River Colne, about three quarters of a mile from the church. Its name was derived from the ancient owners, the family of De Hispania or Hispania, who were originally from Spain. In 1572 and 1573, the manor was held jointly by Robert Plumb, John Crochrood, and Richard and Thomas Purcas. The i.p.m. of Robert^A Plumb, dated 2 January 4 Chas. [1628/9], shows that at the time of his death, he was seized of the manors of Spains-Hall, and Butlers in Great Yeldham as well as other tenements and messuages in Great Yeldham, Little Yeldham, Castle Hedingham, and Toppesfield. Morant's Essex states that Butlers had long been incorporated into the manor of Spains-Hall. The Butlers mansion house "stood behind Spains-Hall, in the fields," and in 1768 its foundations were still visible. From their appearance, it was a large edifice.

Child of Robert^A Plumb and his 1st wife Mary (—):

- i MARY PLUMB, bp. East Hanningfield, 29 March 1584, bur. there, 15 May 1585.

Children of Robert Plumb and his 2d wife Grace (Crackbone), from parish registers and 1634 Visitation of Essex except as noted:

- ii ROBERT PLUMB, bp. East Hanningfield, 20 May 1586, bur. there, 15 Oct. 1657, "of Spaynes Hall," which he apparently inherited with Butlers from his father (Morant's Essex, 2:301-2). He m. (1) Cowlinge, Suffolk, 14 Jan. 1616, FRAN-

[2] After the publication of the first part of this article, Henry B. Hoff pointed out to the editors that the mother of William¹ Pyncheon of Roxbury and Springfield, Mass., was Frances Brett, who was mentioned in the will of her brother, Thomas Brett of Terling (TAG 29 [1953]:210). Further investigation, however, is necessary to establish any relationship between John¹ Plumb and William¹ Pyncheon.

CES GAWSELL, dau. of Thomas Gawsell of Watlington, Norfolk, (2) HONORA WOOLRICH, dau. of Thomas Woolrich of Cowlinge, Suffolk.

iii MARY PLUMB, bp. East Hanningfield, 14 July 1588, bur. Great Yeldham, 30 Nov. 1599.

iv THOMAS PLUMB, bp. East Hanningfield, 18 Oct. 1590, bur. Great Yeldham, 7 Oct. 1599.

v MARTHA PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 25 March 1593, bur. there, 25 April 1593.

vi JOHN¹ PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 28 July 1594; m. DOROTHY —. Immigrated to New England and d. Branford, Conn., 1648.

vii ETHELDRED PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 1 April 1599; m. PHILIP SPARROW, of Wicham Brooke, Suffolk.

viii FRANCES PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 1 Nov. 1601; m. JOHN UPCHER, of Colchester, Essex.

ix HANNAH PLUMB, bp. Great Yeldham, 26 Aug. 1604; m. WILLIAM SADLER, of Horksley, Essex.

✓ 4 ELIZABETH^A PLUMB (*Robert^B, John^C*) was baptized at Great Yeldham on 9 December 1560. She was buried there on 24 January 1610/1. Elizabeth was married at Great Yeldham on 9 January 1580/1 to RICHARD^A SYMONDS, the son of John^B Symonds. (For a pedigree of this family, see 1634 Visitation of Essex, Harleian Soc. Pubs., 13[London, 1879]:495.) He died on 8 July 1627 and was buried at Great Yeldham on 10 July 1627. Morant's *Essex* (2:302) indicates that Richard was a cursitor^[3] of the Court of Chancery. He inherited The Poole in Great Yeldham from his wife.

Children of Richard^A and Elizabeth (Plumb) Symonds from 1634 Visitation of Essex, Morant's *Essex* (2:302), and Great Yeldham parish registers except as noted:

i JOHN SYMONDS, one of the cursitors of Chancery; m. ANNE ELLIOTT, dau. of Thomas Elliott of Oakingham (or Godalming) Surrey (Morant's *Essex*, 2:302). He resided in Great Yeldham, where 10 of his children were baptized.

ii THOMAS SYMONDS, d. 5 June 1625, no issue.

iii MARGARET SYMONDS, m. Great Yeldham, 23 April 1604, EDMOND EYRE.

iv EDWARD/EDMUND SYMONDS, of Black Notley, Essex, where he d. 9 Dec. 1627. He was a cursitor of Chancery; m. 2 Feb. 1614, ANNE DRAPER, dau. of John Draper of Brintree.

✓ v SAMUEL¹ SYMONDS, bp. Great Yeldham, 9 June 1595, d. Boston, Mass., bet. 2 and 7 Oct. 1678;^[4] m. (1) Great Yeldham, 2 April 1617, DOROTHY HARLAK-

ENDEN, bp. Earls Colne, Essex, 12 Dec. 1596, dau. of Thomas Harlakenden. She was bur. Toppesfield, Essex, 3 Aug. 1636. He m. (2) Wickford, Essex, ca. 1637, MARTHA (READ) EPES, dau. of Edmund Read and widow of Daniel Epes. He m. (3) REBECCA (SWAYNE) (BYLEY) (HALL) WORCESTER, dau. of Bennett Swayne of Salisbury, Wilts., and widow successively of Henry Byley, John Hall, and the Rev. William Worcester. Samuel was one of the cursitors of Chancery. He resided at Toppesfield, Essex, where he had the manor of Olivers, but, as Morant's *Essex* points out (2:302), he "retired to New England with his family." Samuel settled at Ipswich, Mass., about 1637/8 and served the colony as deputy and assistant to the General Court and deputy governor of Massachusetts. (See James Savage, *Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England*, 4 vols. [Boston, 1860-62], 4:246; Noyes, Libby & Davis, *Genealogical Dictionary of Maine & New Hampshire* [Portland, Maine, 1928-39], 671; Walter Goodwin Davis, *The Ancestry of Bethia Harris* [Portland, Maine, 1934], 74; NYGBR 43[1912]:96.)

vi RICHARD "FITZ SYMONS" SYMONDS, bp. Great Yeldham, 30 March 1598; barrister of Lincoln's Inn.

CRACKBONE OF WHITE NOTLEY AND TERLING, ESSEX

1 THOMAS^C CRACKBONE of White Notley, Essex, was born say 1507, possibly a son of Richard Crackbone of the same parish. He was buried there on 25 February 1556/7. Thomas married FELIS —, who was buried at White Notley on 8 February 1558/9. Her will, dated 5 February 1558/[9], proved 26 February 1558/[9], mentions three sons, at least one of whom was baptized at White Notley (Court of the Bishop of London's Commissary, Essex & Herts. Div., orig. wills, Box 8, #296).

Children Thomas^C and Felis (—) Crackbone:

2 i ROBERT^B CRACKBONE, b. say 1525; m. AVICE (BRET) HARE.

ii THOMAS CRACKBONE, b. prob. at White Notley, mentioned in the will of his mother (Feb. 1558/9), d. 3 June 1593, seized of the manor of Takely Grange and other lands in Takely, Broxted, Stansted Montfichet, and Hatfield Broadoak in the county of Essex (i.p.m. [PRO C142/236]). He seems to have had no surviving wife or children, as his estate went to his brother Robert.

iii JOHN CRACKBONE, bp. White Notley, 4 Feb. 1539/40, living at date of mother's will (Feb. 1558/9); n.f.r.

2 ROBERT^B CRACKBONE (*Thomas^C*) was born probably at White Notley about 1525. He died on 14 August 1599, seized of the manor of Takely Grange and other lands in Takely, Broxted, Stansted Montfichet, and Hatfield Broadoak, which he had inherited from his brother Thomas; his daughter and only heir Grace received the estate, which she brought into her mar-

[3] "One of twenty-four officers or clerks of the Court of Chancery, whose office it was to make out all original writs *de cursu*, i.e. of common official course or routine, each for the particular shire or shires for which he was appointed" (*Oxford English Dictionary*).

[4] He was present when the Massachusetts General Court opened its session at Boston, 2 Oct. 1678, but later in the same session—which must have continued over several days—the records note that "[t]he providence of God" had "remooved from us the wo^rp^l Samuel Symonds, Deputy Gouerno^r, whereby that place is voyd . . ." (Nathaniel B. Shurtleff, ed., *Records of the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England* . . . , 5 vols. in 6 [Boston, 1853-54], hereafter *Mass. Bay Recs.*, 5:191, 195). He is also called deceased still later during the session, now dated 7 Oct. (*Mass. Bay Recs.*, 5:197). The published abstract

of the inventory of his estate states that he died on 13 Oct. 1678, which must be wrong (*Probate Records of Essex County, Massachusetts*, 3 vols. [Salem, 1916-20], 3:269).

riage with Robert^A Plumb (i.p.m. [PRO C142/279]). Robert was buried at Terling on 15 August 1599.

Robert married at Terling on 1 February 1562[3], AVICE (BRETT) HARE, the widow of John Hare of "Skarlets" in the parish of Terling, who was buried there on 12 January 1561/2. John Hare and Avice Brett were married at Terling on 22 October 1542 and had the following children baptized there: (1) *John*, bp. 2 Sept. 1543; (2) *Elizabeth*, bp. 9 Dec. 1547; (3) *John*, bp. 2 March 1549/50; (4) *Robert*, bp. 28 Sept. 1552, bur. 28 Nov. 1571; (5) *Ann/Agnes*, bp. 12 May 1555, m. at Terling, 26 Sept. 1580, Nicholas Hawes, who called Robert Crackbone "father-in-law" in his will dated 4 July 1598 (Archdeaonry Court of Colchester, orig. wills, Box 3, #198). By the will of her husband John Hare, dated 10 January 1561/2, Avice received a tenement in Terling called "Sparrowes" (Archdeaonry Court of Essex, reg. wills, Lupton 144 [FHL film #91,213]).

Only child of Robert^B and Avice (Brett) (Hare) Crackbone:

- i GRACE^A CRACKBONE, bp. Terling, 7 May 1564; m. ROBERT^A PLUMB of East Hanningfield and Great Yeldham. (See *Plumb family, above*.)

PURCAS OF GREAT YELDHAM, ESSEX

1 THOMAS^C PURCAS, of Great Yeldham, was born say 1505. He died before 13 November 1575, the date of his wife's will. Thomas married ALICE —, who was buried at Great Yeldham on 4 April 1578. In her will, dated 13 November 1575, proved 15 May 1578, she is styled the widow of Thomas Purcas the Elder of Much Yeldham. Eight children are identified.

Children of Thomas^C and Alice (—) Purcas:

- i THOMAS PURCAS, b. ca. 1532, bur. Great Yeldham, 3 Feb. 1575[6?]; m. (1) ELIZABETH BIGGE, dau. of Henry Bigge of Ridgewell, the testator of 1572. She was bur. Great Yeldham, 26 May 1569. Thomas m. (2) Stisted, Essex, 15 Sept. 1569, MARGARET (—) DRAPER, widow of John Draper. The will of Thomas Purcas mentions legacies to his children from their grandfather Bigge and grandfather Purcas.
- ii ELIZABETH^B PURCAS, b. ca. 1534; m. ROBERT^B PLUMB (see above).
- iii RICHARD PURCAS, b. ca. 1536, bur. Great Yeldham, 9 Sept. 1586.
- iv WILLIAM PURCAS, b. ca. 1541, d. Sible Hedingham, Essex, bet. 25 March 1595/6 and 6 May 1596, the dates of execution and probate of his will (Commissary Court of the Bishop of London, orig. wills, Box 29, #219 [FHL film #94,383]). He m. (1) JOAN —, bur. Great Yeldham, 29 Jan. 1570[1], (2) Great Yeldham, 7 Feb. 1574[5?], ELIZABETH MOTT, who survived him.
- v JOHN PURCAS, b. ca. 1543, d. bef. 13 Nov. 1575, the date of his mother's will. He was married, but the name of his wife has not been discovered. His dau. Margery is mentioned in the will of his mother.

- vi FRANCIS PURCAS, m. and had children bp. at Great Yeldham; wife's name unknown.
- vii ALICE PURCAS.
- viii MARY PURCAS.

APPENDIX THE PARENTAGE OF ROBERT^B PLUMB

After this article was completed, I learned of John A. Brayton's important discussion in *The Ancestry of Tennessee Williams* (pp. 317–24). Mr. Brayton concludes that the parents of Robert^B Plumb (d. 1613) were Robert and Cicely (—) Plumb rather than John^C and Elizabeth (—) Plumb, as H.B. Plumb concluded from the 1634 Visitation of Essex. Mr. Brayton bases his argument on the wills of Robert^B Plumb (dated 9 Jan. 1611[2], proved 2 June 1613), Robert Plumb (dated 19 Jan. 1552[3], proved 1553), and John^C Plumb (dated 29 Sept. 1586, proved 1587).

The will of John^C Plumb (1586) mentions only one son named Thomas (Arch. Court of Middlesex [Essex & Herts.], 4/102 [FHL film #94,731]), while the will of the older Robert Plumb (1552/3) mentions two sons with that name (Bishop of London's Commissary Court, Box 28, #142 [FHL film #94,381]). Mr. Brayton reads the will of Robert^B Plumb (1611/2) as mentioning two brothers named Thomas (PCC 64 Capell [FHL film #92,053]).

As Mr. Brayton states, the wording of Robert^B's will is difficult to interpret. This document mentions, among others (including his wife and children), sister Alice Easterford and sister Margaret Egely. The following passages also appear:

I give unto Thomas Plome my eldest brother his sonne five poundes and to the Children of John Plome which was his eldest sonne tenn poundes to be equallie divided amongst them within one yeare after my decease.

Item I give unto my brother Thomas fortye shillings.

Mr. Brayton interprets the Thomas Plome of the first passage as Robert's eldest brother and the Thomas Plome of the second passage as another brother. If this interpretation is correct, Robert^B must be a son of the older Robert Plumb. I believe a more likely reading, however, is that the first Thomas was Robert's nephew, a son of his eldest brother who was not named. If Robert did indeed have two brothers named Thomas, it would have been usual to distinguish them in some way (e.g., "the elder" and "the younger").

In addition, Robert^B Plumb's will mentions his sister Alice Easterford. The will of the older Robert (1552/3), while it mentions two sons named Thomas, does not mention a daughter named Alice. (Unfortunately, the will of John^C Plumb mentions but does not name his four daughters.) Of course, it is possible that the older Robert Plumb had a daughter Alice who received her portion before 1552/3, and it is also possible that Alice Easterford was Robert^B Plumb's sister by marriage rather than by blood.

Neither proposed identification for Robert^B's parentage can be excluded, but I think that the evidence favors John^C as the father of Robert^B. Not only does the older Robert Plumb fail to mention a daughter Alice in his 1552 will, but the grandchildren of Robert^B identify John as their great-grandfather in the 1634 Visitation.

(concluded)

Clifford L. Stott is a paramedic with the Provo, Utah, Fire Department and a professional genealogist. He lives at 840 East Heather Rd., Orem UT 84057.

It seems worth while to print the following facts in addition to the pedigree. Elizabeth, widow of Edmund Read, who died in 1623, married secondly the famous Rev. Hugh Peter. The Winthrop Family Papers contain indirect evidence of this, but the most certain proof is in a volume with this title: "ENGLANDS SHAME: OR THE UNMASKING OF A Politick Atheist: Being a Full and Faithful Relation of the LIFE and DEATH of that Grand Impostor HUGH PETERS. Wherein is set forth his whole Comportment, Policies, and Principles exercised from the Ingress, in the Progress, and to the Egress of his Unhappy Life. By WILLIAM YONGE, Dr. Med." The volume is an atrocious libel. Peters, being "settled in a Free School of 24*l.* per annum," at or near Malden in Essex, "feigns himself a Suitor, or rather a politick Servant to one Mistris *Read* a Widow woman dwelling neer unto him," and according to Dr. Yonge obtained her hand and fortune by a vile stratagem. The marriage probably took place about 1625, and Mrs. Peter died in England about 1637. I have no certain account of her parentage, but think she was daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, Essex.

(see left. If Ed Read
d 1628 the marriage was
probably ca 1630.)



INTRODUCTION

THE chief reason for printing this volume is the opportunity which it gives of preparing better and fuller genealogies of the families of Symonds and Reade than can be found in any book which I have ever seen. No good account has been printed of the descendants of Samuel Symonds, a gentleman of rank and prominence in this country, who held at the time of his death the second place in the colonial government of Massachusetts; and concerning the lineage of his second wife, Martha Reade, whose sister married John Winthrop, Jr., and whose mother married Hugh Peter, still less can be anywhere read. During three visits to England I have myself made long and careful researches into the ancestry of these

*Selected Pages from
"Ancestry of Priscilla Baker"*

*Re: Symonds / Reade
families et al*

1

2

3

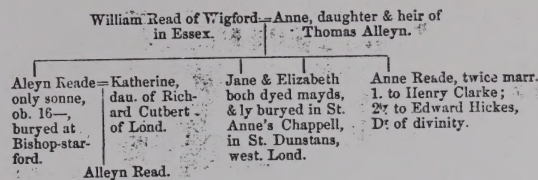


FAMILY OF READ.

LITTLE attention has yet been paid to the history of this family, though many persons in New England are directly descended from Edmund Read of Wickford in Essex. No account of any fulness or value can anywhere be read. The documents here printed, and the facts here recorded, will certainly be new to most persons. The will of Edmund Read has been printed in the Proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society for 1862; and the editors of the volume, though having all the information then within their reach in this country, were hardly able to add any biographical notes to the document. The short pedigree on the next page may be found in MS. Harleian, 1429, in the British Museum.

Allan Read Deputy of the ward of Faringdon without 1670. an Atch^t made.

ARMS. — Azure, a griffin segreant Or, a canton of the second, quartering Allen, Brett, —, Gedding, Aspoll, Pethrys, Watkins, Waterville, Peverell.



In the "HISTORY AND TOPOGRAPHY OF THE COUNTY OF ESSEX," by Thomas Wright, we read; under the parish of Birchanger, —

"William Reade, of this parish, and Ann his wife, sole daughter and heir of Thomas Aleyn, of Branghen, in Hertfordshire, gentleman, by Jane his wife, one of the daughters of Thomas Laventhorp, of Albury Hall, in the said county, esquire. She died, 14th Nov. 1639. He, the 3d April, 1659. This monument was erected by their only son, Aleyn Reade." Arms: A griffin segreant . . . a canton . . . impaling per bend rompu . . . six martlets.

William Read, eldest son of Edmund, lived at Birchanger in Essex, and died in 1659. His will is valuable as mentioning "my sister Lake, my sister Symonds, my sister Winthrop."

Samuel Read, second son of Edmund, was a physician, and in 1643 was of Bishop's-Stortford in Hertfordshire. He was undoubtedly dead in 1659, not being named in his brother William's will.

Thomas Read, third son of Edmund, came to New England, and was admitted Freeman of the Colony of Massachusetts 1 April, 1634. He settled at Salem, and in March, 1637, was appointed Ensign of the watch for that town; in 1647 he was called Captain. 16 February, 1636, the town granted him a farm of three hundred acres north-west northerly from Salem, the bounds of which were settled 28 February, 1662. He seems not to have passed much time in this country, and finally returned to England, to take an active part in the great rebellion. He was a Colonel in the parliamentary army, and for some time was governor of Stirling Castle. He has been thought to have taken part with General Monk in the restoration of Charles II.; and this is possible, though in October,

1661, he was one of several officers "comitted close prissoners to the Gatehouse, Westm^t, by expresse warants sygned by his Ma^{ty}'s principall Secretary of State." Thomas Read married Priscilla, daughter of John Banks of Maidstone, Kent, and of London, who died in 1642. They had six children, but I only know the names of four; three of them died young. Thomas Read died in 1662. His son Samuel, a merchant of London, was living in 1701.

Margaret Read, eldest daughter of Edmund, married John Lake, of what family I do not know; he was certainly not brother of Sir Edward Lake and of Thomas Lake of Boston, Mass., for that John was also of Boston, where he died in 1677. They had three children, John and Anna, mentioned in the will of their grandfather Read, and Martha, born later. Mrs. Margaret Lake came to New England, and lived for some time at New London, Conn., afterwards at Ipswich, where she died in 1672. Her husband was living in 1657, but I know not how much later. Of her son John I know nothing; her daughter, Anna, called here Hannah, married John Gallup, of New London and Stonington, a Captain, who was killed in the Narragansett swamp fight 19 December,

READE, OF WICKFORD, CO. ESSEX,
ENGLAND



READE

The family of Reade, of Wickford, co. Essex, presents an interesting example of a gradual rise, by the acquisition of property, from the ranks of the yeomanry to the status of gentry. There is some slight evidence that the Reades had claims to gentility before the series of wills on which we rely in visualizing them commenced in 1534. When the brothers William and Thomas Reade applied to the College of Arms in 1654, arms were not granted but confirmed to them as follows: "*Azure*, a griffin segreant and a canton *or*; crest, a griffin's head erased *azure*, beak and ears *or*."* In the pedigree of the family of Mildmay the match is recorded of a Thomas Mildmay, living in the town of Chelmsford, near Wickford, in 1521, and Agnes Reade, whose parentage is unknown but who was a daughter of a family which bore as arms "*Vert*, a griffin segreant *or*."

Two at least of the farms owned by the Reades in Wickford and neighboring parishes, "Fryearne" and "Sopers," are still called by those names and can be easily identified.

1. WILLIAM READE of Wickford, yeoman, made his will on May 16, and it was proved on June 26, 1534. He piously committed his soul "to almighty God, our lady Saint Mary and all the holy company of heaven" and directed that his body be buried in the church or churchyard of Wickford. To the church he left 3s. 4d., to the high altar 20d., and to the priest £3-6d. "to sing for my soul and all Christian souls the space of half a year." To his grandchildren Roger Stonard, Elizabeth Stonard and Margaret Bundock he left a cow and four sheep apiece. His son Roger Reade was designated executor and residuary legatee.

Children:—

2. i. ROGER.
 - ii. A DAUGHTER; m. ——— Stonard and had at least two children, Roger and Elizabeth, living in 1534.
 - iii. A DAUGHTER (possibly); m. ——— Bundock and had a daughter Margaret living in 1534, *unless* Margaret Bundock, mentioned in her grandfather's will, was a married grand-daughter.

* British Museum, Add. Ms. 26,758, fo. 16.

2. ROGER² READE (*William*¹) of Wickford married at least twice, his last wife, Elizabeth, who survived him, being the mother of only one of his children, his youngest son Roger.

He was buried at Wickford March 17, 1558. He made his will December 10, 1557. To his wife he left various legacies, including "all such household stuff and plate as she had when and at such tyme as we were maryed" on condition that she release to his sons John and William all dower rights in the real estate of which he was seized at the time of his marriage and also deliver to them a bill of conveyance entered into by his wife and himself at the same time. His wife and son Roger were to remain "here in the house" with his sons John and William for a month after his decease. To his daughter Agnys Dowe, wife of Henry Dowe, he gave twenty-six shillings, eight pence. To his son John he devised his lands and house called Great Amys and Little Amys, in the parish of Wickford, and to his son William a house and land called Felds and land called Helman's Croft in the same parish. Roger, who was not of age, was to be kept in apparel by the executors and to receive forty pounds at his majority. Small legacies were left to Byttrys Hastler and Avys Hastler, and the residue of his estate, including a lease of land called Rosses, went to his sons John and William who were named executors. The witnesses were William Stamer, Thomas Deryvall and Edward Stamer.

The date of widow Elizabeth Reade's death is not recorded at Wickford.

Children:—

- i. AGNES; m. Henry Dowe before 1557. Her son *Richard Dowe* was an overseer of the will of his uncle William Reade in 1603.
- ii. JOHN, buried at Wickford Nov. 27, 1558.
- iii. WILLIAM, bapt. March 12, 1539/40, at Wickford.

By wife Elizabeth:—

- iv. ROGER, bapt. Oct. 2, 1553, at Wickford; in the subsidy of 1598 he was taxed at Wickford and in that of 1600 at Basildon, co. Essex; m. ——— about 1580.

Children:—

- i. ROGER; m. Joan Brown April 12, 1602, in Wickford, and was probably the father of Roger Reade of South Benfleet, co. Essex, who m. Mary ———, had children baptized in South Benfleet 1653-1658, and was buried May 18, 1670.
- ii. AGNES, bapt. Feb. 25, 1582/3; buried Aug. 4, 1583, at Wickford.

3. WILLIAM³ READE (*Roger*², *William*¹) was baptized in Wickford March 11, 1539/40. His first wife was Martha Church, daughter of John Church of the neighboring parish of Runwell, co. Essex, and she was the mother of all of his children. She was buried at Wickford December 16, 1577. His second wife, Mary ———, who survived him and probably married Arthur Helhouse at Wickford August 7, 1616, was a widow with children. Reade was buried at Wickford July 19, 1603.

William Reade seems to have increased the family property to a great extent, from the evidence of his will. He was local assessor of the Lay Subsidies of 1563, 1567, 1598 and 1600, in all of which he was a large tax-payer.

The will of William Reade of Wickford, dated July 3, 1603, directed that he be buried in Wickford church and to the poor of that parish he left £3. To the poor of Rayleigh, Rawreth, Nevendon and Runwell, £1 to each parish. To my wife Mary, £100 and a yearly allowance of £20 to be paid out of my lands by my son Edmund in lieu of her dower, six kine, a bay trotting gelding and all such household stuff and plate as she had at the time as we were married except such as she has since given to her children. My wife and her maid are to have dwelling and entertainment in my house in all honest and comely manner for one year after my death. To my son John, £300. To my brother Edmund Church £7: 13: 4. To my cousin Roger Reade, £8. To all of the household servants, 10s. apiece. To my son Edmund, all my lands and houses and the lease of the manor of Fryearne, which I bought of my brother Edmund Church, and he is residuary legatee and executor. Witnesses: William Harries, Thomas Meredythe.

Children, bapt. at Wickford:—

- i. EDMUND, bapt. May 23, 1563.
- ii. WILLIAM, bapt. July 22, 1564; d. before 1603, s. p.
- iii. MARGARET, bapt. Jan. 9, 1566/7; m. William Hurt Feb. 15, 1586/7, at Wickford; probably d. before 1603, s. p.
- iv. WILLIAM, bapt. May 24, 1568; buried at Wickford March 3, 1571.
- v. MARY, buried Jan. 9, 1570, at Runwell.
- vi. MARY, bapt. Jan. 2, 1571/2; d. before 1603.
- vii. RICHARD, bapt. July 24, 1573; d. before 1603, s. p.
- viii. JOHN, bapt. Jan. 25, 1575/6; mentioned in the will of his brother Edmund in 1623; the "kinsman," John Reade of Pitsaye, who was one of the overseers of the will, was probably his son; buried Oct. 12, 1629, at North Benfleet; Ellen Read, widow, who was buried Feb. 9, 1631/2, in North Benfleet, was probably widow of John, Sr.

- ✓ 4. EDMUND⁴ READE (William³, Roger², William¹) was baptized in Wickford May 23, 1563. He married Thomasine Wallenger, daughter of Thomas Wallenger of Chelmsford, co. Essex, November 14, 1592, and in less than a month, on December 7, she was buried in Wickford. His second marriage, with Elizabeth Cooke, daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, co. Essex, took place about the year 1594.

From 1597 to 1612 the Reades lived in the neighboring parish of North Benfleet, probably in the small manor house, adjoining the church. He was assessed for goods at North Benfleet in subsidies of 1598 and 1600. By 1614 they had returned to Wickford, where Edmund Reade made his will November 20, 1623, of which an abstract, from a copy found in the Winthrop family papers, follows:

Will of Edmund Reade. To the poor of Wickford, 20s. To John Weald my servant, £5. To every one of my other servants, 2s. To William Reade my son & to my daughter Reade, 40s. apiece "to buy them rings." To wife Elizabeth, "those leases which I have of Mr. Edward Sylliarde & Mr. George White and the lands and tenements lately purchased of Mr. Cockerum, now in possession of John Tyle," for life; after her decease the legacy above specified to my son William Reade, on condition that he enter into a bond to my wife Elizabeth to pay my son Thomas £240 within four score days after the death of my wife, or to Thomas's children if he be not then living. To second son Samuel and the heirs of his body the messuage and tenement called "Sopers," in the possession of George Ballard; if Samuel die without issue, the said messuage is to go to my son Thomas, and if Thomas die without issue to my son William; if "Sopers" comes thus into William's possession he is to give bond to the executrix or overseers of this will to pay £50 apiece to my grandchildren John Lake, Anna Lake, Daniel Epps and Elizabeth Epps, and £100 to my daughter Elizabeth. To my wife Elizabeth the lease of Frearne toward the maintenance and bringing-up of my third son Thomas Reade. To my son-in-law John Lake and my daughter Margaret Lake, 40s. apiece for rings. To John Lake and Anna Lake, their children, 20s. apiece. To Daniel Epps and Martha Epps my daughter 40s. apiece for rings. To Elizabeth Epps and Daniel Epps, their children, 20s. To daughter Elizabeth £200, at twenty years. To brother John Reade, £5. To son William "my young gray gelding now in the custody of my kinsman John Reade." Residue to wife Elizabeth. James Lawrence of Cliffords Inn, gentleman, and John Reade of

Pitsaye, my kinsman, overseers. Witnesses: Edmand Lamb, Edward Epps, Rob^t Marrable "he is Mr Thomas Lakes man."

"Mr. Edmonde Read" was buried at Wickford December 1, 1623.

Mrs. Reade married as her second husband Rev. Hugh Peter, son of Thomas and Martha (Treffry) Dyckwood *alias* Peter of Fowey, co. Cornwall. She died about 1637, and he married as his second wife Deliverance Sheffield, by whom he had one daughter, Elizabeth.

Rev. Hugh Peter graduated from the University of Cambridge, obtaining a B.A. in 1617/8 and an M.A. in 1622. It was while teaching school at Landon, co. Essex, that he met and married Mrs. Reade, who must have been much his senior. Ordained by the Bishop of London, he was appointed curate at Rayleigh, but his non-conformist tendencies caused his departure for Holland in 1629 and in 1632 he was minister of the English church in Rotterdam. Being in constant communication with his wife's children in New England, he joined them in 1635, was made a freeman of Massachusetts Bay on March 3, 1635/6 and settled as minister of the Salem church in the following December. After five years of controversial ministry he left for England, as one of the colony's agents, in 1641, and the rest of his life was occupied in semi-military, semi-religious activity with the Parliamentary forces in Ireland and England during the Civil War. On the restoration of Charles II he was arrested, confined in the Tower, tried at the Old Bailey for complicity in the execution of Charles I, found guilty and executed October 16, 1660.*

Children:—

- i. EDMUND, bapt. Nov. 6, 1595, at Wickford; buried March 30, 1600, at North Benfleet.
- ii. MARY, b. June 18 and bapt. June 26, 1597, at North Benfleet; buried April 13, 1602, at North Benfleet.
- iii. MARGARET, b. July 11 and bapt. July 16, 1598, at North Benfleet; m. about 1619 John Lake of Great Fanton Hall, North Benfleet. (See Lake.)
- iv. WILLIAM, b. Oct. 28, 1599, and bapt. Jan. 1, 1599/1600, at North Benfleet; m. Anne Alleyn, sole daughter and heiress of Thomas Alleyn of Braughen, co. Herts., who d. Nov. 14, 1639; he d. April 3, 1659.

In Trinity term, 11 Charles I (1635), he purchased by fine from his step-father and mother and his brother Thomas a messuage and sixteen acres in Wickford and Rawreth for £60.† The arms and crest previously described were confirmed to him and his brother Thomas in 1653/4.

* For a full account of Peter's life, character and works, see the Dictionary of National Biography.

† Feet of Fines, Essex.

The will of William Reade of Birchanger, co. Essex, gentleman, made March 30, and proved June 6, 1659. To be buried in the chancel of the church of Birchanger, near his wife. To son Alleyn Reade, lands in Birchanger. To daughter Anne Clarke, widow, £200, less such charges as son Alleyn Reade had been put to in the recovery of her jointure. To grandchild Elizabeth Clarke. To son Alleyn Reade and his wife, daughter Anne Clarke, brother Thomas Reade and his wife, sister Lake, sister Symonds, sister Winthrop, cousin Thomas Cooke and his wife, cousin Joseph Cooke, cousin Bennett, widow, Mr. Lear, clerk, Mr. Thomas Cuthbert, and four grandchildren William, Alleyn and Thomas Reade and Elizabeth Clarke, gold rings. To friend William Parsons of Birchanger, clerk, his wife and daughter Margaret Parsons. To the poor of Birchanger and Wickford. Residue to son Alleyn Reade, executor.

A monument, containing the Reade arms impaling Alleyn and the following inscription was erected in Birchanger church: "William Reade, of this parish, and Ann his wife, sole daughter and heir of Thomas Aleyn, of Braughen, in Hertfordshire, gentleman, by Jane his wife, one of the daughters of Thomas Laven-thorpe, of Albury Hall, in the said county, Esquire. She died 14th Nov. 1637. He, the 3d April, 1659. This monument was erected by their only son, Aleyn Reade."

Children:—*

1. *Alleyn*; m. Katherine Cuthbert, daughter of Richard Cuthbert of London, lived in ward of Faringdon without, London; d. in 1679 and buried at Bishops Stortford, co. Herts; 4 sons.
2. *Anne*; m. (1) Henry Clarke; a widow with one daughter, Elizabeth, in 1659; m. (2) Rev. Edward Hikes, D.D.
3. *Jane*; d. unmarried; buried with her sister Elizabeth in St. Anne's chapel, St. Dunstan's-in-the-West, London.
4. *Elizabeth*; d. unmarried.
- v. *MARTHA*, b. July 13 and bapt. July 22, 1602, at North Benfleet; m. (1) Daniel Eppes and had two children when her father made his will in 1623; "Daniel Eps, a householder" was buried June 26, 1630, at St. Olave, Hart Street, London; m. (2) after 1636, Samuel Symonds of Toppesfield, co. Essex, with whom she emigrated to America in 1637 and who was later Deputy-Governor of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.
- vi. *EDMUND*, bapt. July 22, 1604, and buried Nov. 9, 1613, at Wickford.
- vii. *THOMAS*, b. Jan. 2, and bapt. Jan. 7, 1605/6, at North Benfleet; d. Sept. 15, 1607, at North Benfleet.
- viii. *SAMUEL*, b. July 23 and bapt. July 31, 1609, at North Benfleet; a physician at Bishop's Stortford, co. Herts., in 1643; as "Sopers" was in the hands of his brother Thomas in 1662, it would seem that Dr. Reade died before that date, without issue.
- ix. *THOMAS*, bapt. Aug. 15, 1612, at North Benfleet; m. Priscilla Banks, daughter of John and Mary (Fisher) Banks, of Maidstone, co. Kent; d. in 1662.†

He emigrated to New England and settled in Salem where he was made freeman April 1, 1634, had a grant of 300 acres north-west of Salem, which he called "Wickford," in 1636, was ensign of the watch in 1637 and its captain in 1647. He returned to England and became a colonel in the Parliamentary army and

* Harleian MS., 1429.

† Visitation of London, Harleian Society, Vol. 17.

was appointed Governor of Stirling Castle. Said to have taken part with Gen. Monke in the restoration of Charles II, nevertheless he was one of several officers committed close prisoners to the Gatehouse, Westminster, in October, 1661, by warrant signed by His Majesty's Secretary of State.

The will of Thomas Reade of Wickford, gentleman, was made July 25 and proved Nov. 6, 1662. To wife Priscilla, the farm known as Sopers, for life, and £750. To son Samuel, £500 and Sopers, in tail male, after the death of my wife, £2300 at twenty-one, and "my farm called Wickford nere Salem in New England." To son Thomas, £250 after the death of my wife, and £1450 at twenty-one. To daughter Priscilla, £1000 at twenty-one or marriage, if her mother and the overseers approve "him shee doth match withall," if not, £500 only. He named his wife executrix, and, as overseers and guardians of the children, his brother Caleb Banks, Esq., Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, Esq., Sir John Banks, Bart., Alleyn Reade, gent., and Jacob Willett.

Children:—

1. *Priscilla*
2. *Samuel*
3. *Thomas*
4. *John*; d. before 1662.

} minors in 1662.

- x. *ELIZABETH*, bapt. Nov. 27, 1614, at Wickford; m. about 1635 John Winthrop, Jr., and emigrated to New England, where he became Governor of Connecticut; d. Nov. 24, 1672.

*Margaret Reed (sister of son Mathew who m^d Gov. Samuel Symonds)
m. John Lake. This feels about right
about her husband's
ancestors.*

LAKE

Lake is a surname which was not uncommon in the county of Essex in the sixteenth century, and its bearers, mostly of the yeoman class, were to be found in many of the central and south-western parishes. The Lakes of Great Fanton Hall were newcomers in North Benfleet about the year 1570 and whence they came is at present uncertain, but there they remained for three generations, acquiring several other manors, which were in reality not more than extensive farms. Great Fanton Hall, a large farm house of no particular architectural pretension, still stands, half way between the villages of Wickford and North Benfleet, in a flat and, for England, uninteresting country-side.

The Lakes were not of visitation rank and no arms can be claimed for them. The fantastic ancestry concocted by a widely quoted genealogist, which deceived so many of their American descendants, can be easily discredited.*

1. ——— LAKE, who lived in the first half of the sixteenth century, probably in some parish in the county of Essex, was the father of at least four sons and two daughters. A search of about thirty sixteenth-century wills of men and women named Lake in the various probate registries of Essex has failed to identify him. Possibly at some future time the publication of a parish register will disclose his name and the records of his family.

Children:—

- i. JOHN; m. (1) at Runwell, co. Essex, Feb. 3, 1558/9, Elizabeth Lone, probably a widow, who was buried at North Benfleet March 10, 1588/9; m. (2) at North Benfleet April 28, 1589, Mary Castle, who survived him and married, second, at North Benfleet May 26, 1597, John Greene of Rawreth, co. Essex, and was living in 1599 when she was mentioned as "sister Greene" in the will of her brother-in-law, Richard Lake; d. s. p. and was buried at North Benfleet March 12, 1596/7.

After his first marriage John Lake seems to have lived at Runwell where one of his servants was buried in 1563. Between that date and 1578 he moved to North Benfleet where he held the manors of Great Fanton and Bonevilles and other property, also lands in the neighboring parishes of Rayleigh, South Benfleet, Wickford, Laindon and South Hanningfield.

* New England Historical and Genealogical Register, 84 : 304.

The will of John Lake of North Benfleet, dated Dec. 10, 1596, and proved April 7, 1597, directed that he be buried in North Benfleet church or chancel. For making of forms and other things necessary and convenient in and about the chancel of the said church, 20s. To the parson of the said church, for a Communion Book or Psalter, 10s. To trimming and mending the porch buttresses of the said church and chancel, 20s. To each of the eight people who carry my body to the church, 12d. To the poor of Bemflette and of the parishes of Runwell, Wickford, and Rawreth, co. Essex, to each parish 20s. To the poor of Rayleigh, co. Essex, 40s. To Widow Castle, my mother-in-law, who now dwelleth with me, the bed whereon she usually lieth, furnished with all things belonging thereunto, as it now standeth, and 20s. To my wife Mary Lake all my goods, household stuff, and implements in my house called Fanton Haule, in Bemflette, except the leases of my manors or farms of Fanton Haule aforesaid and Bonefields, alias Bonevilles, in Bemflette, my ready money, and all other my writings, bonds, evidences, scripts, and muniments, which are to go to my executor. To my wife all goods and household stuff in my kitchen, bolting house, wool house, granary, or north end of my house of Fanton Haule aforesaid, and in my house in Kemps Croft, also all my butter, cheese, bacon, and other provisions, all my calves, milk of my kine, and all my ewe sheep on my farm at Fanton Haule, and my new house in Kemps Croft, etc., for a month after my decease, whereupon (various articles specified) are to be carried by my executor to Bonevells alias Bonvells for my said wife. My said wife is to pay my executor £6 yearly for the premises (Bonefields) and to enter into a bond, and, if she refuses, the legacy to her is to be void and my executor is to pay her 100 marks. To my brother Richard Lake, who dwells with me, pasture of one horse for life, my best black nag, and also his meat, lodging, washing, and entertainment for himself in my house for life. To Nicholas Stelewoman £21 left him by John James, late of Hockley, co. Essex, on the day appointed in the said will. To Dorothy Luther, daughter of Henry Luther, deceased, £20, and my wife is to educate her. To Elizabeth, Frances, and Joan Luther, the other daughters of the said Henry, £20 each, at the age of eighteen or marriage. To every godchild 2s. To Thomasine Drywood, dwelling with John Brooman of South Bemflette, £10, £4 thereof being what I owe her. To my cousins John and George Porter £10 each. To every one of my brothers' and sisters' children, except the said John and George Porter, the children of my brother Robert Lake, Richard, the son of my brother Richard Lake, Joan Duckett, the wife of Robert Duckett, who owes me £20, the which I forgive him, and John Brooman of South Bemflette, to everyone of the other I give £5. To Simon Prisceley, my servant, a bullock and sheep which were Robert Lone's deceased, and £10. To every man and maid servant, except those before and after named, 6s. 8d. To Richard Lake, son of my brother Richard Lake, lands in Wickford and South Hanningfield which I late bought of Robert Vane of Sinocke, co. Kent. To John Brooman of South Bemflette, my kinsman, my house and lands in South Bemflette which I bought of Thomas Wyat, late of Thundersley, co. Essex. To Elizabeth Lone, daughter of Margaret Lone of Rayleigh, widow, the houses, lands, etc., which I purchased of John Camber of Tilburie; but Foulk Evans, tailor, is to have his free use and occupation of all those rooms which he now has for life, without paying any rent for the same, and Elizabeth Lone is to make a lease for twenty-one years to Henry

Julian which I have promised him. To Anne Castle, who dwells with me, £10 at twenty years. To Anthony Lone, who dwells with me, £10 at twenty years, and my executor is to educate him in the meantime. My tenement at Layndon called Nokes, which I late bought of Thomas Anger, and the residue to John Lake of North Benflette aforesaid, the son of my brother Richard Lake, whom I make sole executor. Overseers: Mr. Edmund Reade of North Benflette, Mr. Richard Mason, parson of Rawreth, and Mr. Thomas Jobie, parson of Thundersley, and they are to have 20s each. Witnesses: William Harryes, Isaac Gilbert, Thomas Meredith.*

2. ii. RICHARD.
- iii. ROBERT; his children were mentioned in the will of his brother John in 1596. He is possibly the Robert Lake who had a daughter Susan baptized Aug. 22 and buried Oct. 8, 1574, at Runwell, co. Essex. There is also the possibility that he was the Robert Lake of the following will.
Robert Lake of Hockley, co. Essex, made his will April 30 and it was proved June 16, 1597. To my son Robert, £10 at twenty-one. To my daughter Elizabeth, £20 at twenty-one. To the poor of Hockley, 40s. To Richard Carre, our minister, 6s. to preach at my burial. To Mary Samon, 10s. Executrix and residuary legatee: my wife Rebecca Lake. Overseer: Edward Samson of Rawreth, to whom 10s. Witnesses: Richard Carre, Edward Pullen, Edward Salmon, John Peare.†
- iv. WILLIAM; living Sept. 17, 1599, when his wife was a legatee in the will of his brother Richard.
- v. A DAUGHTER; m. ——— Porter.

Children:—

1. John Porter; he and his brother were legatees in the will of their uncle, John Lake, in 1596.
2. George Porter.
- vi. A DAUGHTER; m. ——— Brooman. In the parish of Navestock, co. Essex, is recorded the marriage on Sept. 24, 1553, of Andrew Broomeman and Helen Lake, but the will of this Andrew does not mention a son John, necessary for perfect identification.

Child:—

1. John Brooman; of South Benfleet, co. Essex, in 1596, when he was a legatee in the will of his uncle John Lake.
- vii. A DAUGHTER (perhaps). Richard Lake left in his will a small legacy to his "sister Cracknell" who may have been a sister who m. ——— Cracknell, or a sister-in-law.

2. RICHARD LAKE, of North Benfleet, was a widower, living with his brother John, at Great Fanton Hall, in 1596. As the very full parish registers of North Benfleet contain no baptismal records of his children, it is obvious that his married life was passed in some other parish. He was buried at North Benfleet September 24, 1599.

* Commissary Court of London for Essex and Herts.
† Commissary Court of London for Essex and Herts.

The will of Richard Lake, dated September 17 and proved October 11, 1599, directed that he be buried in the church or churchyard of North Benfleet. To the poor of the parish 5s. To every godchild 12d. To every servant dwelling with my executor 12d. To my brother William's wife 5s. To my sister Greene and my sister Cracknell 12d. each. To the children of George Reignolde which he had by my daughter £10, to be paid to the said George for their use. To my son Richard Lake £20. To my daughter Phennyng and her children £10 equally between them. To my daughter Lachyngdon and her children £10 equally between them. To my son-in-law Thomas Lachyngdon all the debts he owes me. To my daughter Joan Duckett and her children the £21 which her husband Robert Duckett owes me, and to her two children two of my best platters. To my son Richard Lake, to my daughters Margaret Phennyng and Sybille Lachyngdon, and to my executor my chest of linen and certain pester. To every one of my brothers' and sisters' children, 5s. Residue to my eldest son, John Lake, and he is to be executor. Witnesses: Edmund Portwaye and Thomas Meredith.*

Children:—

3. i. JOHN.
- ii. RICHARD; mentioned in the wills of his uncle and of his father; m. Sara ———, who was buried in North Benfleet Dec. 17, 1622.

Children:—

1. Tabitha, under twenty-one in 1612 when she was named in the will of her uncle John Lake.
2. Sarah, bapt. at North Benfleet Sept. 13 and buried there Oct. 5, 1618.
- iii. A DAUGHTER; m. George Reignolde; d. before Sept. 17, 1599, when her husband and children were mentioned as living in her father's will.
- iv. MARGARET; m. before 1599 ——— Phennyng; a legatee, with her children, in her father's will.
- v. SYBIL; m. Oct. 11, 1591, at North Benfleet, Thomas Lachyngdon; a legatee, with her children, in her father's will.
- vi. JOAN; m. April 10, 1592, at North Benfleet, Robert Duckett of Thundersley, co. Essex; a legatee, with her two children, in the will of her father.

3. JOHN² LAKE (*Richard*¹) of Great Fanton Hall, North Benfleet, yeoman, was born about 1565. He married Elizabeth Sandell, daughter of John Sandell of Little Barstable Hall, in the neighboring parish of Basildon, co. Essex, about 1589.

* Commissary Court of London for Essex and Herts.

In addition to his inherited manors of Great Fanton and Bonevilles in North Benfleet, John Lake acquired from his wife's nephew, John Sandell, then living at Kempton, co. Herts., "all that manor of Little Barstable Hall *alias* Basildon Hall . . . in Basildon, co. Essex, with all the lands thereunto belonging . . . and all other its appurtenances in Basildon, Vange and Fobbing, co. Essex, . . . also three crofts containing forty acres called Sawyers in Basildon . . . and two other parcels of land called Hockleys and Undermunds in Vange" for the sum of £1,121.*

John Lake was buried at North Benfleet December 10, 1612. His will, dated November 29, 1612, was proved January 30, 1612/3. The estate of Little Barstable went to his wife for her life, with all of the furnishings at the hall and certain articles from Great Fanton, and after her death to his son John, provision being made to satisfy the dower rights of "my sister Blage," the widow of Lake's brother-in-law Thomas Sandell. Bonevilles was devised to his son Richard and Jac-at-Hoods, one of the Sandell properties, to his son Thomas. Great Fanton Hall, the family homestead, went to his son John. His daughters Sybil Benton, Tamsen Lake and Anna Lake were bequeathed £100 apiece and Mrs. Lake was directed to have Anna "set to school." His daughter Elizabeth Paschall, who had doubtless had her portion, and her two sons Andrew and Thomas, received small legacies, as did his niece Tabitha Lake, daughter of his brother Richard, and all his servants. John Lake was made residuary legatee and sole executor, with Andrew Paschall and Andrew Benton overseers. The witnesses were Thomas Man, Abraham Turke and Robert Castell.†

Elizabeth (Sandell) Lake, who at the time of her death was living with her daughter Mrs. Paschall at Nevendon, was buried at North Benfleet May 4, 1616. Her will, dated May 1, was proved June 3, 1616. She gave small sums to the poor of Basildon, North Benfleet and Nevendon, to her grandchildren and her servants Richard Woodley, Dorothy Sworder and John Wood. Larger sums went to her daughters Elizabeth Paschall (and "my best gowne"), Sybil Benton, Tamsen Lake and Anna Lake, Anna's legacy to be paid to her son John who was to care for her education between the ages of sixteen and eighteen. Thomas Lake was named residuary legatee and executor, with his brothers John and Richard overseers. The witnesses were Jeremy Rogers, Thomas Man and Thomas Playle.‡

* Indenture of March 1, 1604/5, Close Roll, 2 James I. C 54/1800.

† Commissary Court of London for Essex and Herts.

‡ Commissary Court of London for Essex and Herts.

Children, baptized at North Benfleet:—

4. i. JOHN, bapt. Sept. 26, 1590.
- ii. ELIZABETH, bapt. Dec. 12, 1591; m. (1) Andrew Paschall of Nevendon, co. Essex, gentleman, who d. between Nov. 9, 1613, and Feb. 25, 1613/4, the dates of making and proving his will, which left his estate to his widow and his son Andrew, for whose maintenance and education an income of £20 a year until his majority was provided; m. (2) John Breadcake of Leigh, co. Essex, mariner, who d. in 1636 when he was in command of the ship *Thomas* on a voyage to or from Gibraltar; the widow Elizabeth Breadcake made her will July 10 and it was proved Aug. 28, 1651, leaving her property to her son Andrew Paschall, Clare his wife, and Andrew, Thomas, Clare and Elizabeth their children, and her daughter Clare Bundock and her children John and Elizabeth, a codicil giving 20s. to her brother John Lake.

Children, by first husband:—

1. *Andrew Paschall*; m. Clare ———; both living, with four children, Andrew, Thomas, Clare and Elizabeth, in 1651.
2. *Thomas Paschall*; d. between 1612, when he was mentioned in his grandfather Lake's will, and 1616 when he was not in his grandmother Lake's will.

Child, by second husband:—

3. *Clare Breadcake*; m. ——— Bundock; living with children John and Elizabeth, in 1651.
- iii. SYBIL, bapt. Feb. 11, 1592/3; m. before 1616, Andrew Benton; living in 1616.
- iv. RICHARD, bapt. Nov. 18, 1594; m. before 1620 Parnell ———, who was buried Oct. 14, 1622, at North Benfleet; probably the "out-dweller," Richard Lake, who was recorded in 1636 in the Essex Ship-money Returns as owning property at Laindon Hills; d. before Feb. 18, 1651/2, when his brother Thomas left a reversionary interest in the Basildon property "to Richard Lake, son of my late brother Richard Lake."

Children:—

1. *Richard*; living in 1651/2.
2. *Elizabeth*, bapt. Aug. 10, 1620, at North Benfleet.
3. *Anne*, bapt. July 1, 1622, at North Benfleet.
- v. THOMASINE (Tamsen), bapt. Oct. 14, 1596; living in 1616, when her mother made her will.
- vi. MARGARET, bapt. March 12, 1597/8; perhaps the Margaret Lake, infant, who was buried at Runwell, co. Essex, July 24, 1598.
- vii. REV. THOMAS, A. B. (1621/2), A. M. (1625), University of Cambridge, bapt. Oct. 21, 1600; m. ——— Sumpter, who predeceased him; he d. in 1652.

He was admitted a pensioner at Peterhouse College, Cambridge, 7 July 1618, and matriculated the same year. He was ordained deacon at Peterborough 21 Dec. 1623 and priest on the following day. He was probably the Thomas Lake who was living at Laindon, co. Essex, in 1636, where were also members of the Sumpter family, as recorded in the Essex Ship-Money Returns. In 1638 he was presented to the living (vicarship) of

* Chancery Proceedings, Charles I, 15/45.

Leyton, co. Essex, by Lady Lake, widow of Sir Thomas Lake of Stanmore, co. Middlesex, and in 1645 he was sequestered to the rectory of Wickford, co. Essex, the incumbent, Rev. Charles Grey, being a prisoner of the Parliamentary forces. Lake was summonsed for examination as to his fitness by the Assembly of Divines, but relinquished the rectory, which was thereupon sequestered to the use of Rev. John Banning.*

In his will, dated Feb. 18, 1651/2, and proved April 8, 1652, he left to his brother John Lake his land called Mangers *alias* Bacons, in Basildon, for life, with remainders in turn to his (Thomas's) sons John and Peter and his nephew Richard Lake, son of his brother Richard, deceased. To his son Peter he willed his lands called Great and Little Bradmore, in the parish of Stock, which he had bought of his cousin Richard Sandell, tailor. His sons John and Thomas received money and various articles of furniture, while Richard Sandell was left a silver-gilt cup with a cover and Sandell's children, Elizabeth, Thomas, Richard, Susan and Eleanor, had small legacies. The residue went to his son Peter, with Richard Sandell as his guardian, and also as executor. Brothers-in-law Robert Sumpter of Leaden Rooding and Francis Sumpter of White Rooding were named overseers, and, as the executor died before taking execution, they were made administrators *cum testamento annexo*.†

Children, all living in 1651/2:—

1. Thomas.
2. John.
3. Peter.

viii. ANNE, bapt. Feb. 10, 1604/5; living in 1616, when her mother made her will.

4. JOHN³ LAKE (John², Richard¹) of Great Fanton Hall, was baptized at North Benfleet September 26, 1590. He married, about 1616, Margaret Reade, daughter of Edmund and Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade of Wickford, co. Essex.

John Lake was a legatee in the will of his uncle, Thomas Sandell, in 1593, was named as residuary legatee and executor in the will of his father in 1612, was mentioned and named as overseer in the will of his mother in 1616, was a legatee in the will of his sister, Elizabeth Breadcake, in 1651, and was a beneficiary in the will of his brother, Rev. Thomas Lake in 1651/2. By an indenture dated June 4, 1622, he sold Little Barstall Hall and its appurtenant properties in Basildon, Fobbing, and Vange, co. Essex, to Richard Chester of Leigh, co. Essex.‡ It would seem that he disposed also of the North Benfleet manors before 1636, as his name does not appear in the North Benfleet

list of landowners in the Essex Ship-Money Returns in that year. He was probably the Mr. Lake who was recorded as of Basildon in the same return.

Sometime between 1631 and 1635 John Lake's wife, Margaret (Reade) Lake, left him and emigrated with her sisters and their families to New England, taking with her her two daughters, Ann and Martha Lake. For many years she lived in the family of her brother-in-law, Gov. John Winthrop, Jr., at New London, Conn., and is mentioned repeatedly in the Winthrop family correspondence. The last decade of her life was spent at Ipswich, Mass., the home of her daughter, Martha (Lake) Harris, and of her brother-in-law, Deputy Gov. Samuel Symonds. In 1654 Rev. Hugh Peter, Mrs. Lake's step-father, wrote from London to John Winthrop, Jr.: "John Lake is alive and lusty"; and in 1657 he stated to the same correspondent: "John Lake live(s) still." On Jan. 18, 1661/2, Mrs. Lake wrote from Wenham, to her brother-in-law, Governor Winthrop, who was in London: "Might I not bee to troublesome to you I would have desired yors. to have done mee yt courtesy as to have inquired concerning my husbands death, & how hee ended his dayes, as also to have inquired of my cousen Thomas Cooke, whether hee knew whether their was any thing left mee or no. . . . I would desire you inquire whether my sister Breadscale (*sic*) who dwells in Lee (Leigh), in Essex, bee liveing. You may heare of her, if liveing, at Irongate where boats weekly come from Lee." No will of John Lake has been found.

The will of Margaret Lake of Ipswich, widow, was made August 30 and proved September 24, 1672. To my daughter Hannah Gallop and her children, all my land at New London. To my daughter Hannah, my best gown, my red cloth petticoat and my enamelled ring, and after her decease my granddaughter Hannah Gallop shall have the ring. To my granddaughter Hannah Gallop, a pair of sheets, one of my best pewter platters and one of the next (best). To my daughter Martha Harris, my tapestry coverlet and all my apparel not disposed of particularly. To my daughter Martha, my mantle, and after her decease to all of her children as they need it. To my grandson Thomas Harris (and he dying without issue, to his brother John, and so to the rest of the children), the coverlet of tapestry, after my daughter Martha's decease. To my daughter Martha, and after her decease to my granddaughter Martha Harris, my gold ring. To my granddaughter Martha Harris, my bed and bedstead,

* Cf. Venn's The Book of Matriculations and Degrees . . . in the University of Cambridge from 1544 to 1659, Venn's Alumni Cantabrigienses, and Proceedings of the Committee on Plundered Ministers, 1644/5 (British Museum, Additional MSS., 15869, folios 150b, 160b, 172b).

† Prerogative Court of Canterbury, 77 Bowyer.

‡ Close Roll, 20 James I.

✓ Sir Mathew's
sister

one bolster, two blankets, two pillows and one coverlet. To my granddaughter Elizabeth Harris, one heifer at my cousin Eppes. To my granddaughter Margaret Harris, my carved box, a damask table-cloth and six damask napkins. All my brass and pewter, and all my household stuff not otherwise disposed, to my daughter Harris' children. To my grandson John Harris, my bible and a pair of fringed gloves. To my son Thomas Harris, all the rest of my estate: viz. my part of the vessell, and all my debts. Executors: my son Thomas Harris and my daughter Martha Harris. Witnesses: Thomas Knowlton, Sr., James Chute.*

The inventory, which was made up of clothing and household articles, totalled £141.

Children:—

- i. JOHN, bapt. at Wickford July 6, 1617; mentioned in the will of his grandfather, Edmund Reade of Wickford, dated Nov. 20, 1623, probably that son of John and Margaret (Reade) Lake who was mentioned as dead by Mrs. Lucy Downing, when she wrote, on Jan. 30, 1657/8, from Edinburgh to Fitz John Winthrop: "Your uncle, Collonell Reade, was, a month or two since, with us, . . . and (said) that God had takne (*sic*) a sonn of his sister Lacke that was with him, and was very hopefull for further preferment."
- ii. THOMAS, bapt. at Wickford Jan. 18, 1618/19, of whom nothing further has been discovered.
- iii. RICHARD, bapt. at Wickford May 21, 1620; bur. there May 22, 1620.
- iv. ANN (called Hannah in New England records), bapt. at North Benfleet July 3, 1621; migrated with her mother to New England; m. about 1642 Capt. John Gallop, who had served in the Pequot War in 1637 and was killed in the Narragansett Swamp Fight in King Philip's War, Dec. 19, 1675, son of John and Christabel Gallop of Boston, Mass. They lived successively in Boston, New London, Conn., and Stonington, Conn.

Children:—

1. Hannah Gallop, b. Aug. 14, 1644; m. Stephen Gifford of Norwich, Conn., as his second wife; d. in 1721.
2. John Gallop; of Stonington, Conn.; m. his cousin, Elizabeth Harris.
3. Benadam Gallop; of Stonington.
4. William Gallop; of Stonington.
5. Christabel Gallop; m. Dec., 1677, Peter Crary.
6. Elizabeth Gallop; m. Henry Stephens.
7. Mary Gallop; m. John Cole of Boston.
8. Margaret Gallop; unmarried in 1704.
9. Samuel Gallop; d. s. p.
- v. ELIZABETH, bapt. at North Benfleet June 5, 1623; bur. there Aug. 31, 1623.

*The Probate Records of Essex County, II: 289.

- vi. MARTHA, bapt. at North Benfleet July 20, 1624; migrated with her mother to New England; living in 1687, when her husband made his will; m. at Ipswich Nov. 15, 1647, Thomas Harris of Ipswich, son of Thomas Williams alias Harris of Winnisimmet and Elizabeth, his wife. (*See Harris.*)
- vii. SAMUEL, bapt. at North Benfleet Mar. 29, 1629; bur. there Mar. 19, 1629/30.
- viii. ELIZABETH, bapt. at North Benfleet Feb. 17, 1630/1; probably d. in infancy.



100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200

100
101
102
103
104
105
106
107
108
109
110
111
112
113
114
115
116
117
118
119
120
121
122
123
124
125
126
127
128
129
130
131
132
133
134
135
136
137
138
139
140
141
142
143
144
145
146
147
148
149
150
151
152
153
154
155
156
157
158
159
160
161
162
163
164
165
166
167
168
169
170
171
172
173
174
175
176
177
178
179
180
181
182
183
184
185
186
187
188
189
190
191
192
193
194
195
196
197
198
199
200

6. ISAAC LAWRENCE, JR., of Canaan, Conn., m. May 18, 1760, Mary Brown, 7th child of Dea. Samuel Brown.
7. LYDIA LAWRENCE, b. 1761/2, d. Sept. 20, 1813; m. New Haven, Vt., Phineas Phelps, b. April 10, 1767, d. April 20, 1813.
8. DAVID NASH PHELPS, b. Oct. 4, 1796, d. April 15, 1884; m. April 29, 1821, Elizabeth Hungerford, b. Feb. 7, 1798, d. Jan. 7, 1878.

From here same as Summary of Arms Ancestry, 8th to 10th Generations; Colonial Daughters of the 17th Century, p. 136, No. 772; and Daughters of the American Colonists, 1931, pp. 26-36, No. 2089; ancestry traced by the author of this book.

READ ANCESTRY



Arms—Gules, a saltire between four garbs or.

Crest—On the stump of an oak-tree, a falcon rising proper belled and jessed or.

Motto—*Cedant arma togae.*

The family name, Read, found in a variety of spellings, such as Reade, Reed and Reid, originated as a personal name to designate a person of red or ruddy complexion. It is found not only in England, where it has been common since surnames first came into use, but also in Scotland and various countries on the Continent. (Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.") The history of the Read family of Kent, England, dates back to 1139, to Brianus de Rede, or Morpeth, on the Ensback River in the North of England. In this country since the date of the family's landing, the name has been upheld and cherished, many of those bearing it having been awarded distinction and honor.

In his "Ancestry of Priscilla Baker," 1870, the late William Sumner Appleton, Esq., devoted a chapter to the Reade family of Wickford, Co. Essex, England, four members of which emigrated to

America. They were a brother and three sisters: Col. Thomas Reade, who was of Salem, Mass., in 1634, and was later an officer in Cromwell's army; Mrs. Margaret (Reade) Lake of New London, Conn., and Ipswich, Mass.; Mrs. Martha (Reade) (Eppes) Symonds, second wife of Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds of Ipswich; and Mrs. Elizabeth (Reade) Winthrop, wife of John Winthrop, Jr., Governor of Connecticut.

Mr. Appleton examined the parish registers of Wickford and found many items therein relating to Edmund and Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade, the parents of the four emigrants; but between the years 1595 and 1604 no entries pertaining to this family appeared. This lack has now been explained through a search, made for another purpose, in the registers of the parish of North Benfleet, Co. Essex, now deposited in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. North Benfleet lies a few miles southeast from Wickford, and at the period in question the Lord of the principal manor was Edmund Church, who had inherited it from his Tyrrell ancestors. Church was twice mentioned as "brother" in the will of William Reade of Wickford (1603), the father of Edmund Reade; and it was doubtless as Church's tenant at the manor house, which is still standing and is now the rectory, that Edmund Reade resided in North Benfleet.

The first Reade entry in the registers of North Benfleet is given here verbatim, in the Latin employed by the rector, but the entries that follow have been translated and condensed.

BAPTISMS

- 1597 Maria Reade filia Edmundi Reade et Elizabeth ux de Northe Bemflette nata fuit decimo octavo die mensis Junii et baptizata vicesimo sexto die ejusdem mensis in Ecclesia North Bemflette A° 1597 p'd.
- 1598 Margaret Reade daughter of Edmund Reade and Elizabeth his wife born 11 July and baptized 16 July. (Afterwards Mrs. Margaret Reade Lake.)
- 1599 William Reade son of Edmund Reade and Elizabeth his wife born 28 Oct. 1599 and baptized 1 Jan. 1599/1600.
- ✓ 1602 Martha Reade daughter of Edmund Reade born 13 July and baptized 22 July. (Afterwards Mrs. Martha Reade Eppes Symonds.)
- 1605 Thomas Reade son of Edmund Reade and Elizabeth his wife, born 2 Jan. and baptized 7 January 1605/6.
- 1609 Samuel Reade son of Edmund Reade born 23 July and baptized 31 July.
- 1612 Thomas Reade son of Edmund Read and Elizabeth his wife baptized 15 August. (Afterwards Col. Thomas Reade.)

BURIALS

- 1600 Edmund Reade son of Edmund Reade and Elizabeth his wife of North Bemflette 30 March.
- 1602 Mary Reade daughter of Edmund Reade, 13 April.
- 1607 Thomas Reade son of Edmund Reade, 15 September.
- 1629 John Read, 12 October.
- 1631 Ellen Read, widow, 9 February (1631/2).

MISCELLANEOUS

- ✓ 1601 Boundes of the upland groundes of the said parishe of North Beamflette . . . perambulated, etc. Edmund Read (first name).

(1) JOHN READ, the first of this branch of the family to come to America, is thought to have been a son of William and Lucy (Heneage) Reade. He was born probably at Maidstone, County Kent, near London, England, in 1593, and sailed from London for America on April 1, 1630, with the great fleet of eleven ships, which accompanied Governor John Winthrop, with about seven hundred persons, arriving at Salem, Massachusetts, June 22, 1630. He was of Weymouth, Massachusetts, in 1637, of Dorchester in 1638, and from there removed to that part of Braintree which is now Quincy, where he was a freeman, May 13, 1640.

In the spring of 1643/44, he joined the company of the Reverend Samuel Newman, of Weymouth, in founding a settlement at Seekonk, which Indian name he replaced with the Scripture town name, Rehoboth; and the name of John Read is the third in the list of estates in 1643; according to which, the allotments of land were distributed. His estate was valued at lbs. 300, a large property for those times. He served as constable, and lived at the Rim, now in the town of Seekonk, where he was proprietor of an inn, and a leading man of the town. He died Sept. 7, 1685, at the age of eighty-seven years, and was buried in the old Seekonk Burying Ground, the inscription on his gravestone, "J. R. aet eighty-seven, D. S. 1685." He and his wife, Sarah, were the parents of thirteen children.

ELIAS READ AND HIS DESCENDANTS

2. Elias, who is supposed to be a son of William Reade of Maidstone, in the county of Kent, professor of divinity, and his wife Lucy Heneage, was born in 1595; and the first that is known of him is in Woburn, Mass. He had sons William and Philip, and Thomas, who were born in England.
3. Thomas, son of Elias, settled in Sudbury; and died July 25, 1659, leaving a son Thomas.
4. Thomas, son of Thomas of Sudbury, married Mary Bigelow. Children:—Thomas, Matthew, Benjamin, Edmond. He was made freeman in 1656. He died in 1701; his wife died in 1707.
5. Thomas, son of Thomas and Mary of Sudbury, married Mary Wood, May 30, 1667. Children:—Thomas, born May 22, 1678; Elizabeth, married Nathaniel Wilson, Dec. 28, 1709; he was appointed on a committee to lay out highways in 1664; was rated to build a bridge in 1693. His wife died in 1724.
6. Thomas, son of Thomas and Mary of Sudbury, born May 22, 1678; married Abigail Bacon, July 1, 1708, for second wife. Children by first wife:—Nathaniel, Oct. 6, 1702; Isaac and Thomas, Feb. 23, 1704; Catherine, Jan., 1707. By second wife:—Mary, born May 1, 1711; Abigail, Feb. 12, 1713; married Daniel Winch of Framingham, March 11, 1742; Daniel, May 19, 1714; Betsy, June 16, 1716; Lydia, Aug. 20, 1718; Joseph, Dec. 4, 1722.
7. Nathaniel, son of Thomas of Sudbury, born Oct. 6, 1702; married Phebe Lamb. Children:—Reuben, born Nov. 2, 1730; Joshua, Dec. 14, 1732; Phebe, Jan. 28, 1734; married Joshua Harrington of Brookfield in 1754; Lydia, born March 13, 1736, married Jonathan Danforth in 1759; Mary, born Jan. 30, 1738; married Judith Cutler in 1759; Nathan, born March 8, 1740; Oersis, married a Levins; Martha, born Sept. 26, 1743; married Henry Waldrige in 1762; Abigail, born March 17, 1746; married Thomas Cutler of Lexington in 1764; Ruth, born Jan. 31, 1747; married William Gree, Oct. 16, 1769; Nathaniel, born March 16, 1749; Eunice, Aug. 4, 1751; Nathan, Oct. 1, 1758. He settled in that part of Brookfield which is now a portion of the town of Warren. He was a large landholder, his farm consisting of fourteen hundred acres.
8. Reuben, son of Nathaniel and Phebe of Brookfield, born

Nov. 2, 1730; married Tamerson Meachem of Enfield, in 1754. Children:—Reuben, born Jan. 20, 1756; Elizabeth, Oct. 26, 1757; married Daniel Foster, the minister of New Braintree; Nathan, born July 2, 1759; Nathaniel, April 4, 1762; Joshua, Jan. 20, 1764; Sarah, April 29, 1768; Tamerson, Dec. 25, 1769; married Lieut. William Eastman of Granby, Sept. 5, 1794; Levi, born July 17, 1773; married Lucinda Morgan of Brimfield. He was a Major of militia in the Revolution and a man of note. He died May 26, 1803, on the old homestead in Warren, aged seventy-three.

9. Nathaniel, son of Reuben and Tamerson of Warren, born April 4, 1762; settled in Cambridge, in the State of Vermont, in 1800, where he died in 1842, aged 80 years. Children:—Rensselaer; Nathaniel, who is a lawyer in Cambridge, Vt.; Virgis; Adeline, married a Story; Horace; Thomas; George W.; Tamerson, married Walter Germain; David, born in Warren, Mass., July 24, 1799, and admitted to the Bar in Franklin Co., Vt., in 1823.
10. Rensselaer, son of Nathaniel of Cambridge, Vt. Children:—Charles Rensselaer, born in Fairfield, Aug. 6, 1810; Silas H.; Maria, who married Warren Root of Burlington; Hannah, married Lanson Read of Columbus, Ohio.
11. Charles R., son of Rensselaer, born at Fairfield, Vt., Aug. 6, 1810; married Sally Smith of Fairfield, March 6, 1831. Children:—Rensselaer Smith, born July 8, 1832; Sarah Sophia, Jan. 1, 1836; Ephraim S., May 1, 1839, owned large farm adjoining the Railroad Station, East Fairfield, Vt., which at his death was inherited by his son, Charles, who still lives on the old farm; Charles Joab, Feb. 27, 1843; Julius Herbert, Nov. 7, 1845.
12. Rensselaer Smith Read married — and had children: Adell, Anna, Minnie and Vinnie (twins). Adell married William S. Soule of East Fairfield; had one son, Reubin. After her death, he married her sister Anna; had two sons, Read and Hubert. Minnie married Charles Oliver of Sheldon. Vinnie married Wayland Croft of East Fairfield. Reubin married Mollie Merrill. Hubert married Anna Isham.
12. Ephraim Smith Read married Henrietta Sturges. He was a member of Ransom Guards or State Militia, 1861. When news of Fort Sumpter was fired upon reached here, the Captain called a Meeting and First Regiment, mustered in service, May 2, 1861; mustered out, Aug. 15, 1861. Ephraim S. Read, Sr., was Private in Co. C. He was one of first in County and one of first who re-enlisted in Co. B., Third Vermont, remustered in April 12, 1862. He was promoted to Sergeant; mustered out, April 22, 1865. He was under General McClellan at the Peninsular Campaign, under Sheridan at Shenandoah, Meade at Gettysburg, under Grant during rest of War and was near General Grant when Lee surrendered.

THOMAS COOKE the elder of Pebmershe, Essex, yeoman, 30 August 1621, proved 26 November 1621. To the poor of that parish five pounds. To the poor of Alphamston and Lamarshe in Essex twenty shillings (i.e. ten shillings each). Those bequests to be distributed by the discretion of the minister and the most chiefest inhabitants of either parish. Five pounds more to the poor of Pebmershe as an increase of the stock of twenty pounds given to them by Mr. Hugh Clapham, sometime the minister of the same parish, to purchase a house or lands &c. To Thomas Cooke my grandchild my message &c. called Goddard's & all my lands &c. which I late purchased of John Hilton gent and Mary his wife, situate &c. in Gestingthorpe and Little Mapelsted, Essex, now in the occupation of John Clark or his assigns. To my brother Lawrence Cook and Robert Cook, during their natural lives, to either of them forty shillings apiece yearly. To Thomas Wiscowe the younger, my sister's son five pounds. To every of the children of my brother John Cooke deceased, my sister Wiskowe and my sister Sawen deceased and my brother Lawrence, not before nominated and bequeathed unto, twenty shillings apiece. To George Cook my grandchild all such my estate, interest and term of years which I have yet to come in lands &c. in Lamarshe, Essex, which I late had by demise and grant of one Robert Beale of Lamarshe. I do forgive unto Edmund Reade my son in law the three score pounds due unto me by his bill of 1 December 1606. To my daughter Elizabeth, now his wife, three score pounds in one year after my decease. To my said daughter Elizabeth and to Margaret her daughter, now wife of John Lake, and to Susan now wife of my son Thomas, to every of them one spur Riall of gold apiece. To Samuel Reade my grandchild forty pounds and every of the residue of my daughter Reed's children unmarried, ten pounds apiece, to be paid within one year after my decease unto them or their father for them. To every of the children of Thomas Cook, my son, twenty pounds apiece. The residue &c. to Thomas Cooke, the younger, my son, whom I make sole executor. If he refuse then I make Edmund Reade my son in law sole executor. I give to Martha Reade, now wife of — Epps of London, my grandchild, ten pounds, in one month after my decease. To Johane Gilott, my late servant, twenty shillings. To Maryon Edwards, Clement Chaundler and Elizabeth Hayward five shillings apiece, and to William Scott George Smith and Samuel Medcalf three shillings four pence apiece, and to Thomas Maninge, Thomas French and Richard Goodwyn two shillings six pence apiece.

Wit: George Coo, Robert Willfins and Thomas Smithe. Dale, 94.

[This will, which I communicated very briefly to the Mass. Historical Society in January, 1890, was a welcome find as confirming my supposition that Elizabeth, wife of Edmund Reade of Wickford, was daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh. (See Ancestry of Priscilla Baker, p. 105.) Her descendants in this country are many. The Cooke pedigree may be seen in Visitation of Essex, Harleian Society, vol. xiii., p. 383.—WILLIAM S. APPLETON.]

Grandfather of Martha (Read) (Epps) Symonds

grandson?

→ THOMAS COKE of Pebmarsh, Essex, Esquire, — January 1679, proved 24 November 1682. My desire is that my body may be decently buried without pomp or ceremonies in the churchyard of Pebmarsh: between the graves of my dearly beloved and entirely loving wives, Elizabeth and Judith; and, being so buried, my will is, and I do hereby require mine executors to cause three graves (together with my son John's on the North side of his mother's) to be raised with good brick, and a large stone to be laid upon them. I do give and bequeath (as an addition to the provision for the aged poor people of the parish of Pebmarsh) ten pounds, to be paid when the house andcroft in Little Henny shall be sold, and the money thereof arising shall be laid out on a purchase of some house or houses near the Church, or some piece of land in or near the parish, to be employed for the more comfortable relief of the aged poor according to the intention of the first donors, at which time and for the effecting whereof I do appoint mine executors to pay the said ten pounds. And I do also give five pounds more to be distributed among the poorer sort of well disposed people of the said parish. I do give to John Scot and Abigail his wife three pounds apiece, to Edward Abraham three pounds and to Mary his wife six pounds, and to my servants which shall be with me at my death ten shillings apiece. To every of my brothers' and sisters' children twenty pounds apiece, Thomas Bennett taking reasonably for the mare my son had of him or else I do give unto him but ten pounds. To Mr. Brinley Mr. Ely and Mr. Crow three pounds apiece, and eleven pounds more to be distributed among such other poor ministers as are turned out of their living because they conform not, such as known to my nephew Grandorge. I do give unto Joseph Coke my brother seven pounds and all my wearing clothes, which are fit for his condition, and to his wife three pounds. To Mrs. Arrowsmith, Mrs. Parsons and Mrs. Horton all such lien as was Mr. Percivall's, their father, in his life time and are now remaining. To my daughter Elizabeth her mother's bible, that she may improve it as she did, and also all things in my best parlor chamber. To Joseph Coke, my brother, fifteen hundred pounds, to be paid out of my whole estate, for the redeeming of Huntshall &c. upon this condition, that if my son and daughter Parsons and their trustees shall release unto him and his heirs all the right, title and interest which they have in my said farm called Huntshall in Pebmershe &c., then this bequest of fifteen hundred pounds to be void and of none effect. And I do then give Huntshall &c. unto my said brother Joseph for life, and after his decease to his son Thomas and his heirs for ever, paying unto his sisters here in England twenty pounds apiece and to his brother and sister in New England also twenty pounds apiece, to be paid unto them within one year after he shall be twenty and one years old. And if my son Parsons or my daughter, or their trustees, shall refuse to release unto them the said Huntshall then my will and meaning is, and I do hereby give and bequeath unto my said brother and his son and heirs the houses and lands bought of Turner and Wistow and other freehold which I purchased, together with all my leasehold lands and copyhold lands to him and his heirs for ever, hoping they will not endeavor to cross what I know was my dear father's desire and is here accordingly declared to be my will. To Mr. Trussell thirty shillings and to his son Thomas ten shillings. For the payment of my debts and legacies and my son's just debts I do give to be sold by mine executors all my pieces of meadow in Lumer Road Meadow, my farm in

Gestingthorpe, called Goddards, and the farm wherein George Radleigh now dwelleth, in Pebmersh, both free and copyhold, with all my stock, goods and chattels without the house &c. And, my debts and legacies being all so paid and Huntshall well and surely settled upon my brother Joseph and his son Thomas and his heirs as above is provided, I do give and bequeath all the residue of my real and personal estate unto Elizabeth my daughter during the term of her natural life, and after her decease the goods and personal estate to her children as she shall please, and all the land and real estate &c. to her son John Parsons, my grandchild, his mother allowing him good maintenance for his liberal education, and he (when he shall enjoy the lands) paying to his sister Anthonia three hundred pounds and to the rest of his mother's children which she may hereafter have one hundred pounds apiece. To Anthony Parsons my son (if he will accept of it) my best fur coat and what book he pleases. My other fur coat I do give unto Joseph my brother, if living at my decease; if not, then to John Scott. I do give my Polyglott Bible to my nephew Grandrige, and my

*m ce 1574 Edmund Reed
Elizabeth (Cook) (Reed) m. 1624 Rev Hugh Peters b 1578
about the same age as her
own children!*

Pioneers of Massachusetts, Charles Henry Peters, p 115

COOK, etc., cont.

Col. George, gent., Cambridge, frm. March 3, 1635-6. He and his bro. Joseph came in the Defense July 4, 1635, registered as the servants of Roger Hariakenden; but bought property on their arrival, and occupied prominent stations in town and colony. Made contract Dec. 1, 1643, with Dr. Samuel Reade of Starford, Eng.; mortg. house at Camb. to S. Symonds of Ipswich. [Ips. De.] He ret. to Eng. and took part on the Parliamentary side in the Revolution.

He d. in Ireland, and admin. on his est. was made here 4 (8) 1652. In 1690 John Quick, of London, husband of his dau. Elizabeth, gave power of attorney for the collection of est. in N. E. Wife Alice; ch. b. in Cambridge, Elizabeth b. and d. 1640, Thomas b. and d. 1642, Mary b. 15 (6) 1646.

Joseph, gent., older bro. of George, above, came with him. Settled at Cambridge. Frm. March 3, 1635-6. Deputy, town officer; had charge of the military after his bro. ret. to Eng. He was a son of Thomas Cooke, of Great Yealdham, co. Essex, Eng., and made his bro. Thomas C. of Wormingfold his attorney, Nov. 5, 1639. [L.] He ret. to Eng.; deeded Cambridge lands from Stannaway, Essex. Wife Elizabeth; ch. Joseph b. 27 (10) 1643, Elizabeth b. 16 (1) 1644-5, Mary b. 30 (11) 1646, Grace b. 9 (10) 1648, Grace b. 1 (3) 1650, "Ruth bapt. at Camb." [M.] [See Epps.]

*These two men were brothers of Elizabeth (Cook) (Reed) Peters,
that under of Martha (Reed) (Epps) Symonds*

LAKE. Mrs. Margaret Lake. The sister of Mrs. John Winthrop, jr., and Mrs. Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds. She possessed land in Ipswich, Connecticut, Maine. Several of her letters are preserved in the archives of the American Antiquarian Society, Worcester, Mass., together with letters written to Rebekah Symonds from her son in England.

The Will of Margaret Lake, of Ipswich, widow:

— I give unto my daughter, Hannah Gallop, and her children, all my land at New London: and also my best gowne, and my red cloth petticoat, and my enameled ring. And after her decease, my will is, that my grand daughter, Hannah Gallop, shall have the said ring.

Also, I give unto my granddaughter, Hannah Gallop, a pair of sheets, and one of my best pewter platters, and one of the next.

Item. I give unto my daughter, Martha Harris, my tapestry coverlet, and all my other apparell which are not disposed of to others particularly. Also, I give unto her my mantle; and after her decease to all of her children, as they need it.

Also, the coverlet of tapestry, after my daughter Martha decease, I give it to my grandson Thomas Harris: and he dying without issue, to his brother John, and so the rest of the children.

Also, I give to my daughter Martha, my gold ring. And my will is that after her decease, that my Granddaughter, Martha Harris, shall have it.

Item. I give to my granddaughter, Martha Harris, my bed, and bedstead, and one boulder, two blankets, two

Sister of our Martha (Rebecka) Symonds

pillows, and one coverlet.

Item. I give to my granddaughter Elizabeth Harris, one heyfer at my cozen Eppes.

Item. I give to my granddaughter, Margaret Harris, my carved box, and one damask table cloth, and six damask napkins.

Item. My will is that all my brass and pewter, with the rest of my household stuffe undisposed, be equally disposed and divided amongst my daughter Harris's children.

Item. I give and bequeath unto my sonne Thomas Harris, all the rest of my estate, viz: my part of the ves-sell, and all my debt,—only my Bible excepted, which I give to my grandson John Harris: and a pair of frenged gloves.

I appoint my sonne Thomas Harris and my daughter Martha Harris, to be my executor and executrix of this my last will and testament, this thirtieth day of August, the Year of Grace, sixteen hundred and seventy two. 1672.

These being wit-
nesses

MARGARET LAKE
hir mark

Thomas Knowlton, sen'r
James Chute

In the inventory of Mrs. Margaret Lake's effects, appraised by John Dane, Thomas Knowlton, John Loughton, are the following items:

one tapstre coverlet	7 4 10 0
one bedstead, a feather bed, and a flocked bed and three down pillows	17 0 0
a sarge sute and a crimson petticoat	2 10 0
three carved boxes	1 10 0
one scarlet mantle	4 0 0
four payer of holon sheets and three payer and one sheete of others	11 0 0
a damask table cloth and five napkins	4 0 0
four holon pilobers and two others	1 8 0
four shifts	1 16 0
her weading shift	1 0 0
a great Bible	0 12 0

a pare of gloves	0 8 0
part of the barke	12 0 0
debts due from Mathew peary	4 0 0
William Quarles	5 0 0
Mr. Ipse	4 0 0
Joseph Lee	5 0 0
Debts to be paid ;	
to Marchant Wanrite	2 19 7
To decon Goodhue	1 20 0

J. Wingate Thornton, Esq., has a fragment of a letter written at London, ye 5th Sept. 1672, by Lidia Bankes to her Dear Cousin. But the name of the cousin is wanting. That which is legible reads :

"I have received yours by your Brother Symonds.— Your children having attained unto learning.—I doe not remember I ever saw you above once, which was at your mother's house in New England. But I very well remember you from a child & when you were in Holland, you and your cousin John Lake with us, and rejoyce you were under soe worthy a person for tuition as your grandfather.

"Besides I well remember your family of ye Eppes, for I was brought up with them from my youth — while your mother lived we constantly corresponded — and she always gave me an account of her children and ye blessed condition of your Sister En——, who was a pretious christian. And of your Sister m——. I desire my affectionate love to your wife and all your children; not forgetting ould mr. Bourman, Mr. Rogers; and their wives, if alive, my great respects to them. My service to your father Symonds, my Cousin ——

"I have most dear respect for your Aunt Lake, but just as I was writing I heard of her death. If there be any of her children, remember me to them.—My sister Reade and Cousin Samuel present them servise ——"

Additional: Mrs. Margaret Lake was the daughter of Edmand Reade, of Wickford, County Essex, England. An ancient copy of her father's will was found among the Winthrop Papers, and was printed in the "Proceedings of

the Massachusetts Historical Society," 1862-3. John Ward Dean said of this Will: "One of the daughters of the testator, named in the will, afterwards became the second wife of John Winthrop, Jr., and the mother of all his children. Before her marriage her father had died and her mother had become the wife of the celebrated Hugh Peter. Mrs. Margaret Lake, who was at Connecticut and Ipswich, we see by the will was an older sister of Elizabeth; and the other sister, Martha, is named in the will as the wife of Daniel Epps. We afterwards find Martha in New England, the wife of Samuel Symonds."

One of our local papers give another glimpse of Mrs. Margaret Lake and her children:

"The earliest Harris in Ipswich, was Thomas who married Martha Lake, November 15, 1647. His name does not appear in any of the shipping lists, and it cannot be determined when he came to New England or where he came from. He was evidently a man of quality, or he could not have married Martha Lake, a young woman allied to the Winthrops; her aunt Elizabeth being the wife of John Winthrop, Jr., who settled Ipswich, and who had horse lots on East street, High street, and at Rocky Hill extending to Turkey Shore.

Martha Lake Harris was the daughter of John and Margaret Lake. John Lake was of the Lake Family of Nor-manton, Yorkshire, who claimed descent from William the Conqueror. Mrs. Margaret Lake was the daughter of Edmund Reade, Wickford, County Essex. She lived many years in Ipswich; and her will, on file, and dated 1672, gives a quaint idea of ancient elegancies.

Hannah Lake, another daughter of John and Margaret, married John Gallop, Jr., who was a bold and famous soldier in days of early Indian warfare.

Thomas and Martha (Lake) Harris had four sons and three daughters. Serg't John, their son, married Grace Searle. Margaret, their daughter, married John Staniford, and was remembered, for her name, in her grandmother Lake's will."

New England Marriages Prior to 1700
by Clerical Almon Torrey

EPES, Daniel [called "cousin" by Mrs. Lydia BANKS] & Martha [READ] (1602-), m/2 Samuel SYMONDS; in Eng. ca 1621; Salisbury
EPES, Daniel (1623-1693) & 1/wf Elizabeth SYMONDS (1624-1685); 20 May 1644; Salisbury
EPES, Daniel (1649-1722) & 1/wf Martha BOARDMAN (-1692); 17 Apr 1672; Salem
EPES, Daniel (1623-1693) & 2/wf Lucy (WOODBIDGE) [BRADSTREET] (1642-), w Simon; aft 7 May 1685; Cambridge/Ipswich
EPES, Daniel (1649-1722) & 2/wf Hannah [WANWRIGHT], w Francis; aft 1692, 1693; Salem
EPES, Symonds & 2; b 1699; Ipswich

over Martha's first husband & sons above right

NEHGR 71: 91-2

EPES-LINSFORD-YALE-ENDICOTT. — The Harleian Society has recently published the Registers of St. Olave, Hart Street, London, 1563-1700, a parish church situated in a part of London in which one might expect to find traces of early emigrants to America. Hart Street itself is near the Fenchurch Street Station of the Great Eastern Railway, and is a continuation of Crutched Friars, extending to Mark Lane; and in this parish is Trinity House, adjoining the Precinct and Liberty of the Tower. The adjacent parishes are St. Catherine Coleman, St. Dunstan in the East, St. Botolph (Aldgate), and Allhallows (Barking). In the Registers of St. Olave, Hart Street, the following entries relating to early New England families have been found:

- 1628 Martha daughter of Daniell Eps buried 31 May.
- 1629 Marie daughter of Daniel Eps and Martha baptized 8 October.
- ✓ 1630 Daniell Eps a housholder buried 26 June.
- 1630 Thomas son of Francis Eps and Marie baptized 8 September.
- 1655 John son of Elizabeth Linsford "was borne in New England the last of March 1651 & baptized October the 1st"
- 1655 Elizabeth daughter of David and Desula Yale, "frō Tower Libertie," buried 2 October.
- 1656 "two male childrē, twins, of David & Desula Yale, brought frō Tower Libertie," buried 23 May.
- 1689 Ann daughter of John and Ann Endicott baptized 13 October.
- 1693 Robert Edwards son of John and Ann Endicott baptized 11 April.

Of the persons whose names appear in these entries, Daniel Epes, who was buried 26 June 1630, became a member of the Artillery Company of London in 1619, and was the father of Daniel Epes who emigrated with his mother to New England in 1637. Thomas Cooke the Elder of Pebmarsh, co. Essex, yeoman, in his will, dated 30 Aug. 1621 and proved 26 Nov. 1621, mentions "Edmund Reade my son in law," and "my daughter Elizabeth, now his wife," and gives "to Martha Reade, now wife of — Epes of London, my grandchild," £10. (REGISTER, vol. 47, pp. 128-129.) Edmand Reade of Wickford, co. Essex, in his will dated 20 Nov. 1623, mentions "Daniell Epes & Martha Epes my Daughter" and "Elizabeth Epes and Daniel Epes their Children." (Appleton's Ancestry of Priscilla Baker, p. 123.) In 1677 Daniel Epes, the New England immigrant, deposed, aged 52. His sister Marie or Mary, baptized 8 Oct. 1629, married Peter Duncan of Gloucester and Gloucester, Mass.

The above shows that Martha's first husband, Daniel Epes died June 27, 1630 in London, before she emigrated to America with relatives

Epes

Pioneer of Massachusetts
by Charles Henry Pope

EPES, EPES,

Mr. Daniel, gent., Ipswich, witness of a deed in 1641; propr.; town officer. Attorney for his cousin Joseph Cooke of Cambridge in a suit in 1658. [Es. Court files IV, 114.] He resided in London in 1621, when his wife recd. a beq. from her mother's father Thomas Cooke, yeoman, of Pebmershe, Essex. [Reg. XLVII, 128.] He m. Martha, dau. of Mr. Edmund Read, of Wickford, co. Essex, Eng.; she survived him and m. Deputy governor Samuel Symonds. Ch. Daniel, deposed in 1675, ae. about 50 years; Elizabeth, ae. 13, came in the Abigail in July, 1635; named in the will of her grandfather Reade in 1623; a dau. m. Peter Duncan of Gloucester. [Es. De. 1662.]

EPES, Captain Daniel, 1. is said by Farmer to have been the son of Daniel Epes of Kent, England, and to have come with his mother, who married Dep. Gov. Symonds. He was a subscriber to Major Denison's allowance in 1648. He married Elisabeth, daughter of the Hon. Samuel Symonds, May 20, 1644, and had, according to Farmer, eleven children, whose names and dates of birth are given from 1647 to 1659. This list does not contain the name of his son Symonds, who was born about 1662, and survived him. One other of his children, Daniel, born March 24, 1649, only survived him.

[Savage gives his children: Samuel, born 24 Feb. 1647, H. C. 1669, died 1685 at London; Daniel, born 24 March, 1649, H. C. '69; Nathaniel 1650; John, 1651; Joseph, 1653; Martha, 1654; Mary, 1656; Lionel, 1657; infant, 1658; Richard, 1659; Symonds, 1662.]

His wife Elisabeth died May 7, 1685:

Here lies ye Body
of Mrs. Elizabeth Epes,
(wife of Capt. Daniel Epes, Esq'r.)
who died May ye 7th, 1685,
Aged about 61 years.

After her death, he married Lucy, daughter of Rev. John Woodbridge, and widow of Rev. Simon Bradstreet. He died, 1692:

Here Lyes Buried
ye Body of Capt.
Daniel Epes, Esquire,
who died January
ye 8h, 1692, aged
about 70 years.

His property consisting principally of the Castle Hill Neck estate, which he purchased, December 1, 1664, of his father-in-law Symonds, was appraised at £1411, 5s., and was divided January 1, 1693, into four shares, which were assigned to the heirs as follows:

To Daniel the eldest son, two shares; the Homestead called Castle Hill, 130 acres, bounded southerly by the cut creek, westerly by Sagamore Hill creek and Ipswich town river, northerly by the sea, south easterly by a stone wall in part, and ditch and creek.

To Major Symonds Epes, the "whole island," in another record called the "hole island," containing about 100 acres, near Castle Hill, and bounded northerly by the cut creek; south easterly by little Chebacco river; south westerly by Ring's marsh; north westerly by a branch of Sagamore Hill creek.

To Robert Greenough and Daniel Greenough, grand-children of said Daniel Epes, Esquire, £100 a piece.

To Lucy Epes, relict, £100.

Samuel, 2, eldest son of Daniel 1, born Feb 24, 1647, graduated at H. C. 1669; came into full communion with the church April 12, 1674 and died before his father, who was appointed adm'r of his estate, September, 1685.

Daniel, 2, son of Daniel 1, was born March 24, 1649; graduated at Harvard College, 1669; freeman, May 27, 1674; was a member of the "executive counsell," and died in November, 1722. He resided at Salem, where he was a school-master, 1682. He came into full communion with the church at Ipswich, April 12, 1674. He married April 17, 1672, Martha, daughter of William Bordman, of Cambridge, and had two sons and seven daughters.

Daniel 3, son of Daniel 2, born Oct 28, 1679. Farmer says he married Hannah Higginson of Boston, in May, 1704, but it appears by the Ipswich Records that he was published, April 27, 1705, with Hannah Hicks of Boston. They had according to Farmer, seven sons and two daughters.

Symonds 2, son of Daniel 1, was born about 1662, and died Aug. 30, 1741, aged 79. He married Mary Whipple, March 26, 1715, who was probably his second wife. She survived him and became the third wife of President Holyoke, and died at Cambridge, March, 1790, in her 92d year. He left a son Samuel, [see Quincy's Hist. Harv. Univ. v. ii, p. 142,] and a daughter Elisabeth who married Edward Eveleth. He had the military title of Major and was a justice of the Court of Sessions, and a member of the Governor's Council ten years, 1724-34. The year of his daughter's marriage with Mr Eveleth, m. Dec. 5, 1715, he sells to him for the consideration of £300, "a dwelling house and land near ye meeting house, containing by estimation eight acres, bounded northwesterly by meeting house green, and Sadler Rogers his land; north-easterly by Coll'l John Appleton; easterly and southerly by Town River; north-westerly and south-westerly by Wardwell's land." A part of this lot contained the town residence of his grandfather, the Hon. Samuel Symonds. [The Seminary of Rev. J. P. and Mrs. E. C. Cowles stands upon the site of Mr. Symonds' town house; and the Public Library upon the site of a residence of an Appleton, who afterward erected a house on the Topsfield road.]

Mr. Norris continued his school for many years, teaching without pay the poor children with the well-to-do, whose parents paid.

Apparently, the town had built a small town house just westerly of the meeting house; and the selectmen voted, May 17, 1655, to prepare the town house for the school and watch. This was not done, probably, as on the thirteenth of the next March the selectmen voted to repair the schoolhouse. March 19, 1667-8, upon the request of Mr. Norris, the town voted to allow him three pounds to build a chimney in the schoolhouse and five pounds for "his encouragement for teaching of children for the year ensuing." The schoolhouse disappeared the next year, and this service of Mr. Norris ended, except for some occasional teaching. The town sold the land where the schoolhouse had stood to John Capen for five pounds and was paid Jan. 19, 1670-1.

April 5, 1670, the town voted that the selectmen hire a grammar schoolmaster; and, July 5th, Daniel Epes, jr., of Ipswich was engaged for twenty pounds a year, residents were to pay at the rate of one-third and strangers two-thirds of the salary. Mr. Epes was son of Hon. Daniel and Martha (Reade)

Daniel Epes¹ married, first, Martha Boardman of Cambridge April 17, 1672; she died Feb. 9, 1691-2; married, second, Hannah, widow of Francis Wainwright of Ipswich in 1693; died Nov. 23, 1722; children: 1. Martha,² born Aug. 10, 1673; died young; 2. Martha,² born March 8, 1676-7; married Rev. Peter Dallee of Boston April 1, 1714; 3. Mary,² born Feb. 19, 1677-8; died young; 4. Daniel,² born Oct. 28, 1679; 5. Samuel,² born Jan. 4, 1681; master-mariner; lived in Salem in 1741; 6. Elizabeth,² born March 19, 1684-5; married Capt. Edward Eveleth of Ipswich April 7, 1715; 7. Mary,² born Aug. 31, 1686; married John Capen of Topsfield (published Jan. 20, 1700-10); 8. Ruth,² born July 22, 1688; died, unmarried, in Danvers Jan. 11, 1767; 9. Margaret,² born March 31, 1691; married William Mackey.

COL. DANIEL EPES³, yeoman; married Hannah Hicks of Boston May 24, 1705; she was his wife in 1748; he died March 10, 1764; children: 1. Daniel,⁴ born Nov. 8, 1710, in Boston; 2. Francis,⁴ born Jan. 20, 1712-3, in Boston; 3. Elizabeth,⁴ baptized in Salem Feb. 21, 1714-5; probably died in Danvers July 6, 1801; 4. Samuel,⁴ baptized June 9, 1717; died Jan. 1, 1748; 5. John,⁴ baptized Oct. 23, 1720; married Mary Collins Nov. 9, 1751; 6. Mary,⁴ baptized Dec. 16, 1722; married John Proctor; 7. Joseph,⁴ baptized May 9, 1725; died young; 8. William,⁴ baptized June 11, 1727; 9. Joseph,⁴ baptized Aug. 31, 1729; died in Danvers Oct. —, 1758, aged twenty-nine.

CAPT. DANIEL EPES⁵, married Hannah Prescott Dec. 20, 1737; died in Danvers Jan. 28, 1773; she died about 1775; children: 1. Daniel,⁶ baptized April 20, 1739; married Abigail Frost Oct. 20, 1765; she died March —, 1825; 2. Francis,⁶ baptized Oct. 19, 1740; lived in Danvers; married Mary Frost of Kittery; had children; 3. Elizabeth,⁶ baptized May 1, 1743; married Joseph Proctor of Gloucester; 4. Hannah,⁶ baptized March —,

Epes of Ipswich, where he was born March 24, 1648-9, and he graduated at Harvard College in 1669.

Mr. Epes taught the school two years, and then went out of town. March 25, 1671, the town ordered that the selectmen should provide a house for Mr. Epes to keep school in. In 1671, Daniel Andrew taught school, in his own house, and was paid by the town. This was probably while repairs were being made upon the schoolhouse "that now is," one pound and eighteen shillings being paid for the "mending." Edward Norris again taught the grammar school from 1672 to 1675 inclusive for ten pounds annually. In the winter of 1674-5, he kept school in his own house.

When it was decided that the meeting house should be taken down, the town voted, Aug. 17, 1672, "that the old meeting house be reserv'd for The Towne use, to build a skoole house & watch house." The next spring, April 21, 1673, the town chose a committee "to Agree with a Carpenter or Carpenters to build a house for the towne which may Serve for a Schoole house & watch house and towne house of the timber of the old meeting-house according as the timber will bear." This was accordingly done, and of the old timbers a town, school and watch house was constructed in the middle of Washington Street, in front of the Masonic Temple.

The town house was two stories in height, the school room being on the first floor, with a chimney, and, of course, a fireplace. Thus, the school room was warmed in cold weather.

When the new school room was ready for use, "some suitable person" was sought to keep the grammar school, and Daniel Epes was seen. He expressed himself very willing to serve the town as a grammar schoolmaster, provided he might have suitable maintenance; and, April 7, 1677, he was engaged to again

1744-5; married Peter Clark of Braintree; 5. Samuel,¹ baptized March 1, 1746-7; major; lived in Danvers; married Mary Frost; died in Salem, when he was a bellows maker, Dec. 21, 1803, aged fifty-six; she died Feb. 9, 1820; had children; 6. Mercy,¹; 7. Mary,¹; married Isaac Lewis of Francestown, N. H., Oct. 18, 1774; 8. Benjamin,¹ baptized April 29, 1752, in Danvers; lived in Lyndeboro, N. H.; married Mary Proctor Oct. 19, 1793; she died in Danvers Jan. 22, 1820; 9. Sarah,¹ baptized Oct. 6, 1754, in Danvers; 10. William,¹ baptized March 29, 1761, in Danvers; 11. Joseph,¹ baptized March 27, 1763, in Danvers; died Jan. —, 1776, in Danvers. WILLIAM EPES², esquire; "late of Chesterfield, Va.," in 1750; married Abigail Pickman April 5, 1750; died Oct. 1, 1765; she married, secondly, Dr. Sylvester Gardiner of Boston April 30, 1772; children: 1. Abigail,² baptized Nov. 25, 1750; married Richard Routh; 2. William,² baptized Aug. 3, 1755; 3. Judith,² baptized July 24, 1757; 4. William Isham,² baptized Sept. 28, 1760; died at Southampton, England, Oct. 3, 1823, aged sixty-three; 5. Love Rawlins,² born June 8, 1762.

History of Salem by Sidney Paily

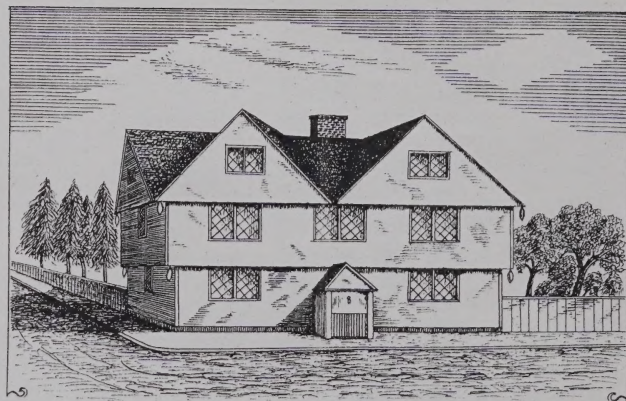
~~This Daniel Epes was nephew of our Beth (Symonds) Emerson, dau of Rev. Gen. Samuel Symonds~~

become the schoolmaster of the town. The town voted to lease the islands belonging to the town for his maintenance, etc., and in the following January the Beverly ferry rent, and the next month the Marblehead ferry rent was added to the income for this purpose. A written agreement was made with him by the selectmen, June 28, 1677, as follows:—

Agreed wth M^r Daniell: Epps In behalf of y^e towne, to pforme y^e place of a Gram^m Schoolemaster to y^e towne Soe Long as itt shall please God to Graunt him Life, health, and ability, To Learn & Instruct all Such Schollers as shall bee Sent to him, from any person or psons In y^e towne, In y^e English, Latten & Greeke tongue Soe as to fitt them for y^e Vniuersity, If desired & they are Capeable: alsoe to Vse his best Endeau^r to teach them good maners, & Instruct them In y^e principles of Christian religion In Consideration of y^e p^rmisses, hee y^e s^d Epps shall receiue from Euery pson, y^e Sends his Child or Children to Schoole, y^e Sum of twenty shillings In money p year for Each Child & w^{ch} y^e falls Short of Sixty pounds p anum In money, y^e Selectmen Ingage y^e towne shall make up: & In Case hee shall haue more Schollers, then to make up y^e aboue^d Sum of Sixty pounds, shall take y^e same to himself, as alsoe y^e benefitt, of all such as shall bee sent from other townes, hee shall alsoe haue y^e priuillidge, of Comonidge as formerly to all Inhabitants admitted, & bee freed from all rates, Trayning watchings, & wardings, as hath been Customary for those of y^e Like occupation: In wittness thereunto y^e s^d Epps hath sett his hand

DANIEL EPPS JUN

Mr. Epes now settled down permanently. His salary was fixed at sixty pounds annually. In 1682, he was still teaching here. He purchased of Edmond Batter the southwest corner of the governor's field, now the northern corner of Washington and Church streets, April 18, 1679¹; and built thereon a large dwelling house. In 1699, he laid out Church Street. This was at first called Epes lane. In this house he lived until his death, Nov. 23, 1722, having devised it to his wife Hannah for her life and at her decease to his son Samuel. Captain Epes conveyed it to Rev. John Sparhawk of Salem, for five hundred and fifty pounds, Aug. 3, 1737²; and Mr. Sparhawk, for eight hundred pounds, conveyed the house and land to Timothy Orne of Salem, merchant, July 18, 1746.³ Oct. 14, 1747, Mr. Orne conveyed it to his son Timothy, a merchant,⁴ who lived here several years. After his removal, the house was occupied by Thomas Somerville, a Scotsman, who conducted therein an inn known as the



DANIEL EPPS HOUSE

"Sign of the Indian King." Mr. Somerville removed in the winter of 1767-8. Mr. Orne had died the preceding summer, having devised the house and land to his son Samuel. The estate was then valued at three hundred pounds. The above cut of this house represents it as it appeared during Samuel's ownership. He died in 1785, when it was valued at four hundred and fifty pounds, and was in the possession of Capt. Jonathan Webb, who was conducting a tavern here. From the heirs of Samuel Orne, the title passed to Deborah Saltmarsh of Salem, singlewoman, May 20, 1789¹. She subsequently married Capt. Zadock Buffinton, who, in 1792, by remodeling the house, destroyed every vestige of its original architecture and raised it another story. Captain Buffinton conducted the "Ship Tavern" here for many years, being succeeded by others, and died in 1799, when the buildings and land were valued at six thousand dollars. Mrs. Buffinton died in 1815, leaving the estate to her stepson Jonathan Buffinton of Boston, merchant. Jonathan Buffinton, for five thousand dollars, conveyed the place, then known as Buffinton's Tavern, stables, barn and land to Gilbert Newhall of Salem, horse-letter, May 14, 1822.² Mr. Newhall lived here, and carried on his stable business in the rear of his residence. He died Oct. 15, 1863, and his heirs, for twelve thousand dollars, conveyed

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 6, leaf 58.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 73, leaf 185.

³Essex Registry of Deeds, book 88, leaf 151.

⁴Essex Registry of Deeds, book 98, leaf 52.

¹Essex Registry of Deeds, book 150, leaf 76.

²Essex Registry of Deeds, book 229, leaf 271.

Step grandfather
of Ruth (Symonds)
Emerson



HUGH PETERS,

Chief Intendant of England.

Born 1599. Executed 1660.

This heroic man was stepfather of Martha Read who married
Dep Gov. Samuel Symonds. Martha & Samuel are ancestors of the
Averills who settled in Kansas. Rev. Hugh Peters preached in London
then went to Rotterdam with the Puritans. He came to New England
in 1635 to replace Roger Williams who had been banished to
Rhode Island. (Mr Williams founded Providence.) Returned to England
in 1641 to represent the Colony regarding taxes & trade & became a
preacher in Cromwell's Army. After the death of Cromwell (who was
really a Welshman named Williams) the Royalists came back into power
and Peters was suspected of being a Regicide, thrown into the Tower of
London. He was condemned of treason, beheaded at Charing Cross 16 Oct 1660.
"He was compelled to wait while his friend Cocke, who had just been executed,
was cut down. 'How do you like this?' asked the savage hangman, exultingly. 'I thank
God' replied Peters, 'that I am not terrified of it. You may do your worst.'"

And turning to his friends, he said, "Weep not for me. My heart is full of comfort."
See: (- H.A. Phillips) Vol 40 NEHR-a large part of this volume is devoted
to Rev Peters (American Peoples Encyclopedia re: Cromwell & Williams)

Also see: (4 Vol Set - check all vols. of "History of Salem" by Sidney Perley) - in most 2nd & 3rd libraries
pages 298-9 + picture, about Rev. Peters. Pages 42-5 about Ruth (Symonds) Emerson's
half brother Daniel Eppes and a picture of his gorgeous home.



HUGH PETERS,

Arch. Intendant of England.

Born 1599. Executed 1660.

P. 8.

PEDIGREE CHART

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same
person as No. 6248 on chart No. 49

Averill Ancestors

48
Chart No. _____

Ancestry of Martha (Reade)(Epps) Symonds through her father:

READE



READE, MARTHA, wife of Lt. Gov. Samuel Symonds, Ipswich, Mass.
Arms: az a griffin and a canton or.
Crest: a griffin's head erased az beak and ears or.
Ref.: Coll. of Arms 1654; # 196 Roll

- I. WILLIAM READE, of Wickford, Essex, d. 1534
II. ROGER READE, b. Wickford, Co. Essex, Eng., d. March 17, 1558, Wickford; m. ELIZABETH, living Dec. 10, 1557, when husband made will, which will names "wife Elizabeth and son, Wm. Reade."

References:

Suffolk Manorial Families, V. 1, p. 164
Ancestors of Priscilla Baker, p. 105

- III. WILLIAM READE, b. Wickford, d. July 9, 1603, will dated July 3, 1603 (death is recorded in Wickford Parish register, Co. Essex); m. Mary Church. His will names wife, Mary, son Edmund Reade, brother Edmund Church.
IV. EDMUND READE, gent. b. May 23, 1563, Wickford, Co. Essex, Eng., will dated Nov. 20, 1623, d. Dec. 1, 1623 (Parish reg. Wickford, Co. Essex); m. ELIZABETH COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., d. 1637. Will of Edmund names loving wife, Elizabeth, Martha Epps, my dau., Elizabeth and Daniel and their children. Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade m. (2) after 1637, Rev. Hugh Peters. She was sister to Thomas Cooke of Great Yeldham, Essex, gent., who entered the pedigree in Visitation County Essex, 1623.

Her ancestry through her mother:

John Cooke b. Hertsley m. Miss ? Newton, d. Pebmarsh, had son

- I. ROBERT COOKE, of Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., m. Joan Sydney.

- II. THOMAS COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., made will Aug. 30, 1621, d. between Aug. 30 and Nov., 1621, Pebmarsh, Co. Essex; m. Susan Brand of Boxford, b. Boxford, Co. Suffolk, Eng.

References:

Vist. Essex, Har. M.S. V. 13, p. 381; Har M.S. V. 14, 32.
Morant's Hist. Essex, p. 263
Waters' Gleanings, p. 673

- III. ELIZABETH COOKE, m. (1) Edmund Reade and (2) Rev. Hugh Peters. * (who later remarried)

COOKE ARMS: sable, three bendlets arg. Crest: a cocatrice statant argent, wings or, beaked and combed gules. (Vist. Essex, 1634, p. 382)

- IV. MARTHA READE, who m. (1) Daniel Eppes of Kent and (2) Samuel Symonds.

COOKE:

Arms: Sa three bendlets arg.
Crest: a cockatrice statant arg wings or, beaked & combed gu.
Ref.: Vist, Essex, Harl, Ms. 13, p. 383

* When Charles II was restored to the monarchy, Rev. Peters was beheaded as a regicide for his presumed complicity in the death of Charles I. (He was a chaplain in Cromwell's army.) He "died nobly" just before his "Friend Cooke" was that his deceased 6th wife's brother?

1871

1871

1871

1871

is generally known that Mr. Davis added greatly to the records collected by Mr. Libby and Miss Noyes, and was the presiding genius in the final compilation and publication.

He was particularly generous to the Society during the fifty-two years of his membership, occasionally sending a cheque to be used for its general purpose or help with a special project, such as moving expenses. He gave ten copies of each of his ancestral volumes to the Society that it might offer them for sale and thus build up the General Fund; and in his will he made a generous bequest to the Society.

Walter Goodwin Davis was a fine type of Maine Yankee, shrewd and intelligent, of high integrity and moral caliber. He was genial and witty, a master of the English language, cultivated and urbane, widely travelled and keenly observant and quite at home in the intellectual and social circles of Boston, Cambridge and Portland.

A NEW HARLAKENDEN LINE

By SIR ANTHONY WAGNER, K.C.V.O., Garter King of Arms
and F. S. ANDRUS

In the summer of 1959 the late Dr. Arthur Adams drew the attention of the first named writer to a line deriving Roger Harlakenden (1611-1638) of Earl's Colne, Essex, and Cambridge, Mass., from the families of Quincy, Ferrers, Beauchamp of Powick and others, printed in Adams and Weis, *The Magna Charta Sureties, 1215* (1955), line 89, p. 73-5. He expressed doubt about certain links and asked for the position to be checked. When this had been done it was necessary to tell him that his doubts were justified. Roger Harlakenden was grandson of Roger Harlakenden (died in 1603) by Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Hardres (died in 1556). Thomas Hardres was asserted to be son of Christopher Hardres by Dorothy, daughter of Sir John Paston of the celebrated Norfolk family. The pedigree in the 1591 Visitation of Kent, however, showed that Dorothy Paston, who was the first wife of Thomas (not Christopher) Hardres, died without issue, and that his children, including Elizabeth, who married first George and then Roger Harlakenden, were the offspring of his second marriage to Mary Oxinden.¹

It was reported to Dr. Adams at the same time, however, that there were other lines of Roger Harlakenden's ancestry which might repay research and one of these has now turned out to give descents from royal and baronial lines. Through his mother, Margaret Huberd, Roger Harlakenden was descended from the well-known Chauncy family of Hertfordshire. Through the marriage of Sir William Chauncy to Joan, daughter of Sir Roger Bigod of Settrington (died in 1362) this brings descents from the Bigods, Earls of Norfolk, the Marshals, Earls of Pembroke, the lords of Galloway, the Kings of Scotland, Charlemagne, King Alfred and many more. The link is as follows:

Connects John Chauncy b. c. 1430 to Harperts & Harbards to Harlakenden
implies John C. Sr. was grandson of Roger Bigod

This does
not go
back
that
far

Step grandfather
of Ruth (Symonds)
Emerson



HUGH PETERS,

Chief Intendant of England.

Born 1599. Executed 1660.

This heroic man was stepfather of Martha Read who married
Dep Gov. Samuel Symonds. Martha & Samuel are ancestors of the
Averills who settled in Kansas. Rev. Hugh Peters preached in London
then went to Rotterdam with the Puritans. He came to New England
in 1635 to replace Roger Williams who had been banished to
Rhode Island. (Mr Williams founded Providence.) Returned to England
in 1641 to represent the Colony regarding taxes & trade & became a
preacher in Cromwell's Army. After the death of Cromwell (who was
really a Welshman named Williams) the Royalists came back into power
and Peters was suspected of being a Regicide, thrown into the Tower of
London. He was condemned of treason, beheaded at Charing Cross 16 Oct 1660.
"He was compelled to wait while his friend Cocke, who had just been executed,
was cut down. 'How do you like this?' asked the savage hangman, exultingly. 'I thank
God' replied Peters, 'that I am not terrified of it. You may do your worst.'
And turning to his friends, he said, 'Weep not for me. My heart is full of Comfort.'
See: (- H.S. Phillips) (Vol 40 N.E.H.R. - a large part of this volume is devoted
to Rev Peters) (American Peoples Encyclopedia re Cromwell & Williams)
Also see: (4 Vol set - check all vols. of "History of Salem" by Sidney Perley) - in most large libraries
pages 298-9 + picture, about Rev. Peters. Pages 42-5 about Ruth (Symonds) Emerson's
half brother Daniel Eppes and a picture of his gorgeous home.

Pioneers of Massachusetts -

by Charles Henry Pope - 27 386

PETER, [incorrectly called Peters,]

Rev. Hugh, b. in 1599 at Fowy, Cornwall, grad. Trinity Col., Cambridge, A.B. 1617, A.M. 1622; preached at St. Sepulchres, London. Subscribed toward the stock of the Mass. Bay Co. in 1628. Became a puritan. Was pastor of the English church at Rotterdam; came to Boston 6 (8) 1635. He was ordained pastor of the church at Salem, where he did an excellent work. He took a broad interest in all New England, and was an active promoter of many movements which helped on the civil, social and religious welfare of the people. He returned to England as one of the representatives of the Colonies at the opening of the Great Revolution, and became one of the foremost leaders of the Parliamentary party. After the Restoration he was brought to trial for treason, and, in particular, for being one of the chief movers for the execution of king Charles I. Of course he was condemned; was hung, drawn and quartered Oct. 16,

1660. His first wife, Elizabeth, widow of Edmund Reade, mother of the wife of Gov. Samuel Symonds, came to N. E. with him or very soon afterward; was recd. to the chh. of Salem. She died, and he m. 2, Mrs. Deliverance Sheffield, who was dismissed from the chh. of Bo. 2 (11) 1639, and rec'd at Salem as his wife. She became insane at some time not long after, and remained so to the close of her life, so far as is known. His child, Elizabeth, was bapt. at Salem 8 (1) 1640; she m. — Barker, and as his widow was living at Deptford, Eng. in 1703, when she gave a letter of attorney for collection of property at Salem which had belonged to her father. He was "father" to John Winthrop, Jr., as appears from a phrase in a letter from Roger Williams to the latter in 1660. Gov. Winthrop speaks of him as "my brother Peter." [Felt's memoirs of Mr. Peter in Reg. V; Winthrop, and Col Rec.]

(Stepfather - in law)

One cannot help admiring this many-great step grandpa of ours. Though super-religious as fit his niche in history, he liked people and was full of a sense of humor, charismatic, a chaplain in Cromwell's army, spiritual leader of Puritans as well as New England congregations.

Then, even more than now, people from different sections of England had different modes of speech. Cromwell's dialect would sound rather unique — though he was well educated at Cambridge. A brave, nice man.

Marquis: Who's Who in American History

PETER, Hugh, clergyman; b. England, 1598; s. Thomas and Martha (Treffry) Dirkwood (father changed name to Peter); B.A., Trinity Coll., Cambridge, Eng., 1618, M.A., 1622; m. Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade, 1624; m. 2d, Deliverance Sheffield, 1639; 1 dau., Elizabeth (Peter) Barker. Ordained deacon Ch. of Eng., 1621, priest, 1623, left Eng. to preach to English Puritans on Continent, 1629; came to Am., 1635; pastor at Salem, Mass., 1636; mem. coms. to draft code of laws for Mass. Bay Colony, 1636, 38; a founder Harvard, 1637, overseer, 1640; returned to Eng. to aid Puritan movement and to act as agt. of Mass. Bay Colony, 1641; chaplain to Cromwell's forces during Puritan Revolution. Executed after Royalists returned to power, Charing Cross, London, Eng., Oct. 16, 1660.

WORSHIP. *1633, Nov. 26th. Rev. John Wilson, by leave of his Church, comes to preach for the people here. 1634, April 3d. Governor Winthrop sets out on foot to prophesy for them on the Sabbath.

FORM OF WORSHIP. †1641. The Pastor begins with prayer, and the Teacher reads and expounds a chapter. The practice of reading the Scriptures was dispensed with here about sixty years ago. It was revived in the First Parish 1807, and in the South Parish 1826. When it was dropped, the worship began with singing. Formerly, when a portion of the Bible had been read, one of the Ruling Elders would give out a Psalm. Then a sermon, and sometimes an extempore address would follow. This service was often beyond an hour. Then came singing, a prayer, and a blessing. In the afternoon performances, Josselyn says, 1663, that a Psalm was sung before the benediction. This, as the "Ratio Disciplina" states, 1725, was preceded by the phrase, — "Blessed are all they, that hear the word of God and keep it."

LECTURES. 1641. These were every week on Thursday, and commenced at 11 o'clock, A. M. They were superseded by monthly lectures 1753. They were attended by the Courts, if in session here, till late years. Evening lectures were first held in Ipswich 1742, because of great attention to religion.

SINGING. While Ruling Elders were continued, one of them read a single line, and such of the congregation as could sing, arose in different parts of the meeting-house, and sung it; and then another line, till the Psalm was through. In the later societies, where no such officers were chosen, a Deacon performed the same duty. Sternhold & Hopkins's version of the Psalms appears to have been first used. About 1667, the Bay Psalm-Book took place of the preceding. Before 1757, Tate & Brady were adopted. Not long after this year, the Bay Psalm-Book, as revised and improved by the Rev. Thomas Prince, was reinstated in some of the parishes. In the Hamlet, Tate & Brady continued till 1772, when Watts was introduced. The latter was adopted by the South Parish 1785, instead of Prince.

As to seats for choirs, they were designated by the First Parish 1763, being "two back on each side of the front

* Winthrop.

† Lechford.

alley." Similar provision was made at the Hamlet 1764, and at Chebacco 1788. The choir of the First Parish begin to sit in the gallery 1781. This alteration was soon imitated in other parishes.

1790. Deacon Perkins informed the First Church, that at the request of the singers, he had read a whole verse at once for them in the Psalms. About 1793, the Psalms and Hymns began to be read wholly at once by the ministers, as at present.

HOURL-GLASS. For a long period before watches became so common as in late years, an hour-glass was used to measure the time of religious performances. There is a place still remaining for such a glass, on one side, fronting the Elders' seat, in the house of the First Parish; and there was another, till within a few years, in the South meeting-house. Hour-glasses were thus employed here till seventy years since. They had been common in Old as well as in New England. In allusion to this fact, a painter, though not in the most delicate manner, represented Hugh Peters, as in a pulpit with a large assembly before him, turning an hour-glass, and using these words, — "I know you are good fellows; stay and take another glass."

CONTRIBUTION. *1641. This was every Sabbath afternoon; — "one of the Deacons saying, — 'Brethren, now there is time left for contribution, wherefore, as God hath prospered you, so freely offer.' — On some extraordinary occasions, the ministers presse a liberal contribution. The magistrates and chief gentlemen first, and then Elders, and all the congregation come up one after another one way and bring their offerings to the Deacon at his seate, and put it into a box, if it be money or papers; if it be any other chattel, they set it down before the Deacons, and so passe another way to the seats againe." It was customary in all congregations, till seventy years ago, for persons visiting in town on the Sabbath, to put some money into the box. This was called, "the strangers' money," and was often stipulated as a perquisite of clergymen when settled. The collection on every Sabbath began to be omitted 1763.

* Lechford.

History of the church

Joseph Felt (1842)

The customs of rote singing, lectures, etc are interesting

PETERS, HUGH (1598-1660) OF SALEM, MA AND THOMAS PETERS (1597-1655)

1. William Peters alias Dickwood of Fowey, Cornwall (12 mi. E of Truro), merchant and shipowner. His will dated 9 (no month) 1578, proved 20 Feb. 1578/9. (NYGBR 45:68). Buried Fowey church. He probably m. Margaret _____, who m. (2) Davy Williams Aug. 1579, Fowey.

Children (Bpt. Fowey)

- a. Thomas Peters - See below.
 - b. Philip Peters - Bpt. 14 July 1546.
 - c. George Peters - Bpt. 21 Jan. 1548.
 - d. Annis Peters - Bpt. 1 Feb. 1549.
 - e. Elizabeth Peters - Bpt. 13 Feb. 1550.
 - f. Henry Peters - Will dated 8 Dec. 1620, proved 20 Jan. 1620/1. Probably died at sea or abroad as his burial is not found at Fowey. He m. Deborah Treffry 9 Jan. 1609, daughter of John Treffry, Esq. of Fowey. She bu. 3 Mar. 1619/20. A merchant and called Harry in his father's will. He was an MP for Fowey 11 Mar. 1603/4. Overseer of will of Richard Peters 1613, who called him "cousin" (kinsman). No issue. (NYGBR 45:72).
 - g. Bennet Peters - Bpt. 5 Jan. 1564.
 - h. Robert (Robin) Peters - Bpt. 5 Nov. 1567.
 - i. John Peters - He m. Katherine Longe 15 May 1589, Fowey who administered his estate 6 Jan. 1609/10. She was a legatee under the will of her brother-in-law, Henry Peters. John was called brother by Henry Peters. John probably died abroad or at sea as his burial is not found in Fowey. Eight children (1591-1608).
 - j. Thomas Peters - Bpt. 21 Sept. 1569.
 - k. Emanuel (Manell) Peters - Bpt. 4 Nov. 1575.
 - l. Joan Peters - She m. John Holman 29 May 1598. A legatee under her father's will. She administered her brother Henry's estate, 20 Jan. 1620/21 and died before 11 Mary 1627.
2. Thomas Peters alias Dickwood of Fowey, Turkey, France and general merchant. Bpt. 4 Dec. 1543, Fowey, Cornwall. Nuncupative will 10 Nov. 1600 (now lost) was proved in PCC. He m. Alice Penhal 21 June 1568, who proved his will and was bu. 4 Feb. 1613/14, Fowey. Her will dated 7 Jan. 1613/14, proved 25 June 1614 (BODMIN). Thomas was a legatee in his father's will, 1578. (NYGBR 45:72).

Children (Bpt. Fowey)

- a. John Peters - Bpt. 7 July 1569.
 - b. Thomas Peters - See below.
 - c. Margaret Peters - Bpt. 14 Feb. 1572/3.
 - d. Paul Peters - Bpt. 11 Mar. 1574/5.
 - e. Matthew Peters - Bpt. 18 Feb. 1576/7.
 - f. Richard Peters - Probably bu. 23 May 1613 in Fowey church. Will dated 5 May 1613, proved 2 Aug. 1613, PCC, by his mother, Alice. Merchant of Fowey. No issue. (NYGBR 45:71).
3. Thomas Peters alias Dickwood, merchant of Fowey. Bpt. 8 June 1571. Bu. 13 Jan. 1624/5, Fowey as "Thomas Peters, a Scottish man". He m. Martha Treffry 24 June 1594, daughter of John Treffry, Esq. of Fowey, deceased. She was bpt. 14 Mar. 1572/3 and sister of Deborah who m. her husband's uncle Henry Peters.

Children (Bpt. Fowey)

- a. Alice Peters - Bpt. 24 June 1595. Died unmarried and buried 12 Aug. 1642, Fowey as "Mrs. Alice Peters". Legatee of the ship "Peter" under the will of her uncle Richard Peters.
- b. Thomas Peters - See below.
- c. Hugh Peters - See below.
- d. Matthew Peters - He received two houses in Fowey from will of his uncle, Richard Peters, 1613, who calls him "son of my eldest brother, Thomas". He m. _____. At least 3 children.

- e. William Peters - Bpt. 14 Dec. 1600. Bu. 17 Oct. 1609.
- f. Margaret Peters - Bpt. 24 Jan. 1601/2.
- g. Richard Peters - Bpt. 20 Feb. 1602/3. Bu. 26 Aug. 1607.
- h. Henry Peters - Bpt. 21 Oct. 1604. Bu. 10 May 1613.
- i. Susanna Peters - Bpt. 7 Dec. 1604.
- j. Benjamin Peters - Bpt. 25 Feb. 1607. There was a will of a Benjamin Peters of Stepney, mariner, dated 27 Mar. 1650, proved 4 Dec. 1651 in PCC. He m. (1) _____ by whom he had son Ewen and he m. (2) Bridget _____ by whom he had children unnamed in his will. (NYGBR 45:72).
- k. Edward Peters - Bpt. 20 Nov. 1608. Bu. 2 Aug. 1611.
- l. Anna Peters - Bpt. 4 Feb. 1610.
- m. Blanche Peters - Bpt. 30 Oct. 1614.
- n. Anna Peters - Bpt. 3 Dec. 1616.

4. Thomas Peters - Bpt. 5 June 1597. Will dated 26 Oct. 1654, proved 19 Jan. 1654/5. He m. Anne (Hancock?) who survived him. Clerk in holy orders. Preacher of the gospel for twenty years "though with little success to souls", at Milo, Cornwall. (NYGBR 45:73). He was "bred" at Oxford and was a minister in Cornwall "whence driven in 1643, by the royalist forces, he came next year to this country". In 1646, he was invited home by his former parish and he returned the next year.

Children

- a. John Peters
 - b. Mary Peters
 - c. Sarah Peters
 - d. Anne Peters
 - e. Elizabeth Peters
4. Hugh Peters alias Dickwood - Bpt. 11 June 1598. Executed in England 16 Oct. 1660. He graduated from Trinity College, Cambridge, A.B. 1617 and M.A. 1622 and then he preached at St. Sepulchres, London. In 1628 he subscribed to some of the stock in the Massachusetts Bay Company. He became a Puritan, was minister of the English church in Rotterdam and then came to Salem, MA in 1635 on the "Abigail", where he became the minister. He returned to England and then came back on the "Charles" from Bristol in 1640, a ship that had been chartered by Henry Wolcott and others. (See Search series, Vol. 12, p. 150).

He m. (1) Elizabeth Cooke, widow of Col. Edmund Reade of Essex, England and mother of the wife of Gov. Samuel Symonds, and daughter of Thomas Cooke of Pebmarsh, Essex. She may have remained in England and died 1637. He m. (2) Mrs. Deliverance Sheffield a. 1638. Soon after she became insane and remained in that condition for the remainder of her life.

He returned to England as one of the representatives of the Colonies at the beginning of the Civil War (1642?) and became one of the foremost leaders of the Parliamentary party. After the Restoration he was brought to trial for treason for being one of the chief movers of the execution of Charles I. He was condemned and on 16 Oct. 1660 was hung, drawn and quartered. He had one daughter.

Child by second wife

- a. Elizabeth Peters - Bpt. 8 Jan. 1640, Salem, MA. She m. _____ Barker (in England?) and as his widow in 1703 she was living in Deptford (Devon? 10 mi. S of Barnstaple), England. In that year she gave a letter of attorney for collection of property at Salem, MA which had belonged to her father.

Hugh Peters had one daughter but the number of grandchildren is not known because she returned to England.

- References: Pioneers of Massachusetts, by Charles H. Pope, 1900
 History of Salem - Vol. 1, pp. 298-301
 Peters of New England, by Edmund F. Peters and Eleanor B. Peters, 1903
 NYGBR 45:68-75 and 48:180-185

Conclusion of Business with London Partners, 1642-3
[Manuscript ff. 250-3]

Mr. Sherley's to Mr. Atwood

Mr. Atwood, my approved loving friend, Your letter of the 18 of October last I have received, wherein I find you have taken a great deal of pains and care about that troublesome business betwixt our Plymouth partners and friends, and us here, and have deeply engaged yourself, for which compliments and words are no real satisfaction, etc. For the agreement you have made with Mr. Bradford, Mr. Winslow, and the rest of the partners there, considering how honestly and justly I am persuaded they have brought in an account of the remaining stock, for my own part I am well satisfied and so, I think, is Mr. Andrews; and I suppose will be Mr. Beauchamp, if most of it might accrue to him, to whom the least is due, etc. And now for peace sake, and to conclude as we began, lovingly and friendly, and to pass by all failings of all, the conclude is accepted of; I say this agreement that you have made is condescended unto, and Mr. Andrews hath sent his release to Mr. Winthrop, with such directions as he conceives fit. And I have made bold to trouble you with mine, and we have both sealed in the presence of Mr. Weld and Mr. Peters² and some others, and I have also sent you another for the partners there to seal to me. For you must not deliver mine to them except they seal and deliver one to me. This is fit and equal, etc.

Yours to command in what I may or can,
June 14, 1642

JAMES SHERLEY

¹ John Atwood, a freeman of Plymouth Colony, appears to have had some special dealings with the London partners.

² The Rev. Hugh Peter, Thomas Weld and William Hibbens were sent by the Bay Colony on a mission to England in the summer of 1641, in the hope of obtaining something to ease the effects of the depression in New England economy, playing up the need for funds for Harvard College and for the conversion of the Indians. *New England's First Fruits* (1643) was their promotion pamphlet. They did rather well, especially for the College, their big shot being the £100 scholarship fund from Lady Mowson (Anne Radcliffe). S. E. Morison *Founding of Harvard College* 303-14, and Raymond P. Stearns "The Weld-Peter Mission to England," *Colonial Society of Massachusetts Transactions* XXXII 179-306. These letters show, and Winthrop tacitly admits, that the three Massachusetts men "pulled a fast one" on Plymouth, consenting to the London partners' unjust claim of £1200, and getting three fourths of it for the Bay Colony.

414

"Weld's Refutation"

416

Of Plymouth Plantation

ing the free andolute cle⁺ of you from us three. And you to have the other £300, etc.

Upon the receiving of my release from you, I will send you your bonds for the purchase money. I would have sent them now, but I would have Mr. Beauchamp release as well as I, because you are bound to him in them. Now I know if a man be bound to twelve men, if one release it is as if all released, and my discharge doth cut them off. Wherefore doubt you not but you shall have them and your commission, or anything else that is fit. Now you know there is two years of the purchase money that I would not own, for I have formerly certified you that I would but pay seven years, but now you are discharged of all, etc.

Your loving and kind friend in what I may or can,

June 14, 1642

JAMES SHERLEY

The copy of his release is as followeth:

Whereas divers questions, differences and demands have arisen and depended between William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Alden and John Howland, gentlemen, now or lately inhabitants or resident at New Plymouth in New England, on the one party; and James Sherley of London merchant and others on the other part, for and concerning a stock and portable trade of beaver and other commodities, and freighting of ships, as the *White Angel*, *Friendship* or others, and the goods of Isaac Allerton which were seized upon by virtue of a letter of attorney made by the said James Sherley and John Beauchamp and Richard Andrews, or any other matters concerning the said trade either here in Old England or there in New England or elsewhere, all which differences are since by mediation of friends composed, compromised, and all the said parties agreed. Now know all men by these presents that I, the said James Sherley, in performance of the said compromise and agreement have remitted, released and quit-claimed and do by these presents remiss, release and for me, mine heirs, executors and administrators, and for every of us for ever quit-claim unto the said William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Alden and John Howland and every of them, their and every of their heirs, executors and administrators, all and all manner of actions, suits, debts, accounts, reckonings, commissions, bonds, bills, specialties, judgments, executions, claims,

His to the Partners as Followeth

LOVING FRIENDS, Mr. Bradford, Mr. Winslow, Mr. Prence, Captain Standish, Mr. Brewster, Mr. Alden and Mr. Howland: give me leave to join you all in one letter concerning the final end and conclude of that tedious and troublesome business, and I think I may truly say uncomfortable and unprofitable to all, etc. It hath pleased God now to put us upon a way to cease all suits, and disquieting of our spirits, and to conclude with peace and love, as we began. I am contented to yield and make good what Mr. Atwood and you have agreed upon; and for that end have sent to my loving friend, Mr. Atwood, an absolute and general release unto you all, and if there want anything to make it more full, write it yourselves and it shall be done, provided that all you, either jointly or severally, seal the like discharge to me. And for that end I have drawn one jointly and sent it to Mr. Atwood with that I have sealed to you. Mr. Andrews hath sealed an acquittance also and sent it to Mr. Winthrop, with such directions as he conceived fit and, as I hear, hath given his debt, which he makes £444, unto the gentlemen of the Bay.

I need, Mr. Weld, Mr. Peters and Mr. Hibbens have taken a great deal of pains with Mr. Andrews, Mr. Beauchamp and myself, to bring us to agree; and to that end we have had many meetings and spent much time about it. But as they are very religious and honest gentlemen, yet they had an end that they drove at and laboured to accomplish. (I mean not any private end, but for the general good of their Patient.) It had been very well you had sent one over.

Mr. Andrews wished you might have one third part of the £1200 and the Bay two thirds; but then we three must have agreed together, which were a hard matter now. But Mr. Weld, Mr. Peters and Mr. Hibbens and I have agreed; they giving you bond so to compose with Mr. Beauchamp as to procure his general release, and free you from all trouble and charge that he may put you to. Which indeed is nothing, for I am persuaded Mr. Weld will in time gain him to give them all that is due to [251] him, which in some sort is granted already. For though his demands be great, yet Mr. Andrews hath taken some pains in it, and makes it appear to be less than I think he will consent to give them for so good an use; so you need not fear that for taking bond there to save you harmless, you be safe and well.

Now our accord is that you must pay to the gentlemen of the Bay £900. They are to bear all charges that may any way arise concern-

Conclusion of Business with London Partners

417

hallenges, differences, and demands whatsoever, with against said William Bradford, Edward Winslow, Thomas Prence, Myles Standish, William Brewster, John Alden, and John Howland or any of them, ever I had, now have or in time to come can, shall, or may have for any matter, cause or thing whatsoever from the beginning of the world until the day of the date of these presents.

In witness whereof I have hereunto put my hand and seal, given the second day of June, 1642 and in the eighteenth year of the reign of our sovereign lord King Charles, etc.

Sealed and delivered

JAMES SHERLEY

in the presence of
THOMAS WELD
HUGH PETERS
WILLIAM HIBBENS
ARTHUR TIRREY, Scribe
THOMAS STURGES, his servant

[Richard Andrews to Edmund Freeman, fol. 251] *and Judge Ansell*

MR. FREEMAN: My love remembered unto you, etc. I then certified the partners how I found Mr. Beauchamp and Mr. Sherley in their particular demands, which was according to men's principles of getting what they could; although the one will not show any account, and the other a very unfair and unjust one. And both of them discouraged me from sending the partners my account, Mr. Beauchamp especially. Their reason, I have cause to conceive, was that although I do not, nor ever intended to, wrong the partners or the business, yet if I gave no account I might be esteemed as guilty as they in some degree at least, and they might seem to be the more free from taxation in not delivering their accounts, etc. Who have both of them charged the account with much interest they have paid forth, and one of them would likewise for much interest he hath not paid forth, as appeareth by his account, etc. And seeing the partners have now made it appear that there is £1200 remaining due between us all, and that it may appear by my account I have not charged the business with any interest but do forgive it unto the partners above £200; if Mr. Sherley and Mr. Beauchamp, who have between them wronged the business so many hundred pounds both in principal and interest likewise, and have therein wronged me as well and as much as any of the partners, yet if they will not make and deliver fair and true accounts of the same, nor be content to take what by computation is more than can be justly due to either, that is to Mr. Beau-

The removal of Roger Williams from his service to the church of Salem left a vacancy which was filled soon after by Rev. Hugh Peter, who was a son of Thomas Dirkwood of the parish of St. Ewe, in Fowey, Cornwall, England, where he was baptized June 6, 1598. His father was a merchant, whose ancestors were driven from Antwerp, on account of their religious belief, and his mother was Martha Treffrey of Place, a descendant of Sir John



Hugh Peter

Treffrey, who, in the fourteenth century, defended Fowey against the French. Thomas Dirkwood, at some time and for some reason unknown, changed his surname to Peter. ✓

Hugh attended Trinity College, at Cambridge, where he received the degree of Bachelor of Arts in 1616 and Master of Arts in 1622.

In "A Dying Fathers Last Legacy to an Only Child: or Mr. Hugh Peter's Advice to His Daughter," he writes as follows of his family and early history:—

I was the Son of considerable Parents, from Foy in Cornwall; my Father a Merchant, his Ancestors driven thither from Antwerp for Religion, I mean the Reformed; my Mother of the same Town, of a very ancient Family, the Name Treffrey of Place, or the Place in that Town, of which I would not boast.

These lived in very great abundance, their Loffes at Sea grew very great; in the midst of which Loffes, my elder Brother being at Oxford, I was sent to Cambridge, and that Estate, I had by an Uncle, I left with my Mother, and lived at the University; and a little from thence, about eight Years, took my Degree of Master of Arts, where I spent some Years vainly enough, being but Fourteen Years Old when thither I came, my Tutor died, and I was expos'd to my shifts.

Coming from thence, at London God struck me with the fence of my finful estate, by a Sermon I heard under Pauls, which was about Forty Years since; which Text was, *The burden of Balaam*, or Idumea, and stuck fast. This made me to go into Essex: And after being quieted by another Sermon in that Country, and the Love and Labours of Mr. Thomas Hooker: I there Preacht, there Married with a good Gentlewoman, till I went to London to ripen my Studies, not intending to Preach at all; where I attended Dr. Gouge, Sibbs, and Davenports Ministry, with others; and I hope with some profit. But in short time was forced to Preach by importunity of Friends, having had a Licence from Dr. Mountain Bishop of London before, and to Sepulchres I was brought by a very strange Providence; for Preaching before at another Place; and a Young Man receiving some Good, would not be satisfied, but I must Preach at Sepulchres and Monthly for the good of his Friends; in which he got his end (if I might not shew vanity) and he allowed Thirty Pounds *per Annum* to that Lecture, but his Person unknown to me: he was a Chandler, and died a good Man, and Member of Parliament. At this Lecture the Refort grew so great that it contracted envy and anger. Though I believe above an hundred every Week were perfwaded from Sin to Christ.

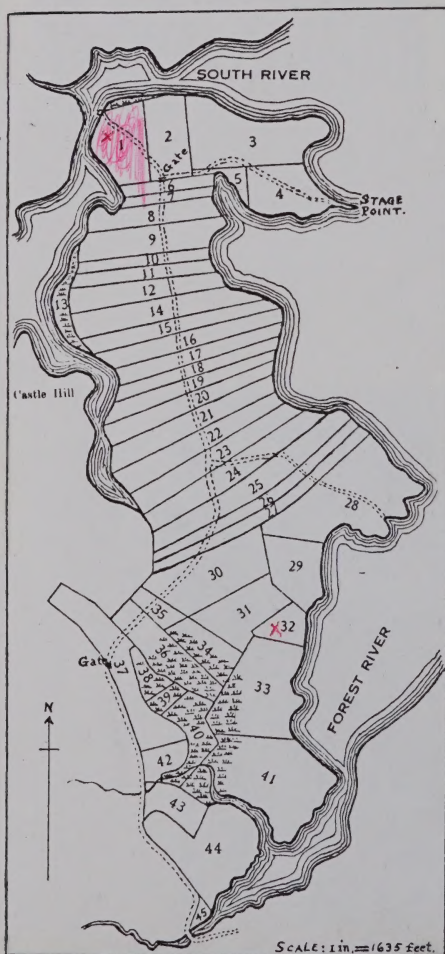
✓ note
she was
our
ancestor
Elizabeth
Cook
widow
read

¹See sketch of Hugh Peter in Essex Institute Historical Collections, by Mrs. Eleanor Bradley Peters, volume 38, page 1. In this article, Mrs. Peters states that the marriage of Mrs. Dirkwood's sister Deborah to Henry Peter, member of parliament for Fowey, may have had some relation to this change of name.

²The first edition was published in London in 1660, and the first American edition was published in Boston in 1717.



#91 Hugh Peter 1648



Before his final departure for England, Rev. Hugh Peter went to Wenham Lake and standing upon a conical mound¹ on its shore about half-way between the highway and the point of land projecting into the lake, preached to the people who assembled there, from the text: John III: 23, "In Enon, near to Salim, for there was much water there." This little hillock was subsequently known as "Peter's pulpit," and it was leveled about 1850, for the site of the new ice-houses of Addison Gage & Company.

140

IPSWICH QUARTERLY COURT

[Mar. 1659]

Walter Roper in behalf of the town of Ipswich v. Frances Pabody and Rich. Walker. For felling several white oak trees upon Ipswich town commons. Verdict for plaintiff.*

Thomas Clarke, jr., deposed that, being at Mr. Baker's, John Baker and Thomas asked me what manner of heifer Goodman Roberts' heifer was, etc. He heard Robert Smith and Jeremiah Belcher challenge this heifer to be Mr. Baker's, which is Goodman Roberts, etc. Sworn, 10: 28: 1658, before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Samuel Taylor, aged forty years, deposed that Mrs. Baker said she heard there was a heifer killed at Lampson's hill about Indian harvest. Acknowledged in court.

Thomas French, aged twenty-two years, and Edmond Bridges, jr., deposed, 10: 23: 1658, before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Copies of all the foregoing depositions, attested Jan. 8, 1658, by Daniel Denison.†

John Baker, jr., deposed that he saw the heifer about Goodman Farrowes, etc. Sworn, Dec. 27, 1658, before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Sarah Baker deposed that living at the farm last summer she saw the calf of a cow called Tib, etc. Sworn, Dec. 27, 1658, before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Evan Morice deposed that he had Richard Walker's word for it, etc. Sworn before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Jeremiah Belcher, jr., Henry Kenball and Francis Bates deposed, Dec. 23, 1658. Sworn before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Samuell Moulton deposed that Corporall Andrews came to his father's house to inquire for a heifer, etc. Sworn before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Richard Walker deposed that the servant to Mr. Baker and Goodman Knolton brought the heifer to his master's house. Sworn, 10: 27: 1658, before Daniel Denison. Copy.

Evidence summed up.

Grounds of John Baker's appeal.

*Writ, dated, Mar. 18, 1658, served by Edward Browne,† marshal.

Samuell Symonds was granted a farm of five hundred acres toward the west end of the town, commonly called Oliver's, he to be constantly supplied with timber and firewood off the commons. Extracted from town record book, 3: 10: 1642. Robert Lord,† clerk, Mar. 24, 1658.

John Parley deposed that he asked Richard Walker who felled the white oaks that lay near his master Pabody's meadow, and he replied that he did, six of them, in Ipswich commons, according to

†Autograph.

NEH GR 160 39 264-5 July 1885

HUGH PETERS AND THE ROYAL MEDALS.

Communicated by G. D. SCULL, Esq., of London, England.

THE following documents* were found at the commencement of a volume of Elias Ashmole's Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library, among the manuscripts not in the printed Catalogue. As to the two persons who were to question Hugh Peters about the medals and other articles abstracted from the Library in St. James's Palace, Thomas Ross was "the custodian of his Majesty's Libraries," and Elias Ashmole was very learned in all matters of medals and the like, and of course a very fit person for such an investigation.

CHARLES R.

Our Will & pleasure is That you pmit Thomas Ross & Elias Ashmole Esq^t to speake with and examine Hugh Peters concerning our Bookes and Meddalls that haue been Embezeled & this to be pformed in your presence, For w^{ch} this shall be youre warrant, Given at our Court at Whitehall the 10th Day of September 1660, in the Twelwe yeare of Our Reigne.

By his Ma^{ties} Comand
EDW NICHOLAS

To Our trusty & welbeloved
S^r John Robinson Kn^t. &
Bar^t Lieutenant of Our
Tower of London.

An Account of what M^r Hugh Peters gaue vpon his Examina^{ti}on before the ho^{ble} S^r John Robinson Lieu^t of his Ma^{ties} Tower, taken by M^r Ross & M^r Ashmole assigned thereunto 12^o Sept. 1660.

The Examinant Saith, that about the yeare 1648 in August he preserved the Library in S^t James ag^t the violence & rapine of the Soldiers, & the same continued three or foure moneths vnder his Custody; and that he did not take thence anything, but left it vniolated as he found it. He doth confess that he saw diu^{rs} Medalls of Gold, Siluer & Brass, & other peeces of Antiquity, as Iron Rings & the like, but that he tooke nothing thence, & then delivered up the key & Custody of them to Major Gen^l Iretⁿ. And further he saith that he never since came into the Library, nor never had or saw any thing belonging thereto.

HUGH PETERS.

Given vpon oath before me

John Robinson, Lieten: Towre.

* Mr. Scull has traced, for the New England Historic Genealogical Society, facsimile of these two documents.—EDITOR.

Oct 1885 page 371

DOCUMENTS RELATING TO HUGH PETERS.

Communicated by G. D. SCULL, Esq., of London, England.

THE following letters, &c., addressed to Hugh Peters, found among the State Papers of Hyde, Earl of Clarendon, give some idea of his activity and usefulness as an agent, and the trust that was reposed in him by the agitators, before the Commonwealth was established and after. Short extracts from the different news letters received by Lord Chancellor Hyde, are also herewith given whenever they throw any light upon the movements or opinions of Hugh Peters.†

The Commissioners of Sussex to M^r Hugh Peters. (Original.)

M^r Peters wee underwritten (as the deputy lieutenants in Kent have done) doe acknowledge it acceptable service for any to appear in person or with horse, money or plate, or imburst for two months to goe forth with Colonel Morley, Colonel Staply or any intrusted for the defence of the Kingdom or County, so to preserve their religion and libertyes, as is desired by the late vote of Parliament for the raising the Countyes. And wee shall to our utmost further this worke together with the disarming ma-

* See England's History of Gloucester.
† A memoir of the Rev. Hugh Peters by the late Rev. Joseph B. Felt, LL.D., was printed in the REGISTER, vol. v. pp. 9, 231, 276, 416. See also REG. vol. ii. p. 63.—EDITOR.



HUGH PETERS,

Ch^l Intendant of England.

Born 1590. Executed 1660.

Red. Hugh Peters, our meny-graet stepfather m/ Elizabeth (Cook) Rede
written by
M^r the Rede etc (m. r.) 1647-48. Some Signat of M^r A
Elizabeth Rede etc m. Can been written in. of 17

cont'd over

lignants or any good service in the country, and shall thereto contribute our helpe to the utmost, desiring you to assure all men whence you come, that all their charge and travells in this worke shall bee lovingly acknowledged by us.

Lewes
the 15th of July 1643.

ANTH: STAPLEY
HARBERT MORLEY
THO: PELHAM
THO: PARKER

Instructions for M^r Hugh Peters appoynted to bee sent into Holland upon speciall services by the Committee of Lords and Comons for the Safety of y^e Kingdome Sept. 27 1643.

Whereas wee have latly by vertue of an Ordinance of Both Houses of Parliam^t sent over M^r Samuel Glover into Holland with instructions to make trial amongst the well affected Persons of y^e United Provinces for y^e borrowing of diverse summes of Monye for supplye of y^e grate and p^{ro}-sing necessities of this Kingdome upon sufficient security to bee given by Both Houses of Parliam^t: Wee have now thought good to authorise you likewise to repayre into those Parts and to assist in that service ether severally or joyntly as upon conference it shall seeme best to you with the advise of M^r Walter Strickland Esq^r resident at y^e Hague by Cofissions from y^e Lords and Comons in Parliament.

For the better speeding of which service you are to bee careful to give the People in those parts notice of y^e Covenant and strict Union agreed upon betwixt y^e two Kingdomes of England and Scotland for defence of y^e Religion and Liberties in both ag^t y^e Cofion Enemies y^e Papists, Prelates, and their Adherants, and likewise of y^e pious intention and endeavour of both Houses for y^e Reformation of all Corruptions and Supstitutions in Government and Ceremonys in y^e Kingdome of England and Ireland and of procuring a more neere uniformity and conjunction with the Reformed Churches in other parts. You shall further acquaint them that amongst other things, it is agreed upon that the public Fayth of both Kingdomes shalbe given for the securing of such summes as shall be borrowed; and if any shall chuse rather Other Plens[?] p^{ro}ticular Securitie that therein wee doubt not but y^e Two Houses will give them satisfaction.

And that y^e trew Lovers of Religion may bee more effectually provoked to give us their ayde you shall chiefly apply yourselfe to acquaint them with y^e justice of our Cause in y^e p^{ro}sent unhappy differences and civil warr, wherewith this Kingdome is distracted, and that they may more clearly discern that our dangers proceede from those mischeivous principles and designs of y^e Papists which doe equally threaten all other States professing the Protestant Reformed Religion; and if by a seasonable and proportionable Helpe they doe p^{ro}serve us from Ruin, they shall thereby the better secure themselves.

You shall pray them to consider what greate supplyes the Popish Parties have frequently sent both into Ireland and into the kingdome to furnish our Enemies although wee cannot but hope that charity and wisdom will as powerfully induce them to assist in y^e mayntenance of the Truth, Their owne interest and safety being conjoynd with it, as the love of Superstition doth work upon others to inable our Enemies to destroye us.

What you shall doe herein, and with what hope of successe, and what further authority and directions you shall stand in neede of, you shall from

time to time as you shall have opportunity, advertise us, and further doe and execute such other instructions, as you shall receive from both Houses of Parliament.

W. SAY & SEALE
NATH: FFIENNES
GILB^t GERARD
JO: PYM
ANTH: NICOLL

Thomas Shepard to Hugh Peters.

My good brother Peters

I hartly thank yo^r for yo^r letter; we do greatly rejoyce to heare how greatly instrumentall God makes yow; & that he keepes yow spotles & blameles in your course notwithstanding the reproaches of some. I have ever thought that it was a divine hand that sent you from us for a time, & therefore till yo^r warke be done in England I would not have yow to returne to New th^o I am one of those many who earnestly long to see yow once agayne: be very watchfull for I fear nothing but some sudden stab, or some Jesuit neare yow in some honest man's forme. Yo^r child is very well with us whatever ever reports may come to yow to the contrary & her educati^on is not neglected.* yow seeme to thinke a letter I writ (but never thought it would have bin made publike) to be too sharpe & that honest men who are for Xⁱ should be suffed th^o they run out into opinions: I desire to shew the utmost forbearance to Godly men if for a time deluded; but otherwyse I see no more reason to beare with good men in these opinions then in their morall transgressions, for they commonly are coupled together: yow have had experience of the grangrene in New-England & how soone it spread in a little time, & how God hath borne witness agaynst that generati^on. I feare greater sorrowes attend England if they do not seasonably suppress & beare public witnessse agaynst such delusions which fill the land like locusts without any King & will certainly (if suffed) up the green grasse of the land: I know there may be some connivance for a time while tis tumultuous & while the wars call all spirits thither, but Tolerati^on of all up^{er} pretence of Conscience I thanke God my soul abhors it, the godly in former times never sought for the Liberty of their conscience by pleading for Liberty for all, but they bare witnessse to the truth with glorious *naqqota* & boldnes & if they would not receive there testimony, they desired to kisse the flames & fill the prisons & suffer to the utmost as knowinge that sufferings for the Truth were more advantageous to the p^{ro}moting of it, then there own peace & safety with Liberty for all error. I know the case may be such as a state may tolerate all, because of Necessity they must, the numbers are so many & the hazards none; but its one thing to be under such a misery, another thing what is mens duty. out of such a desperate case; let me be bold (my deare brother) to p^{ro}swade yow to be watchfull over yo^rselfe least yo^r hast herein out of love to some men growes cold to Gods truth: there is but one truth (yow know) and is it not yo^r daily prayer to God to blot out all errors beside from off his Earth & from under these heavens & can y^e spirit then close with such, or beare

* Hugh Peters's daughter, Elizabeth, to whom he dedicated "A Dying Father's Last Legacy to an Only Child," was the daughter of his second wife, Deliverance Sheffield, and was baptized in Salem, March 8, 1640. She married a Mr. Barker, and in March, 1702, was a widow living at Deptford, Kent, England. See REGISTER, vol. v. p. 439; Upham's Salem Witchcraft, vol. i. p. 58; Proceedings of Mass. Hist. Soc., vol. xii. p. 362.—EDITOR.

with such evils in yo^r ministry or judgement, w^{ch} yo^r hart in secret prayer is dayly agaynst; is it not high time for all Gods ministers to awaken and purge God's floure of such chaff w^{ch} lies uppermost & is grown so active & witty to deceive in these evill times; I know the honesty of the hart of brother Peters cannot beare with it, but he will take to him the zeale of his God & do worthily herein. Excuse me if I transgresse my errour is of Love I write nothing to greeve yow, my desire is the God of all grace may fill yow with a spirit of might light & glory, & still preserve and every way enlarge you for the good of Sion.*

You should do very well to helpe o^r Colledge with a more compleat Library. we have very good wits among us & they grow up mightily, but we want bookes; be intreated earnestly to helpe us herein speedily, God will certainly recompense that p^t of yo^r Care, into yo^r bosom; we want schoolmen especially, helpe therein. devise some way to furnish us. we Were thinking to desire the A: Bishops library† & that the Parliament would recompence yo^r labours for publike good with somewhat more usefull for yourselfe, if yow could bring about some such thing or any other way helpe us, yow could not but be remembered of us; forget us not we intreat yow and doe something in speciall for the 2 children of D^r Ames‡ who are now fatherlesse and motherlesse William (who is now S^r Ames) a fruit of yo^r ministry, is one of the hopefulest young men that I know & of a very gracious spirit. I beseech yow send over some cloth, or some such thing to them for there father's sake yow know the wants of the Cuntry otherwise; but I hold yow too long from yo^r world by these lines, let me be had oft in yo^r remembrance & prayers; we shall never forget yow, in our prayers.

with many harty remembrances to yow

Cambridge
Dec. 27. 1645.

I remⁿ
Yo^r unworthy brother

THO. SHEPARD.

Endorsed—"To the reverend his deare brother
M^r Peters, Minister of Christ, every where,
be these d^d."

Fairfax to Hugh Peters (no date) 1645. (Original.)

Mr Peters—understanding y^e are now going to Bristol I pray take notice it is my desire yo^w should speake with Collonell Pinder, and Collonell Layton and know how it stands in the Accompts of money for the Army, Wee having expected some fruits of their labours long. I would wish yo^w fully to satisfy yo^rselfe thereon and bring an information thereof to me, yo^w know the Condition of the Army in reference to money.

ffaire yo^w well

Yo^r loving friend T. FAIRFAX.

* This is a very clear statement, by one of the leading opponents of toleration in Massachusetts, of the reasons which led the founders of the colony to take severe measures for the suppression of what they considered heresy. Peters, like Robinson, and unlike Shepard, believed that "more light and truth" were to be revealed; and he resolved to "keep a window open" for them. (See Dean's Memoir of Nathaniel Ward, p. 110.)—EDITOR.

† Rev. Dr. Felt states that Peters intended to transport the library of Archbishop Laud, which was granted to him by Parliament, "to Massachusetts, most likely as a donation for the College." (REG. v. 278.)—EDITOR.

‡ For an account of the Rev. William Ames, the famous Puritan divine, and his family, see REGISTER, xxxviii. 196. His widow and three children, Ruth, William and John, came to New England in 1637 (REG. xiv. 327). The elder son, William, grad. H. C. 1645, and his memoir is in Sibley's Harvard College Graduates, i. 107. Mrs. Ames died and was buried at Cambridge, Dec. 23, 1644. It would seem from this letter that the other son, John, was dead when it was written, Dec. 27, 1645.—EDITOR.

Lord Fairfax to Hugh Peters and Lieut. Col. Burgh. (Original letter.)

I desire M^r Peters and Lieuten^t Colonell Burgh instantlie to repaire to Plimouth to the Governour & Comittee there, and to acquaint them with the inten^{tion} of this Armie speedily to advance into Cornwall, and therefore to desire them to use their best care and diligence for the causing provisions to bee made for the use of the Armie in case they bee straitned for want of Provisions in Cornwall. And likewise I desire you to acquaint the Cornish Gentlemen in plimouth with my intention to goe thither & of my desire; That they would in p^{erson} march with the Armie into Cornwall to assist in the setting of that country in obedience to the parliament and offer such other things to the considera^{tion} of the Govern^{or} Comittee and Cornish men then present as shall bee for the service of the Parliament.

Given under my hand at Torrington this 25th day of february 1645.

Torrington feb^r 25th, 1645.

T. FAIRFAX.

The above was written just after Lord Hopton's defeat.

Int^r fol 103

15th October 1651.

At the Com^{tee} of Parliam^t for removing of Obstructions in the sale of Delinquents lands & Estates.

For asmuch as this Comittee have this day taken into Considera^{tion} the Petition and claime therein of M^r Hugh Peters to certaine lands late of Henry Earle of Worcester, one of y^e persons named in the Act Intituled an Act for sale of severall Lands and Estates forfeited to y^e Com^{on}wealth for Treason, granted unto y^e said M^r Peters by ordinance of Parliament, And it is appearing unto this Comittee by y^e Certificate of M^r Graves of the Councill for y^e Com^{on}wealth, to y^e Trustees for sales of y^e said lands Made in p^{su}ance of an Order of this Com^{tee} of y^e third of September last And upon opening of y^e Case upon the said Claime, b^y said Councill That y^e Lords & Com^{ons} in Parliam^t Assembled by their Ordinance dated the 29th of November 1646 for y^e Considera^{tion} therein Exprest, resolving to settle upon him and his heires two hundred pounds per ann^m Doe Order & Ordaine that the said Hugh Peters his heires and assignes shall have and enjoy the Lands Tenem^t & hereditam^t hereafter mentioned lying and being in the Parrish of Church Honnibourne in y^e County of Worcester, being part of y^e Estate of y^e Lord Herbert, now called y^e Earle of Glamorgan, and of Henry Earle of Worcester his father, or of S^r John Somers set an other son of the said Earle being popish recusants and who have borne armes against y^e Parliam^t; or of some or one of them, all that Pasture ground called the great Leasowe with the Meadowes thereunto adjoining or belonging, or therewith used, now or late in y^e tenure or occupa^{tion} of William Stephens or his assignes, All that Pasture ground called the "one hundred Ewes Leasowe" with the Messuage & Meadowe grounds therewith used or thereto belonging now or late in y^e occupa^{tion} of — Phillips widow or her assignees, One Pasture ground wth a Meadow thereto belonging or adjoining, or otherwise caled by the name of "ould Gourd" To have and to Hold the said Lands Tenem^t hereditam^t and P^rmisses with their and every of their rights Members & appurtenances & y^e Reversion & Reversions, Remainder & Remainders thereof to him the said Hugh Peters his heires and assignes forever, in free & Com^{on} Soccage. And y^e said Hugh Peters and his assignes shali have and Receive all y^e Rents issues & Profits

of y^e said Lands & premises since y^e 25th day of March last past notwithstanding any sequestration or other disposicion thereof made by vertue of any Ordinance of Parliam^t, saving to all & every person and persons other than the said Earle Lord Herbert & S^r John Sumnerett and those in trust for them or as claime for their use from all such right, title & Interest in and to those lands and premises as they had y^e 20th of may 1642. And the then Attorney or Solicitor Gen^{ls} were thereby authorized & required upon y^e desire of Hugh Peters to prepare a Bill in y^e usuall forme containing a grant of y^e premises to Hugh Peters & his heires according to y^e Teno^r of y^e Ordinance. Which grant soe prepared, The Comiss^{ns} of the greate seale of England were to passe under y^e great seale accordingly: That y^e premises were granted by Ltres Pattents under y^e Greate Seale bearing date y^e 16th day of December 1646 which Ordinance of Parliam^t and Lres Pattents were upon hearing of this cause p^rduced and this Com^{tee} satisfied of y^e Graunt of y^e premises to y^e said M^r Peters by y^e said Ordinance And that y^e same are passed unto him under the Great Seale: It is the opinion of this Com^{tee} that y^e right title, Interest and claime of y^e said Hugh Peters in & to y^e said Pasture ground called y^e Great Leasowe & other y^e said Lands and premises granted by y^e said Ordinance and passed under y^e great seale as aforesaid be allowed of and y^e same is hereby allowed of, And it is Ordered and adjudged by this Com^{tee} that the said M^r Hugh Peters his heires and assignes shall & may hould and enjoy the said Lands and Premises to his & their only use & behoofe forever. And that this Judgment and determination be transmitted to y^e Trustees named in y^e said act for sale &c. to be by them entered & observed according to y^e teno^r & purport thereof and as by y^e said act for sale &c directed & appointed And that ye Trustees give direction to y^eir surveyor to forbear surveying of y^e premises.

HENRY NEVILLE, WILL^m JAY

Ord THO. CHALANER A GARLAND JOHN MOYLE.
Edw: Noell coppie.

Warrant from the Commissioners for the sale of the King's goods.

Somerset house } 11. January 1652.
in the Strand } At y^e Committee of Trustee^s for
Sale of y^e late King's goods.

These are to desire M^r Hugh Peeters to deliver y^e severall goods hereund^r named to William Gregory y^e w^{ch} goods he is to bring unto Somerset house there to bee delivered to y^e Contract^{rs} for sale of y^e late Kings goods: & for soe doing this shalbee his warr^t, he taking a receipt from y^e said W^m Gregory for w^{ch} he shall soe deliver to them afores^d.

one peece of Douer stuff*	}	GEO: WITHER. JOHN FOCKE
2 peeces of pillars & vynes		DAVID POWELL RAPHE GRAFTON
3 peeces of Douer stuff*		HENRY CREECH

Received of these p^rtickulers above mentioned 4 peeces of hangings formerly called by y^e name of Dover stuff. I say received

WILL GREGORYE.

April 15 (O. S.), 1653.—“The Independents are pleased at the failure of the Parliament's treaty with the States (Holland) but Hugh Peters

* Hangings or tapestry.

(who with Dollman was the instrument employed in it) storms exceedingly at the miscarriage.”

May 13, 1653. News letter from London.—“But of all hypocrites, roomer for Hugh Peters who upon some late discontent . . . begins to preach the doctrine of episcopall times and discourses seriously of Free-will &c &c.”

May 22^d, 1653—French news letter from the Hague. “Master Pieter (Hugh Peters) said to the latter (aquillas) that if the two republics were agreed they would soon be able to drive the Pope from his throne.”

July 1st 1653—News letter from London. “Negotiations with the Dutch Commissioners: Hugh Peters is forbidden to hold any Communication with them & when the order was sent to him, Newport was found in his chamber.”

July 29th, 1653.—“Hugh Peters was sent for by Cromwell on Sunday night at 10 o'clock, for consultation about reconciling the large party in Parliament who are for peace to his interest.”

October 7th, 1653.—“The King must have an eye to all his domestics even those he thinks most honest as all his actions are made known; there are strong suspicions of a valet de chambre called Chiff & Hugh Peters says he doubts not to understand the depths of the Scottish design through Bampfield.”

Dec. 5th, 1653.—Hyde to Clement (assumed name of a news writer). “Some sudden change is expected in England. Peters preaches up monarchy and that Cromwell should be chosen Protector.”

HUGH PETERS'S CAPTURE.

From an old Pamphlet published in London, 1660.

“Amongst the rest, their Baalim-like Prophet Soothsayer Hugh Peters, is close prisoner in the Tower of London. Some difficulty there was in the discovery of him; but upon Intelligence, that he privily lurked about Southwark, two Messengers were sent on Friday last to apprehend him; and entering the house of Mr Broad a Quaker in S^t Thomas Parish, whose daughter then lay in, they searched but missed him, he being (according to his custom) crept into bed to the young woman, where the Messengers modestly forbade their search, she having bin d^rivered but two days before; And while they were searching at, one Day a Cobler, Hugh the Firebrand escap'd from Childbed, leaving behind him his Cane with a Rapier in it, a Bible, and gray Cloak. But on Sunday night they found him at one M^r Muns in the Maze, who denied himself to be Peters; and said his name was Thompson, threatening the Messengers with an Action at Law for offering to affirm he was Hugh Peters, and therefore refused to go with them, till at last, being assisted by the Constable and others they forced him; which he perceiving, desired he might speak privily with Mrs Mun, which they denied, unlesse he would speak in their hearing, after which he said, I will go, but I beg for the Lords Sake that you will not call me M^r Peters; for said he, if it be known that I am Hugh Peters, the people in the street will stone me. But forcing him away there was some tagging; and feeling his skirts hard, they unript them & found 5 pieces of Gold, some Silver Medals, and out of his Pocket they took an Almanack, which he was very much troubled at After which they brought him to the Tower, and delivered him into the Custody of the worthy Lieutenant

Sir John Robinson* still avering his name was Thomson; till at last in private to Sir John he confessed who he was. This is St Hugh, who when our Glorious Sovereign was led to Martyrdom, fell so heavy upon his righteous Soul, blaspheming him upon his then Text (Psalm 149), "To bind their King in Chains &c") and many other sordid Notions; too wicked and prophane to be here recited."

[To be continued.]

Above is page 378 - NEHC vol 39
Oct 1895

NOTES AND DOCUMENTS CONCERNING HUGH PETERS

Communicated by G. D. SCOLL, Esq., of London, England.

[Continued from vol. xxxix. page 378.]

NOTES.

THOMAS ROSS, who was associated with Elias Ashmole in the examination of Hugh Peters in the Tower of London,* was the "Keeper of his Majesties Libraries." Concerning the examination, Ashmole, in the preface to his *Antiquities of Berkshire*, says that "On June 18, 1660 the church and state being restored to its Antient Glory Mr Ashmole was introduced by Mr Thomas Chifinch to kiss the King's hand, with whom he discoursed some hours the next day and then was constituted Windsor Herald and his patent signed on the 22^d of the same month and took the Common oaths of his Office on Aug^r 10 following. Soon after this he was appointed by the King to make a description of his Medalls and had them delivered into his hands and King Henry VIIIth closet assigned for that purpose. At the same time was also a Commission issued out for the Examination of that infamous Buffoon and Trumpeter of Rebellion Hugh Peters Concerning the disposal of the Pictures, Jewells &c belonging to the Royal Family which were committed chiefly to his Care and sold and dispersed over Europe and are yet in the Closets of several Princes who then connived at, nay encouraged the depredations made on the Royal Exile and enriched their own Cabinets with the invaluable Curiosities of England at a very cheap rate which neither Generosity, Honour, nor Justice has ever induced them to restore though they well knew the invalidity of the Title upon which they purchased; but crowned Heads have as little regard to Honour or Justice when they interfere with their Interest, as the vulgar else how shall we account for their Courting the Usurper Conceding to the most unreasonable demands, and sacrificing all even to the most sanguine Expectations he could entertain. This Commission was soon brought to a conclusion by the obstinacy, or Ignorance of their criminal who either would not, or was not able to give the desired satisfaction. Thus was this matter drop^d and every one left, if their own consciences permitted to enjoy without molestation the Plunder they had collected." In Dr. Rich^d Raw-

* This examination of Hugh Peters was taken, Sept. 12, 1660, before Sir John Robinson (alderman of London), created a knight June 22^d, 1660, by Charles II. The king's order to Sir John and the testimony of Peters are printed in the *Register*, xxxix. 264.

1886.] Notes and Documents concerning Hugh Peters.

27

linson's interleaved copy of Ashmole's "Antiquities of Berkshire," a note is made that "Dr Rawlinson has a catalogue in Mr Ashmole's handwriting of the persons names who bought the Kings and Queens goods with the sums of money paid for them, collected out of the Contractor's register MSS."

On the 26th June, 1649, parliament passed "an Act for the sale of the Goods and Personal Estate Of the late King, Queen and Prince," "Whereas the Goods and Personal Estate heretofore belonging to the late King Charles, and to his wife and eldest son, have been and justly are forfeited by them, for their several Delinquencies; And though the same be of considerable value yet in regard many parcels thereof are dispersed in several hands and places, they may for want of a certain accompt, probably be spoiled and imbezled, or made away without advantage to the State, if due care be not had, and some speedy course taken to prevent the same; The Commons of England assembled in Parliament, taking the premises into their serious consideration have thought fit and resolved—That the said Goods and Personal Estate, heretofore belonging to the persons above named, and to every, or any of them, shall be inventoried and appraised, and shall also be sold, except such parcels thereof as shall be found necessary to be reserved for the uses of the State; Be it therefore Enacted, and it is enacted by this present Parliament, and by the authority of the same, that John Humphreys and George Withers of Westminster Esqr^s, Anthony Mildmay, Ralph Grafton of Cornhill, Michael Lampier, John Belchamp, Philip Cartwright of the Isle of Jersey, Gent. Henry Creech, John Fosch, David Powel and Edward Wiuslow, Gentlemen and Citizens of London, shall be, and are hereby constituted and appointed Trustees for the enquiring out, inventorying, appraising and securing of the said Goods and Personal Estate, and they or any four or more of them, shall be, and are hereby authorized, to repair to any and every house or place whatsoever, where any of the said Goods, or any part of the said Personal Estate doth lie, and to make or cause to be made a true and perfect Inventory or Inventories thereof, and of every part and parcel thereof, which they shall or may any way finde out or discover, and to make a just and equal apprizement of the same & of every part and parcel thereof, according to the true value thereof, as they in their judgments and consciences shall think the same may reasonably and probably be sold for, expressing in the said Inventory or Inventories the several sums or values at which the several parcels shall be apprizd as aforesaid, and to secure, or cause to be secured, the said goods, and every part and parcel thereof, at such place or places & in the hands & custody of such person or persons as they shall finde most fit and convenient to prevent any spoil and imbezlement thereof, of which Inventory or Inventories, with the several apprizements of the premises the said Trustees or any 4 or more of them shall make three Duplicates certified under their hands and Seals, and expressing the several places where, and the persons in whose Custody the premises or any part thereof respectively are secured as aforesaid, and keeping the Originals in the hands of such Clerk register as they shall think fit to imploy, shall within fourteen days after any such apprizements make return and send one of said duplicates to the Council of State, which shall be kept by the Secretary thereof & the other to the other Commissioner hereafter named to be Contractors for sale of the said Goods, or to the Clerk register whom the said Contractors shall imploy for that purpose, which shall by him be Registered & safe kept, and the third to the Treasurers hereafter mentioned." The

trustees had ample powers given them to search, examine and issue warrants for the calling of any person before them, suspected as possessing any of the late king's effects. The agents or officers appointed by the trustees to execute the various commissions for the search and sale of the said king's effects, were to be allowed seven pence in the pound out of all such money made by said sales. The commissioners and contractors appointed for the sale of the goods found, were "Daniel Norman of the Isle of Jersey Merchant, John Hales of London Merchant, Clement Kinnersley, John Prior Henry Parre, and William Allen Gentlemen and citizens of London. Careful provisions were inserted in the act to regulate the sales and to dispose of the proceeds. With regard to certain goods a clause was inserted that "whereas divers of the said goods and premises are of such a nature as that though by reason of their rarity or antiquity, they may yield very great prices in Foreign parts, where such things are much valued yet if particular mens use in England they would be accounted little worth, and so yield no considerable price, if they should be forthwith sold here, according to the foregoing directions. It is therefore further Enacted and Provided That for such particulars of the premises as the said Contractors shall find to be of that nature, they or any 3 or more of them may treat & agree with any merchant-adventurer or Foreign Merchant about transporting such of the said goods into any Foreign parts where they may be sold at the best rates, &c. &c." The agents or commissioners of the contractors in this business were to be paid by the allowance of five pence in the pound upon such sales. The treasurers to receive and disburse all moneys under the operation of the act were "Humphrey Jones and John Hunt Gentlemen and Citizens of London," and any clerks they might need to assist them were to be paid by the allowance of two pence in the pound "out of a and singular the moneys to be received and accounted for by them." Parliament made a condition that out of the first moneys raised by the sale 30,000£ were to be "issued and lent unto the Treasurer of the Navy, which said sum before the 2^d day of May, 1650, was to be restored and reimbursed by said Treasurer of the Navy out of his receipts for the Navy. Hugh Peters was paid £100, December 24th, 1656, as "one of the Preachers in Whitehall Chappell being for ½ a years salary for y^e same due 17th December 1655," and on January 6, 1657, the sum of £50 to "Hugh Peters one of the Preachers in Whitehall Chappell being for one quarter salary for ye same and was due unto him 7th Janij. -55." Again on April 8th, 1658, "To M^r Hugh Peters being in full of a Warr^t bearing y^e 30th day of 8th 1656 for y^e paym^t of £150 unto him 100£ thereof being paid unto him as by page y^e 12th appears and now more" the sum of £50. Mr. Peter Sterry was one of the preachers at Whitehall Chapel associated with Mr. Peters, and his pay was also in arrears, he having been appointed in October (18), 1656, and a payment of £100 on account made the 26th December of the same year. Hugh Peters gave up his appointment as preacher at Whitehall to attend the army into France. Sir William Lockhart who is called "His Highness's Ambassador in France," writes from Dunkirk, July 8-18, 1658, to "the Right Hon^{ble} my Lord Thurloe one of the Lords of his highness Counsell and principall Secretary of State," that "I could not suffer our worthy friend Mr Peters to come away from donkerke without a testimony of the greatt benefitts we have all received from him in this place, wher he hath laid himself forth in greatt Charity and goodness, in sermons, prayers, and exhortations, in visiting and relieving the sick and wounded, and in all these profitably applying the singular talent

God hath bestowed upon him to the two Cheef ends proper for our awditory, for he hath not only shoven the soldiers their duty to God, and prest it home upon them I hope to good advantage, but hath likewise acquainted them with their obligations of Obedience to his highge government and affection to his persone, he hath labored amongst us heare in much good will and seems to enlarge his harte towards us and love of us for many other things, the effects whereof I desyre to leave upon that Providence which hath brought us hither, it were superfluous to tell your lo^{pp} the story of our present condition either as to the Civill government, works, or soldiery, he who hath studded all these more than any I know heare, can certainly give the best account of them, wherefore I remitt the whole to his information and begge your lopp^t casting a favorable eie upon such propositions as he will offer to your lo^{pp} for the good of this garrison." Another letter, also bearing the date from the 8th to the 18th of July, 1658, from "lord ambassador Lockhart" to Secretary Thurloe, makes further mention to Hugh Peters. "Mr Peeters hath taken leave at least 3 or 4 tymes but still something falls out which hinders his return to England, he hath been twice at bergh and hath spoak with the lord: three or foure tymes, I kept my self by and had a care that he did not importune him with too long speeches he returns loaden with an account of all things hear and hath undertaken every mans business, I must give him that testimony that he gave us three or foure very honest sermons and if it were possible to gett him to mynd preaching and to forbear the trubling of himself with other things he would certainly proove a very fitt Minister for Soldiers. I hope he cometh well satisfied from this place, he hath often insinuated to me his desyer to stay heare. If he had a Call, some of the officers also hath been with me to that purpose but I have shifted him so hansomely as I hope he will not but be pleased for I have told him that the greatestt service he could do us 'tis to goe to England and Cary on his propositions, and to own us in all our other interests which he hath undertaken with much zeal."

Many efforts were subsequently made by Charles II. to obtain the restoration of the goods belonging to his father, and to this end he had a separate clause inserted in the Treaty of Peace concluded between himself and the States General, at Breda, 21-31 day of July, 1667. The following was the clause inserted in the treaty:

"If it happen that any Tapestry, Hangings, Carpets, pictures or Household furniture of what kind soever or precious stones Jewells, with Curiosities, or other moveable goods whatever belonging to the King of Great Britain either now or hereafter shall be found to be in the hands or power of the said States General or of any of their subjects, the said States General do promise that they will in no wise protect the possessing of any moveables appertaining unto the said King which goods may be taken from them in such manner that they who shall make difficulty to restore them freely may not be dealt withall, by any means contrary to equity and Justice and the said States do promise to use their most effectuall endeavours that a plain and summary way of proceeding may be taken in this affair without the ordinary formal method of Process usually observed in Courts; and that Justice be administered whereby his said majesty may be satisfied soe far as possibly may be without the wrong of any one."

A committee was also appointed by Charles II. "authorized for the getting in and Compounding for his late Majesty's goods, &c." John Singleton, the clerk to the committee, issued a notice 4 July, 1662, at a meeting

where Mr. William Rumball, Mr. Elias Ashmole, Mr. Francis Rogers, Col. Hawley and Mr. Beauchamp were present, for a further adjournment to the next Tuesday at Somerset House. They called before them two persons who were suspected of possessing articles belonging to the king. The committee met from time to time, but with indifferent result if we may take the following as a sample. "15. October, 1662, where Mrs Willis of y^e Starr Chamber Westminster y^e relict of M^r Willis deceased was this day before the said Com^{tee} & called in question for 2 leaden cesterne and other goods of small value and satisfaction demanded for y^e same and for as much as the said Mrs Willis hath made it appear that y^e goods are very inconsiderable & that y^e greatest part thereof is fixed to y^e said tenement called y^e starr chamber & there remaining, therefore prayed that she might be acquitted and discharged thereof. It therefore thought fit & accordingly is ordered that the said Mrs Willis be acquitted & forever discharged of the said goods & that she be put to no further trouble for or by reason of y^e same & all persons herein any way concerned are desired to take notice of this order as occasion shall require."

The warrant for the appointment of the commission to reclaim the King's property was issued 30 June, 1662, and the first meeting was held 4 July 1662, when the following persons were present:—Mr. William Rumball, Mr. Elias Ashmole, Mr. Francis Rogers, Col. Hawley, Mr. Beauchamp. was ordered by the committee that the "accumps of the persons heretofore called Trustees Contractors, and Treasurers for the sale of the goods belonging to the late King of ever blessed memory" should be examined and notices were to be served upon three of the late contractors to appear at Somerset House on the next Tuesday. The contractors were "y^e wo shipful Clement Kinnarsley Esq^r yeoman of his Majesty's removing ware, M^r Henry Parr, and M^r William Allen. Trustees, Mrs Grafton, the widow of Ralph Grafton, Mrs ffoach, the widow of John ffoach, and Humphrey Jones as one of the treasurers." At a meeting on

8 July, 1662, "Humphrey Jones late treasurer for the sale of the goods bee hereby desired and required to send in to them a p^{ec}ular account what moneys were paid to the late contractors and Trustees, &c."

18 July, 1662. Mr. Robert Sherley at Bromley, Kent, and Mr. Robert Mallory of Scalding Alley, London, having failed to appear when summoned before the committee, orders were given to arrest them at the dwellings and bring them to the next meeting at the Queen's Council Chamber.

3d Oct. 1662. Mr. Marshall, Senior, "hath some small quantity of marble and stone that did formerly belong to his Majesty for which he had offered as a composition for y^e said marble, &c. to pay the summe of 4 Shillings viz^t 30^s for his maj^{ty} & 15s. for fees," which the committee accepted of.

9th Oct. 1662. Mrs. ffoach, the widow of Mr. ffoach, required to bring in the following articles, in the keeping of her late husband: "1 great Chaire, 4 cushions, 2 blew chairs, 6 Stooles, a foot stoole of flowered velvet laced and fringed (all valued at)—14£., one Turkey Carpet, 3£., 6 lesser Turkey old Carpets, 2£., a long picture of many figures, 3£., 2 paire of plaine water pots, 1£ 10. 0, two little paire of plaine water potts, ten shillings."

1st November, 1662. The Earl of Salisbury having appropriated "50 Tunnes of flour belonging to his Majesty, to his own use, during the tyme of the late usurped power," is called upon to meet the committee at the Queen's Council Chamber.

21st January, 1662-3. Sir Launcelott Lake "is called upon to appear and give acc^t touching severall hangings of China Sattin, Crimson and lemon colour." A letter also written to Mr. Pashall for a picture of a landscape done by Bartholomew. A letter also sent to Lady Gray desiring to be informed who Lord Gray's executor is.

Mr. Oliver Bowles, without, over against the Mermaide tavern, is notified to meet the committee on Friday, 28th Jany. 1662-3, to give account of a bedd of crimson damask and other goods; and Mr. Day in Lumber St. is to bring in "the aggot cup with him."

Mr. Tryham to attend, 17th Dec. 1662, about a suit of Hangings of "Vulcan and Venus." Mr. Adrian about "2 Christall Salts." Mr. English at Mortlake to appear on the 15 April, 1663, to give account of "y^e disposition of divers hangings in his custody, &c." Mr. Duart to attend "y^e 29 May, 1663, to account for a picture of the Queen by Vandyke, 30£, one of y^e King & Queen with the Laurell leaf 60£, a Casket in the fashion of a Tortiss 40£." "To attend 6 March 1662 fry day M^r Mason y^e late wife of D^r Mason in Doctors Commons to 2£ a lynyng of a cloke or shew cause. Mrs Cogan at Greenwich to a Billiard table or shew cause, and eight others are summoned for goods not named. To attend the 13 March, 1663. "M^r Sergeant Glynne in Portugal Row in Lincolns Inn-fields, for a picture of an Italian family done by Perdenino (Pordenone) to 2 pence to y^e messenger," and four others summoned.

It was ordered in the Committee that as Mr. Thomas Beauchamp "hath bene at more than ordinary paines and care in discovering y^e said goods belonging to her Majesty that out of the moiety of all moneys received, the said Thomas Beauchamp shall receive 2-5 part and Robert Jenkins Esquire Clerk of her Majesties Counsell, Henry Brown, Gent. and Colonel William Hawley each of them one fifth part of such money recovered."

NOTES AND DOCUMENTS CONCERNING HUGH PETERS.

Communicated by G. D. SCULL, Esq., of London, England.

[Continued from page 31.]

NOTES.

At the meeting held 22nd of April, 1644, attention was called to the depolishing of his Majesty's palace of Holderby in Northamptonshire, and summons were directed to five or six persons to appear and answer. Robert Eyre Innholder, especially in Holderby was to render account for "certtain bookes, papers, writings, records or copies that are in his custody."

10th June, 1664—"a charge made against ye persons undernamed—M^r Benjamin morley in partnership with one Smyth and Hall a spiny grove six acres—60£—a length of buildings 25£—a myle and a halfe of y^e park palling—20£, John Wills for stone and tymber of Holderby house used about his owne house—4£—John Jay for divers materials valued at 6£—John Stanley for divers materials 6£—John Hill for severall materials 12£ 10s. 0—in all 133£ 10s. 0 for which ye Committee demand ye full value."

20 July, 1664. The several persons undermentioned having possessed

themselves of divers parcels of tymbel belonging to his Majesty's parkes of Clarendon and Bowood in Co. Wilts—the several persons named are summoned to make satisfaction and appear at Deunmark house (London) y^e 5 day October 1664. To Jaspas Townesend—To “Sellers—Wm Ball—Rich^d King—Hngh Webb—Jon Wills—Jo^a Preter—Jo^a Norman.”

Tho^s Barnard—M^r Tho^s Nipp—and Widdow Chapman of Petsworth Sussex are summoned (1. Aug^o 1664) for having possession of some plate. M^r Boardman at Drury Lane has a marble head, he is ord^d to deliver it to Geo. Sherley, Messenger (11 Nov^r 1664). Also 16 Nov^r 1664. It is ordered by the said Com^{es} that Elias Ashmole be desired to re-deliver y^e picture of the late King on horseback now in his custody unto M^r Rhemy unless the s^d M^r Rhemy doe agree to pay for divers pictures belonging to his maj^y in his Custody y^e summe of 200£ in money or y^e like value in pictures but wth this proviso that before y^e said picture be re-delivered he is to appeare & to give good & sufficient baile to answer to such acct^s as shall be brought against him in his maj^{ties} name for y^e recovery of satisfaction according to law.”

Signed JOAN SINGLETON, Clerk.

Some time before his execution Hugh Peters issued a little pamphlet, “the case of Hugh Peters &c.”* in which he corrects various evil reports about himself “as basely and Scandalously suggested by black mouths.” It thus commences: “They which think to Vindicate themselves to the World by writing Apologies, rarely reach their ends, because their Gaine is an after game; prejudice is strong and the Plaister can hardly be made broad enough, nor apologies put into all hands who have pre-judged and received the first tincture.” . . . “I shall briefly give an account of my coming into England, my behaviour since I Came, and my present condition in this Juncture. A colony going to settle in New England by his Majesties Patent, I went thither; who by my birth in Cornwel was not a meer stranger in that place, and fishing trade; and thither invited often, I say, went, and was with another sent into England by the Magistrates there, for ease and Excise in Custom, and some supplies for Learning &c., because I had been witness to the Indians receiving the Gospel there in Faith and Practice; they having the Bible translated by us into their Language, and part thereof printed and hundreds of them professing the Gospel and teaching each other the Knowledge of the true God, and the rather, from the example of the English there, when in seven years among thousands there dwelling, I never saw any drunk, nor heard an Oath, nor any begging, nor Sabbath broken; all which invited me over to England; but Coming, found the Nation imbroyled in troubles and War; the Preaching was, Curse ye Meroz, from Scotland to England; the best ministers going into the field; in which (not without urging) I was imbarqued in time; and by force upon me here, failed of my promise of returning home; which was and is my sad affliction. My first work was, with the first to go for Ireland; which I did with many hazards, then was at Sea with my old Patron the Earl of Warwick, to whom I ow^d my life; then was employ^d by the City; then by the Earl of Essex, my Lord Say, and others; and my return stopt by the Power that was; and so was in the last army in several places, but never in the North: In all which affairs I did labour to perswade the Army to their duty. My Principles in Religion guided me to those Orthodox truths exprest in the Confession of Faith in England; and am known to joyn

* The Case of M^r Hugh Peters, Impartially Communicated to the View and Censure of the Whole World, written by his own hand. London. Printed for Sam. Speed, and are to be sold at his shop, at the Signe of the Printing-Press in S^t Pauls Church-yard. (8 pp.)

with the Protestants who are found in the Faith, in Germany upon me lower, France &c. I have and do hereby witness against all Errors of all kinds. For the War, I thought the Undertakers their Work; I was inconsiderable, yea, heartily sorry for mistakes about me. For my Marriage, I challenge all the Kings party to speak if I were unwill; nay, many of them had my Purse, Hand Help every way, and are ready to witness it. yea, his present Majesties servants preserved by me through hazards. I was never privy to the Armies transactions about the late King at Holshoy or elsewhere, or of any Juncto, Council or Cabal. But when his majesty sent for me, I went to him, with whom I dealt about my New England business, &c. was three or four times with him, and had his special acceptance, and served him to my utmost, and used all my little skill for his and the Nations good more than twice; for which I have witness; though it be hard to cut my through so many Rocks. But God is good. It is true, I was of a Party, when I acted zealously, but not with malice or mischief; it hath been accounted honourable, Et Cesare in hoste probat, to keep to principles of honour and honesty. I never quarrelled others for their judgement in Conscience. It is received, that Religio docenda est, non coercenda. I saw Reformation growing, Laws made, and some against debauchery and evil (which I was glad to read in his Majesties late Proclamation). I saw a very learned, godly, able Ministry as any the world, well provided for; I saw the Universities reformed and flourishing; and such things much encouraged me in my Endeavours. I studied the 13 of the Rom and was tender; but found the best of Scotland and England of the ministry engaged and so satisfied me, that I understand the first undertaking is still maintained good. By the War, I never enriched myself: I have often offered my personal Estate for 200£ and for Lands, I never had any but that part of a noblemans, which I never laid up penny of; nor never urged the Lord Grey, or others, to buy, nor knew not of the sale till done, nor justify any unworthy thing in it. I never plundered nor cheated, never made penny over the Sea, nor hoarded or hid any in England. I never was guilty of Secluding the Members in 48, nor knew it, till done, and sent by my Lord Fairfax to fetch off two of them, and to know who they were that were secluded. I never had Jewels, nor anything of Court or State, more then before, directly nor indirectly. Never had any Ecclesiastical Promotion in my life in the Nation to enrich me; but lived on my own when I had anything; nor have been a lover of money. The many scandals upon me for uncleanness &c., I abhor as vile and false, being kept from that and those aspersions cast, and such I make my protest against as before. I know how low my name runs, how Titleless, how contemned. David knew why Shimei cursed him. For the Laws of England, I know no place better; onely having lived where things are more expedit and cheap, I have shewed my folly so to say; and having no evil intention, a very worthy Lawyer took exception at something of mine or my friends; which was never intended in his sense by either, and craved his excuse; I can charge myself with evil enough, as any excentrick notion of mine from my own Calling, want of a solemn spirit in slight times, with unbelief, if I have gone about to reach Religious ends by trampling upon Civil dnties, breaking any Covenants, or slighting them; and do fear Gospel, and the Spirit also may be undervalued by mine and others unworthy dealing with them. Much to these I might add, who have seen many vanities under the Sun and the World hung with Nets and Snares: Alas, there is nothing

[July,

1886.] *Notes and Documents concerning Hugh Peters.*

285

Notes and Documents concerning Hugh Peters.

175

And lastly, I understand what exception is upon me for Life and Estate in the House of Commons. I have taken hold of the Kings Majesties gracious Pardon, as others did; and know not truly where this exception is grounded. I wish I had been with their Honours to have clear'd I hope a Vagrant report or Airy noise takes no place with them: for challenge all the World for my innocence for these suggestions; and appeal to their Honours, and the noble Lords for a review of the Charge or information; and crave no favour if any sober man can charge me; otherwise I most heartily beg just favour, unless my evil be only for acting with such a party, I must have it; For I know before whom my Cause is, and am not despair.

I must again profess were I not a Christian, I am a Gentleman by birth, and from that extract do scorn to engage in the vile things suggested, and that by one creditless witness, that only supposeth, but asserts nothing.

I wish from my heart that our present Prince may be, and the Nation be more happy then any; and that the true ends of Government may be had and communicated fully; that every honest heart may have cause to rejoice in God, the King, and their Laws. And for my self (through sin) I resolve to be quiet in a corner (if I may) to let God alone with ruling the World, to whose Wisdom and Power we ought to submit; yet a mind mine own work, though never so small; to be passive under Authority, rather than impatient; to procure the quiet and peace of the Nation to my utmost; to mind things invisible, and Of a better consistence then these are; and to pray, when I can do no more.

HUGH PETERS.

Hugh Peters to Capt. Allen.

Capt. Allen. I have received y^r and I have advis'd your friends what were best viz to come home upon sight hereof because the act of oblivion takes place till febr. 3^d, and come directly to me to Whitehall and I shall further advise you. wishing the Lord may doe you good at the heart,
24 Jan: 1642.

Y^r loving friend HUGH PETERS.Endorsed—for my loving friend Cap^t Tho^s allen.

[To be continued.]

NOTES AND DOCUMENTS CONCERNING HUGH PETERS.

Communicated by G. D. SCULL, Esq., of London, England.

[Continued from page 173.]

EXCERPTED OUT OF THE INVENTORY BOOK OF HIS MAJ^{ties}
GOODS IN WHITEHALL, ST. JAMES'S, SOMERSET
HOUSE, THE TOWER, WINDSOR, &c. &c.

Plate & Jewells in the upp^r Jewell house in the Tower in charge of S^r
Hen: Myldmaye Appraised the 13: 14: & 15 dayes of August
1649

Fol: 36.

deliv'd to the Mint
to be Coynded.The Imp^{eriall} Crowne of Massy Gold weigh^t 7^{lb}: 6^{oz}:
enriched &c: at 40 £: p^r lb.

valued £ s. d.

one blew Saphir 50. 00. 00.

one Saphir 15. 00. 00.

Two Saphirs 30. 00. 00.

One Saphir 3. 00. 00.

One Saphir 3. 00. 00.

One Saphir 10. 00. 00.

Two Saphirs 15. 00. 00.

Two Saphirs 8. 00. 00.

One Saphir 8. 00. 00.

One Saphir 3. 00. 00.

1 Saphir 20. 00. 00.

1 Saphir 15. 00. 00.

1 Saphir 3. 00. 00.

1 Saphir 5. 00. 00.

2 Saphirs 10. 00. 00.

198. 00. 00.

Ruby Ballasis

£ s. d.

Sold to M^r John Crooke3^d Jan: 1649

for 320 £

232 pearles at —15^s apiece . . . 174. 00. 00

Four Rubies in the Flower de luce . . . 20. 00. 00

4: in the Cross 6. 00. 00

2: in the de Luce 12. 00. 00

4: in the Cross 6. 00. 00

2: in the de luce 3. 00. 00

5: in the Cross 12. 00. 00

4: in the de Luce 30. 00. 00

4: in the Cross 20. 00. 00

4: in the de luce 20. 00. 00

4: in the de Luce 20. 00. 00

37 valued at 149^s . . . 149. 00. 00

£ s. d.

2i Rubies at 16. 00. 00

2i Rubies at 5. 00. 00

2 Emeralds at 168. 00. 00

28 Diamonds at 189. 00. 00

Sold M^r Murrey
as appraised.Sold Rob^t Mallary,
3 Jan'y 1649for 191 £ 10^s 6^dthe Gold d'd to the
Mint to be Coynded.The Queenes Crowne weighing 3^{lb}: 10^{oz}: 1¹
valued at 40^s p^r lb: | 5 oz being abated
for the weight of the stone . . . £ s. d.all sold 3: Jan. 1649,
for 210 £ to M^r Crooke.

20 Saphirs { 4 at 50. 00. 00

{ 16 at 40. 00. 00

22 Rubies 41. 10. 00

all but 81 pearles sold
the 2 pearles sold
Derrick.

83 Pearles 201. 10. 00

201. 10. 00

✓ PETER, HUGH (a. 1599-) of Salem, MA. English home: Savage (3:401) says he came from St. Ewe, Foway, Cornwall (12 mi. E. of Truro). Banks (1930) lists him on two ships, the "Abigail" in 1635 and the "Charles" in 1640 when he preached to the passengers, so he probably came twice. There is an entry in English Origins, 1984, First Series, Vol. 3, p. 635: "Elizabeth Barker of London, widow, only dau. and heiress of Hugh Peters, sometime of Salem, New England, deceased, clerk, confirms to Robert Devereux of Marblehead, tanner, the farm of 350 acres now in his occupation, 30 June 1704. (Ref: NER 39:373).

This section is papers collected
in Salt Lake City and elsewhere

to check out the accuracy of the
Sjornads visitation pedigree —

true or false? and add other
links to the tree if warranted,

It is crucial to verify the Salen/
"Shropshire"/Staffordshire lineage before
venturing earlier.

I find Benbow and Congreve (thru but
no proof of connection to Sjornads yet. Respect
this part must be true?? If so the Deschalls
must be ours (The beginning sounds iffy!)

The last part of Shropshire & all that
is Essex is pretty well established

THE FOLLOWING IS FOR RESEARCH
PURPOSES ONLY, IN CASE SOME
CONNECTION SHOWS UP LATER!

Plumb

From: A Roll of Arms, NEHGR Oct 1953,
pages 267-8

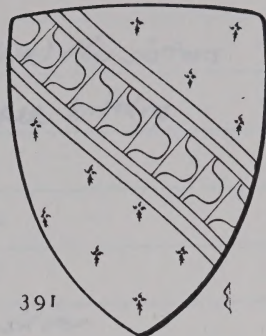
391.

FLUMB, John, 1594-1648
of Great Yeldham, Essex, England;
of Dorchester, MA and of Wethers-
field & Branford, CT

Arms : Ermine a bend vairy gold
& gules cortised vert.

Crest: A sitting talbot gules,
collar and line gold.

Motto: Vere vada.



The John Plumb who used the above arms apparently came to Dorchester Massachusetts Bay Colony about the same time as our John Plumb (Plum) and was of an appropriate age to have been his father or uncle, but I have seen nothing in writing to connect them.

Our John Plumb (Plum) stayed in Dorchester until late in life, when he moved to Attleboro. Apparently he had only two children, John Jr. who was killed in King Philip's War, leaving no descendants to carry on the Plum family name (and thus no Plumb genealogy of his line!) and a daughter Mercy who married our Thomas Chub, Jr.

Incidentally, the crest is the same and the arms almost the same as those of Elizabeth Plumb (Plumme) of Great Yeldham, Essex, mother of Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds of Mass. Bay Colony, our ancestor in the Averill Lines. It seems almost certain John and Elizabeth Plumb were related in some way.

THE FOLLOWING IS THE HISTORY
OF THE CITY OF BOSTON
AS GIVEN BY THE
REVEREND FATHERS OF THE
CITY OF BOSTON

PLATE



From a copy of the original of the
year 1630-1631

From a copy of the original of the
year 1630-1631

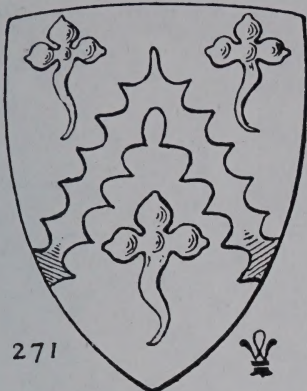
From a copy of the original of the
year 1630-1631

The first of the above arms is the arms of the
city of Boston, as given by the
reverend fathers of the city of Boston.

The second of the above arms is the arms of the
city of Boston, as given by the
reverend fathers of the city of Boston.

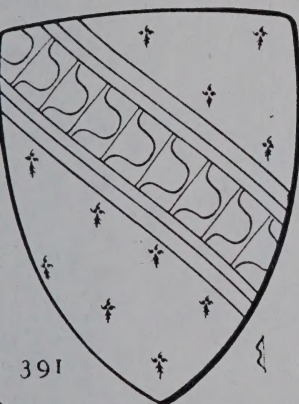
The third of the above arms is the arms of the
city of Boston, as given by the
reverend fathers of the city of Boston.

Symonds



271

Plumb



391

Cooke



181

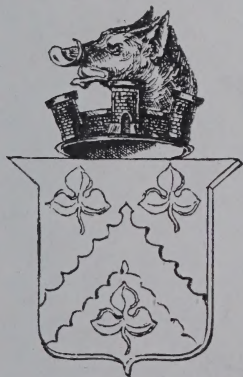
Symonds

Here we are in presence of a clear pedigree, the family of *Samuel* SYMONDS, who settled at Ipswich, Mass. (*circa* 1630), having been established for twenty generations back, at *Croft*, in Lancashire, and *Stratton*, in Staffordshire.

The arms we give were exemplified in 1625 to *Richard* SYMONDS, a brother of *Samuel* SYMONDS, as being "the ancient arms of the SYMONDS of *Great Yeldam*, Co. Essex, and of *Newport*, Co. Salop, Gentlemen."

The Church of *Great Yeldam*, Co. Essex, contains a fine brass in memory of *Richard* SYMONDS.

The first wife of the emigrant was *Dorothy* HARLAKENDEN, of the HARLAKENDENS of *Earl's Colne*, also in Co. Essex, whose cousin, *Roger* HARLAKENDEN, was the founder of the HARLAKENDEN family in America.



ARMS: Azure, a chevron, engrailed, between three trefoils, slipped, or.

CREST: Out of a mural coronet, chequy, argent and azure, a boar's head of the first, crined, sable.

MOTTO: *Moriendo vive.*
[In dying, live.]

HERALDIC JOURNAL, I., 45.

HARLEIAN MS., 1542 [In the British Museum].

RICHARD'S *Symonds Heraldic Collections* [Printed by the Camden Society].

SIR BERNARD BURKE: *The General Armory of England, etc.*, 1884.

Winthrop



Reade



Lake



41

VOL. LXXXII.

11

Harlakenden



144



Cogswell



Symonds

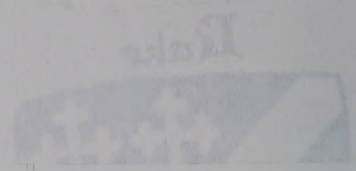
HERALDIC DESCRIPTION

ARMS: Azure, a chevron engrailed between three trefoils slipped or.

CREST: Out of a mural coronet or, a bear's head argent, tusked of the first, crined gules.



Blanc



Blanc



Blanc



Blanc



Blanc



Symonds

HERALDIC DESCRIPTION

ARMS: *Azure*, a chevron engrailed between three trefoils slipped *or*.

CREST: Out of a mural coronet *or*, a boar's head *argent*, tusked of the first, crined *gules*.

(MER 196) Reede Coat of Arms (Thos Reede of Salem MA (grana 1634) & his sisters
Margaret Lake, Meothe (Eppie) Symonds, & Elizabeth Winthrop

Arms: Azure a griffin and a canton gold
Crest: A griffin's head erased azure, beak & ears gold

#41 Lake Thomas & John, brothers Boston MA

Arms: Silver a bend between six crosslets fitch silver
Crest: A sea horse's head silver

#271 Symonds Samuel of Great Yeldham, Co. Essex, Eng; & Ipswich MA
Dep. Gov of MA 1673

See
Symonds

Arms: Azure a chevron engrailed between three trefoils slipped gold.
Crest: Out of a mural crown chequy gold & azure a bear's head
silver, tushes gold and mane silver

#7 Winthrop John - Ipswich & Beverly MA

Arms: Silver three chevrons gules a lion sable tongue & claws azure
Crest: On a mount vert a hare running proper.

#181 Cooke George & Joseph, brs, Cambridge MA 1677

Arms: Sable, three bends silver.

#144 Harlakenden, Roger - Cambridge MA

See Symonds

Arms: Azure a fess ermine between three lion's heads erased gold
Crest: Between the attires of a stag gold, a bird with wings
elevated, silver

(Dorothy Harlakenden was (1596-1634) Gr. Yarnmouth Eng was Samuel Symonds' first wife - m 2 Apr 1617, Salisbury)

#124

After-lake Paper - Cambridge MA

Ans: There is a few cranes between the line's back, and a few
Crest: Between the others of a step, and a bird with wings
elevated silver

1000

#121

Cooler

Camp 4 Lake, New Cambridge MA 1277

Ans: Yellow, three birds silver

#120

Winking

John - in line + ground MA

Ans: Silver three cranes gold + in 2000 paper + blue paper
Crest: A + white with a blue running paper

#121

Spencer

Ground of Great Hallway, 2 birds, 1000 MA
The day of MA 1000

Ans: There is a blue, yellow, and silver three birds silver gold
Crest: A + a small blue cloud gold + silver + blue's back
silver, under gold and silver

1000

#119

Let's

James + John, 1000 MA

Ans: There is a blue between six cranes silver
Crest: A + a blue's back silver

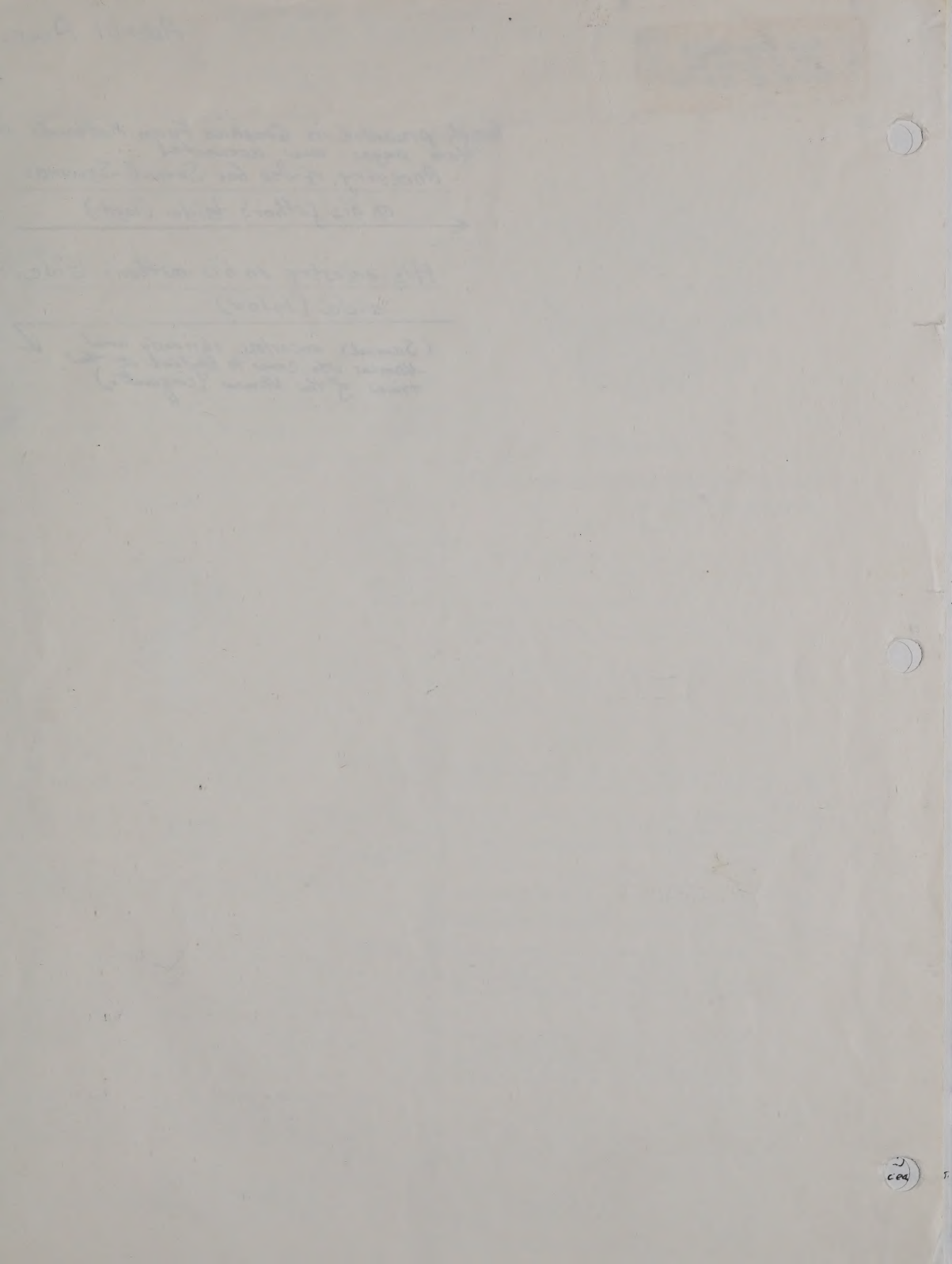
#118

John

(The day of John MA 1000) + silver

James + John, 1000 MA, 1000 MA + 1000 MA

Ans: There is a blue and a silver gold
Crest: A + a blue's back silver, gold + silver



Norma Hansen Zaniewski
8924 W. Plainfield Ave.
Greenfield, WI 53228-2230

PEDIGREE CHART

Person No. 1 on this chart is the sar
person as No. 144 on chart No. A8 (a)

Chart No. A8 (6)



Symonds

(A Visitation Pedigree)

SYMONDS DESCENT

1. RAUNGWALDER of Moax and the Orcades, 9th Century
2. SIMON, Lord of St. Sever, Normandy, died 1090 and was buried in church on his fief. He had two sons:
 1. Richard de Goy, Viscount of Arranches, father of Hugh Lupus, Earl of Chester
 2. ADAM FITZ SIMON, holder of lands and manors at Threxton, Norfolk, and Almshoe, Hertfordshire, under Bishop Odo. He died before 1118.
3. RICHARD FITZ SIMON, died 1168, m. Edith, daughter of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe, Norfolk. He was a founder of the Order of the Garter, Herts and Essex. He had two sons:
 1. ADAM SYMONDS of Suffield, m. Joan, dau. and heir of William de Reppes of Cley-by-the-Sea
 2. Richard, m. Margaret, dau. of William Boteler of Warrington & Suffield, Oremby, Runham Hall, Cley-by-the-Sea
4. WILLIAM FITZ SIMON, son of Adam, and grand-son of Richard Fitz Simon, m. in Leighton and received large grants from King John.
5. JOHN SYMONDS of Croft, Lancashire, m. dau. of Sir William Kording, Kt. (also spelled Cording)
6. ROBERT SYMONDS, went into Staffordshire, m. dau. and heir of Congreve of Stratton.
7. JOHN SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Gravenor of Bella-
8. port, Co. Salop, England
9. THOMAS SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Thomas Worth-
10. ington, Gentleman
11. JOHN SYMONDS of Newport, Co. Salop, m. Ann, dau. Thomas Pembow
12. RICHARD SYMONDS of the Poole, "An antient seate in this parish, come out of Shropshire; one of ye Curstors* of ye Chancery buried in Yeldham Church, July 8, 1627; m. Elizabeth, second dau. of Robert Plume of Yeldham Hall, Gent.; buried in Yeldham Church, January 27, 1611; they had these children:
 1. John
 2. Thomas
 3. Edward
 4. SAMUEL, 3rd son, one of the Curstors of the Chancery, bought ye place in Toppsfield, Essex, called Olivers, 100 pounds per annum. Went into New England 1637. He became Deputy Governor of Massachusetts.
 5. A daughter
13. SAMUEL SYMONDS, whose wife died in 1636, married 2nd, Martha (Reade) Epes and settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony with his family in 1637. His daughter, Ruth, married the Reverend John Emerson, Harvard A.B., 1636, whose second child, Martha, married, 1685, William Cogswell.

* CURSOR—now Hist. 1523 (Med. Latin—a cursor or runner).

1. One of 24 clerks of the Court of Chancery, the Court of Lord Chancellor of England (the highest court of judicature next to the House of Lords—1653).
2. Curstitor baron—a Junior BARON of the EXCHEQUER who attended to revenue matters. Abolished in 1856.

Presented in Graphic Form to Sara Space
Ancestry of Dep Gov Samuel Symonds
on his father's side (left)

His ancestry on his mother's
side (below)

Graphics from "Cogswell Haldemans ancestry." Also see
"Ancestry of Priscilla Baker" by William S Appleton (1872) for
documentation (though I suspect they just threw in Raunswalder
because he was early ancestor of William the Cogswell!).

PLUME



PLUME

PLUME:

Arms: Argent, a bend or and gules between two bendlets vert.

Crest: A talbot sejant gules collared and lined or.

PLUME

- I. ROBERT PLUME (Plume-Plumb) Spam's Hall, Great Yeldham and Botelers, passed from the Plume Family to Symonds (see below).

References

Visitation of Essex, Harleian M. A. 13, p. 470
Morant, Pp. 300-2

#6746

- II. ROBERT PLUMME, gent., d. 1613, Co. Essex, Eng.; m. Elizabeth Pincas. She died June 25, 1596, Co. Essex. The first of the Plume family was Robert of Great Yeldham who was tenant of the manor (#1 above) of Great Yeldham under John de Vere, the great Earl of Oxford, in the reign of King Henry VIII. Robert, his son and heir, bought this manor of Edward, Earl of Oxford, for his two youngest sons, Thomas and Edmund. By marriage with the daughter of Robert, the manor passed to Richard Symonds.

Reference: Morant's History County Essex, p. 300

- III. ELIZABETH PLUMME, second dau., born Dec. 9, 1560, d. Jan. 23, 1610/11, Yeldham Church, parish register; m. Richard Symonds Jan. 9, 1581, Yeldham, Co. Essex, Eng. He was born Dec. 5, 1560, Shropshire, Eng., and d. July 8, 1627, Great Yeldham Church, England.

References:

Morant's Hist. Co. Essex, Eng., pp. 300-2
Visitation of County Essex, Har. M.S. 13, p. 495
Diary of Richard Symonds. (By his marriage had in frank the Poole where he settled.)

- IV. DEPUTY-GOVERNOR SAMUEL SYMONDS, m. second, Martha Reade Epes, wid. of Daniel Epes.

also
with
Pincas
or Purd

PEDIGREE CHART

Person No. 1 on this chart is the sar
person as No. 144 on chart No. A8 (a)

Averill Ancestors

Chart No. A8 (a)



Symonds :

Based on Herald's Visitation of Essex Pedigrees

SYMONDS DESCENT

RAUNGWALDER of Moax and the Orcades, 9th Century
SIMON, Lord of St. Sever, Normandy, died 1090 and was buried
in church on his fief. He had two sons:

1. Richard de Goy, Viscount of Arranches, father of Hugh Lupus, Earl of Chester
2. ADAM FITZ SIMON, holder of lands and manors at Threxton, Norfolk, and Almshoe, Hertfordshire, under Bishop Odo. He died before 1118.

RICHARD FITZ SIMON, died 1168, m. Edith, daughter of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe, Norfolk. He was a founder of the Order of the Garter, Herts and Essex. He had two sons:

1. ADAM SYMONDS of Suffolk, m. Joan, dau. and heir of William de Reppes of Cley-by-the-Sea
2. Richard, m. Margaret, dau. of William Boteler of Warrington & Suffolk, Oremby, Runham Hall, Cley-by-the-Sea

WILLIAM FITZ SIMON, son of Adam, and grand-son of Richard Fitz Simon, m. in Leighton and received large grants from King John.

JOHN SYMONDS of Croft, Lancashire, m. dau. of Sir William Kording, Kt. (also spelled Cording)

ROBERT SYMONDS, went into Staffordshire, m. dau. and heir of Congreve of Stratton.

JOHN SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Gravenor of Bella-port, Co. Salop, England

THOMAS SYMONDS of Stratton, m. dau. of Thomas Worthington, Gentleman

#6744 JOHN SYMONDS of Newport, Co. Salop, m. Ann, dau. Thomas Benbow

RICHARD SYMONDS of the Poole, "An antient seate in this parish, come out of Shropshire; one of ye Curstors* of ye Chancery buried in Yeldham Church, July 8, 1627; m. Elizabeth, second dau. of Robert Plume of Yeldham Hall, Gent.; buried in Yeldham Church, January 27, 1611; they had these children:

1. John
2. Thomas) Both of these were listed as second sons — were probably twins, and thus SAMUEL was listed as third son.
3. Edward
4. SAMUEL, 3rd son, one of the Curstors of the Chancery, bought ye place in Toppefield, Essex, called Olivers, 100 pounds per annum. Went into New England 1637. He became Deputy Governor of Massachusetts.
5. Richard Fitz G. Margaret

SAMUEL SYMONDS, whose wife died in 1636, married 2nd, Martha (Reade) Epps and settled in the Massachusetts Bay Colony with his family in 1637. His daughter, Ruth, married the Reverend John Emerson, Harvard A.B., 1656, whose second child, Martha, married, 1685, William Cogswell.

* CURSITOR—now Hist. 1521 Med. Latin—cursor or runner).

1. One of 24 clerks of the Court of Chincery, the Court of Lord Chancellor of England (the highest court of judicature next to the House of Lords—1633).
2. Curstior baron—Junior BARON of the EXCHEQUER who attended to revenue matters. Abolished in 1856.

Presented in Graphic Form to Sara Space

Ancestry of Dep Gov Samuel Symonds
on his father's side (left)

His ancestry on his mother's
side (below)

Graphics from "Cogswell Hardemancency." Also see
"Ancestry of Priscilla Baker" by William S. Appleton (1972) for
deceitment (though I suspect they just threw in Cogswell
because he was a very ancestor of William the Original!)

PLUME



PLUME

PLUME:

Arms: Argent, a bend or and gules between two bendlets vert.

Crest: A talbot sejant gules collared and lined or.

PLUME

- I. ROBERT PLUME (Plume-Plumb) Spam's Hall, Great Yeldham and Botelers, passed from the Plume Family to Symonds (see below).

References

Visitation of Essex, Harleian M. A. 13, p. 470
Morant, Pp. 300-2

#6746

- II. ROBERT PLUMME, gent., d. 1613, Co. Essex, Eng.; m. Elizabeth Pincas. She died June 25, 1596, Co. Essex. The first of the Plume family was Robert of Great Yeldham who was tenant of the manor (#1 above) of Great Yeldham under John de Vere, the great Earl of Oxford, in the reign of King Henry VIII. Robert, his son and heir, bought this manor of Edward, Earl of Oxford, for his two youngest sons, Thomas and Edmund. By marriage with the daughter of Robert, the manor passed to Richard Symonds.

Reference: Morant's History County Essex, p. 300

- III. ELIZABETH PLUMME, second dau., born Dec. 9, 1560, d. Jan. 23, 1610/11, Yeldham Church, parish register; m. Richard Symonds Jan. 9, 1581, Yeldham, Co. Essex, Eng. He was born Dec. 3, 1560, Shropshire, Eng., and d. July 8, 1627, Great Yeldham Church, England.

References:

Morant's Hist. Co. Essex, Eng., pp. 300-2
Visitation of County Essex, Har. M.S. 13, p. 495
Diary of Richard Symonds. (By his marriage had in frank the Poole where he settled.)

- IV. DEPUTY-GOVERNOR SAMUEL SYMONDS, m. second, Martha, Reade Epps, wid. of Daniel Epps.

also
with
Purce
a Pur
1633
See Mos. &
Alice

PEDIGREE CHART

Person No. 1 on this chart is the same
person as No. 674 on chart No. A9C

Averill Ancestors

A8C
Chart No. _____

Ancestry of Martha (Reade)(Epps) Symonds through her father

READE



READE, MARTHA, wife of Lt. Gov. Samuel Symonds, Ipswich, Mass.
Arms: az a griffin and a canton or.
Crest: a griffin's head erased az beak and ears or.
Ref.: Coll. of Arms 1654; #196 Roll

- 55,984 I. WILLIAM READE, of Wickford, Essex, d. 1534
27,982 II. ROGER READE, b. Wickford, Co. Essex, Eng., d. March 17, 1558, Wickford; m. ELIZABETH, living Dec. 10, 1557, when husband made will, which will names "wife Elizabeth and son, Wm. Reade."

References:

Suffolk Manorial Families, V. 1, p. 164
Ancestors of Priscilla Baker, p. 105

- 13,496 III. WILLIAM READE, b. Wickford, d. July 9, 1603, will dated July 3, 1603 (death is recorded in Wickford Parish register, Co. Essex); m. Mary Church. His will names wife, Mary, son Edmund Reade, brother Edmund Church.
IV. EDMUND READE, gent. b. May 23, 1563, Wickford, Co. Essex, Eng., will dated Nov. 20, 1623, d. Dec. 1, 1623 (Parish reg. Wickford, Co. Essex); m. ELIZABETH COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., d. 1637. Will of Edmund names loving wife, Elizabeth, Martha Epps, my dau., Elizabeth and Daniel and their children. Elizabeth (Cooke) Reade m. (2) after 1637, Rev. Hugh Peters. She was sister to Thomas Cooke of Great Yeldham, Essex, gent., who entered the pedigree in Visitation County Essex, 1623.

Her ancestry through her mother:

27,000 - 1 John Cooke b. Horksey m. Miss ? Newton, d. Pebmarsh, had son

13,500 - 1 I. ROBERT COOKE, of Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., m. Joan Sydney.

COOKE



COOKE

- #6750 - II. THOMAS COOKE, b. Pebmarsh, Co. Essex, Eng., made will Aug. 30, 1621, d. between Aug. 30 and Nov., 1621, Pebmarsh, Co. Essex; m. Susan Brand of Boxford, b. Boxford, Co. Suffolk, Eng.

References:

Vist. Essex, Har. M.S. V. 13, p. 381; Har. M.S. V. 14, 32.
Morant's Hist. Essex, p. 263
Waters' Gleanings, p. 673

- III. ELIZABETH COOKE, m. (1) Edmund Reade and (2) Rev. Hugh Peters. * (who later remarried)

COOKE ARMS: sable, three bendlets arg. Crest: a cockatrice statant argent, wings or, beaked and combed gules. (Vist. Essex, 1634, p. 382)

- IV. MARTHA READE, who m. (1) Daniel Eppes of Kent and (2) Samuel Symonds.

COOKE:

Arms: Sa three bendlets arg.
Crest: a cockatrice statant arg wings or, beaked & combed gu.
Ref.: Vist. Essex, Harl. Ms. 13, p. 383

* When Charles II was restored to the monarchy, Rev. Peters was beheaded as a regicide for his presumed complicity in the death of Charles I. (He was a Chaplain in Cromwell's army.) He "died really" just before his "Friend Cooke." Was that his deceased wife's brother?

2) 5g roads near in Newport and Salep (near Shropshire) late 1400's and most of 1500's





MARCH A141

Symonds

ELY A10

ELY A142

Essex Co. England

26

SWAFFHAM A1065

THETFORD A11

THETFORD

18

Wickpa + N. + S. Bentham So. E. Near H. J.

When more time is found,
 make Thompson as my -

Wilford - ^{Edward} ~~Reed~~ 18 TL 6905

Not Plane (^{Spam's} ~~Here~~) Spam
creat yester now

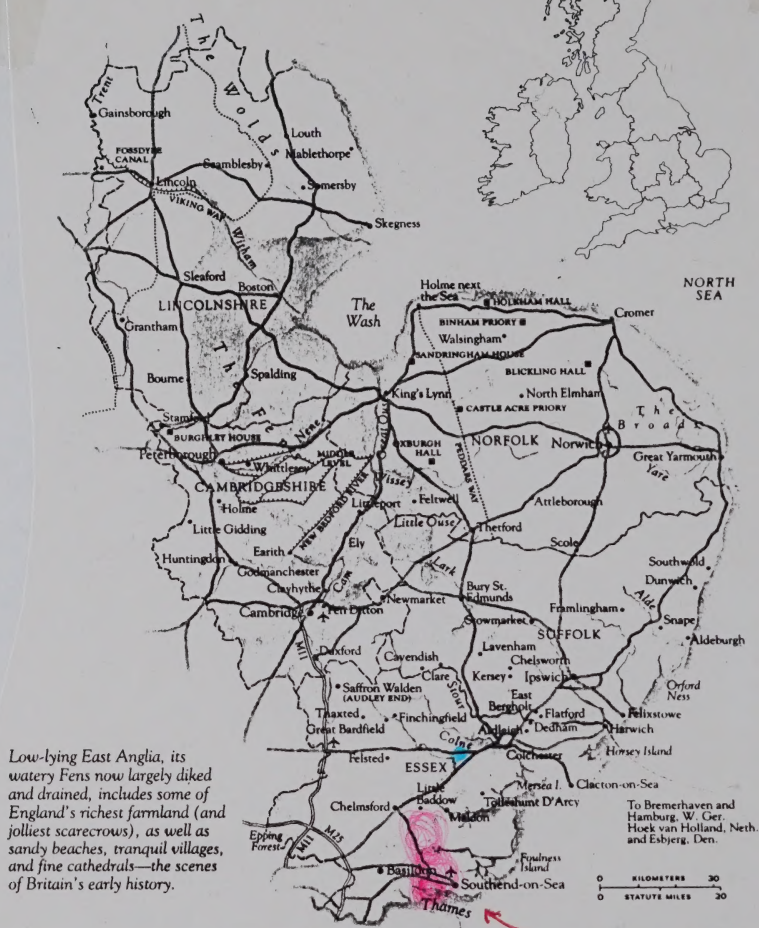
Harlowe - Charles ~~Cliff~~ ⁸⁵²⁸ ~~Ex~~

Cook - Palmar 8633

Look - ^{bathe} North ~~Benfleet~~ ^{near} 7690 sea
 + 80

7437 Topgall near
 gr. yard





Thomas Cooke of Rob. marber, Essex, father of Elizabeth Cooke who married (Col) Edmund Reade of London (1552-1635) as his second wife. He was born in Wickford, Essex. Their daughter Martha Reade, came to New England with her son, Daniel Epes, Jr. She married Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds. (Her sister Elizabeth married Gov. John Winthrop as his second wife, lived in CT.)

YELDHAM MAGNA.

Lording aka Lorden (4 even Harding)

John Symonds of Croft, com Lancast^r = daughter of S^r W^m Lording, Kt.

Robt. Symonds went into Staffordshire = daughter & h. of — Congrave, of Stratton.

John Symonds of Stratton = daughter of ^{Grosvenor} ~~Robert~~ tenor, of Bellaport, com Salop Esq^r

Thomas Symonds of Stratton = daughter of Thomas W^m ~~Worham~~ gent. Robt S. 2^d son married — had yssue

John Symonds of Newport, com Salop = Margaret daughter of Thomas Maynard.

John Symonds of Newport, com Salop = Ann daughter of Thomas Bendbow.

Richard Symonds of the Poole an antient seate in this parish, came out of Shroph^r: one of y^e Cursistars of y^e Chancery, buried in Yeldham Church July 8. 1627. Elizabeth 2^d daughter of Robt Plume of Yeldham hall, gent. buried in Yeldham Church Jan. 27. 1611.

Willm Symonds married and had yssue.

Roger S.

John Symonds = eldest son one of y^e Cursistars of y^e Chancery.

Ann daughter of Thomas Elyott of Godalmyng in y^e County of Surrey Esq.

Thomas S. 2^d son dyed June 5 without yssue 1625.

Margaret onely daughter married to Edmund Eyre of Windsor Gent. one of y^e Cursistars of y^e Chancery.

Edward Symonds 2^d son one of y^e Cursistars of y^e Chancery, borne at Yeldham, Died 9 of Decemb^r 1627, buried in y^e Church of Black Notley in Essex he lived in Notley and had his lands chiefly by his wife. Benefactor wth y^e other Cursistars to y^e Library at Westminster.

Ann onely daughter of John Draper of Brayntree in y^e County of Essex married in St. Gregories of Pauls London Feb. 2. 1614.

Samuel S. 3^d son one of y^e Cursistars of the Chancery, bought y^e place in Toppesfield in Essex called Olivers 100 p^{ann}, went into New England.

— daughter of Thos: Harlakinden of Colne.

Richard S. 5th son Barrister of Lincolns Inn, bought y^e manor of Panfield in Essex of James Heron Esq.

Richard S. eldest son, student in Greys Inn.

Dorothy. Samuel. Harlakenden. Elizabeth. wth he carried wth him to New England.

Richard Symonds eldest son one of y^e Cursistars of y^e Chancery, baptised at Notley 12 June 1617, committed prisoner by Myles Corbet for a delinquent in y^e State 25 of March 1643, escaped thence 1643 & gott into y^e Kings Army where he was in command of y^e Lord Bernard Stuart Earle of Lichfield in y^e batt^{le} of Cropredy bridg Lichfield Newbury 2^d Naseby 3^d Reliefe of Chester where that noble Lord was slayne. after y^e wth S^r W^m Vaughan at Denbigh & other places. Collector of the 3 Volumes.

Edward Symonds 2^d son dyed at Oxford 1645 being in Armes for y^e King 1645. baptised Dec. 20. 1621.

John Symonds bapt. at Notley Ap^r 10. 1627.

Ann Symonds bapt. at N. March 31. 1631.

Richard S. eldest son student in Lincolns Inn, in divers battles with y^e Earle of Essex ag^t y^e King, was slayne at Naseby 1645. Under y^e Command of S^r Tho: Fairfax ag^t y^e King, borne Oct. 13. 1618.

John S. 2 son = married y^e daughter one of the Cursistars of the Chancery by y^e resignation of his father 1641. borne at Y. Sept. 4. 1618.

Samuel S. 3 son.

Fitz Symonds 4th son.

Ann Symonds eldest daughter married Mr Thomas Bacon of y^e City of London Merchant.

— Bacon onely daughter.

Elizabeth 2^d daughter married to Anthony Walmer of Lincolns Inn Barrister, by whom he had Elizabeth.

Thomasine married Pepys. Dorothy twins, borne Aug. 16. 1627.

Dorothy & Penelope both dead about 1621.

*Slain at Naseby
(Samuel's grand nephew)*

Symonds PedigreeAverill Ancestors

The widely spread Symonds Visitation Pedigree beginning part seems to have been invented by heralds eager to please their clients. For one thing, there are not enough generations for the time allotted after generation 2. The family were obviously Normans of wealth but not of as high social standing as the Grosvenor & Congreve connections in Shropshire/Staffordshire. An early member of the family in Essex County, England, claimed he could trace personally back to John Symonds who married the daughter of Sir William Cording, Knight. (The Norman People identifies the name as Carden of Cardun, Normandy.) In our hunt for likely real Symonds maternal ancestors, we might start with Congreve of Stretton (not Stratton) in Shropshire.

1. The Viking Raungwalder of Moax and the Orcades (Orkney Isles off the coast of Scotland) in the 9th century had descendants:
2. Simon, Lord of St. Sevier, Normandy, d. 1090)
3. Adam Fitz-Simon held lands (in England?) under Bishop Odo
4. Richard Fitz-Simon (d 1168) m. Edith, dau of Sir Richard de Penesthorpe, Norfolk
5. Adam Symonds of Suffield m. Joan, d&h of William de Reppes of Cley-by-the-Sea, Norfolk
5. William Fitz-Simon m. _____ in Leighton, Shropshire and he received grants of land in Shropshire from King John (ruled 1199-1216)
7. John Symonds of Croft in Lancashire m. a dau of Sir William Cording (Carden) Knight. (Croft is really in Leicestershire a little east of Staffordshire...probably shire miscopied.)
8. Robert Sumonds "went into Staffordshire" and m. the dau of Congreve of Stratton (really spelled Stretton & is in Shropshire though that family does figure in Stafford family lines. It is a place name. see Congreve chart.)
9. Joim Symonds of Stretton m. the dau of Grosvenor of Bellaport Co. Salop. (See Grosvenor chart.)
10. Thomas Symonds of Stretton m. _____ dau of Thomas Worthington, Gent.
11. John Sympnds of Newport com. Salop m. Margaret, dau of Thomas Maynard.
12. John Symonds (d 1574) of Newport m. Ann, dau of Thomas Bendbow She d. 1597)
13. Richard Symonds (1560-1627) of "The Poole" Essex "came out of Shropshire" m. Elizabeth, dau of Robert Plumbe (d 1613) of Yeldham Hall
14. Samuel Symonds (d.1678) went to New England in 1638 where he became Deputy-Governor in time. He m. x3. We are from the second Martha Reade., widow Eppes. Her sister m. Governor John Winthrop jr., and her widowed mother married the famous regicide, Rev. Hugh Peter.

Abraham F. K. L.,
Federal Govts of Am by 92 stars

Fitz Symon, Richard Lee — born at the sacred Benettable
Kromant 1334 Gates a ship or (F) Thomas brother name, survey 130
Prolet from Rial (1168) was too early

1334 King Edward III mistakes only of the fiber

Carden, in some cases an English local name, also a form of Cardon. Ralph, Richard, Robert, Paganus Cardon, or Cardun, were of Normandy, 1180-95 (MRS). William Cardun held lands in Essex in 1086. In 1165 the family was seated in Hants, Norfolk, Beds, and Lincoln (Lib. Nig.); temp. John in Bucks; and 1325, Adam Cardun was M.P. for Notts. Hence the Baronets Carden.

Historical Map of Shropshire



Symonds lived at Stretton, Newport, and Leighton. The latter place is not indicated on the map--perhaps too small--but it is SSE of Little Wenlock, a bit north of the Severn River, probably on the old Roman Road shown on the map. 4+ X

When the Normans first took over, Salop (Shropshire) was a very wild place on the Welsh Marches, uncleared and wild, with wild, unruly people without law living there, but in number sparse. The Conqueror gave it to his cousin Roger of Montgomery, to rule for him forcefully. Ancient Saxon ^{king} Offa had built a dyke to keep some of the wild ones out, which forms the western boundary, as the map shows. The Normans who were successful there had also TO BE ROUGHNECKS AS WELL, TO SURVIVE.

The Symonds pedigree claims that King John (ruled 1199 to 1216) granted lands there to our ancestor, William Fitz-Simon. Of course he wanted to attract a better quality of people to live there, as clearing of dangerous forests continued.

Those things can be considered as we try to learn more about what our ancestors' lives were like in that place. It did gradually improve somewhat.

Perhaps these pages will give the reader a little idea what the scenery, at least, was like. Wroxeter, not far from Leighton, had once been one of the largest Roman settlement camps in England.

Some of the Symonds also lived in Newport, which is on the border with Staffordshire to the NE, where they lived in Stretton.

There they married a Grosvenor, who had a maternal Peshall ancestress. What a wild life Sir Adam Peshall lived there, about 1370 or so!

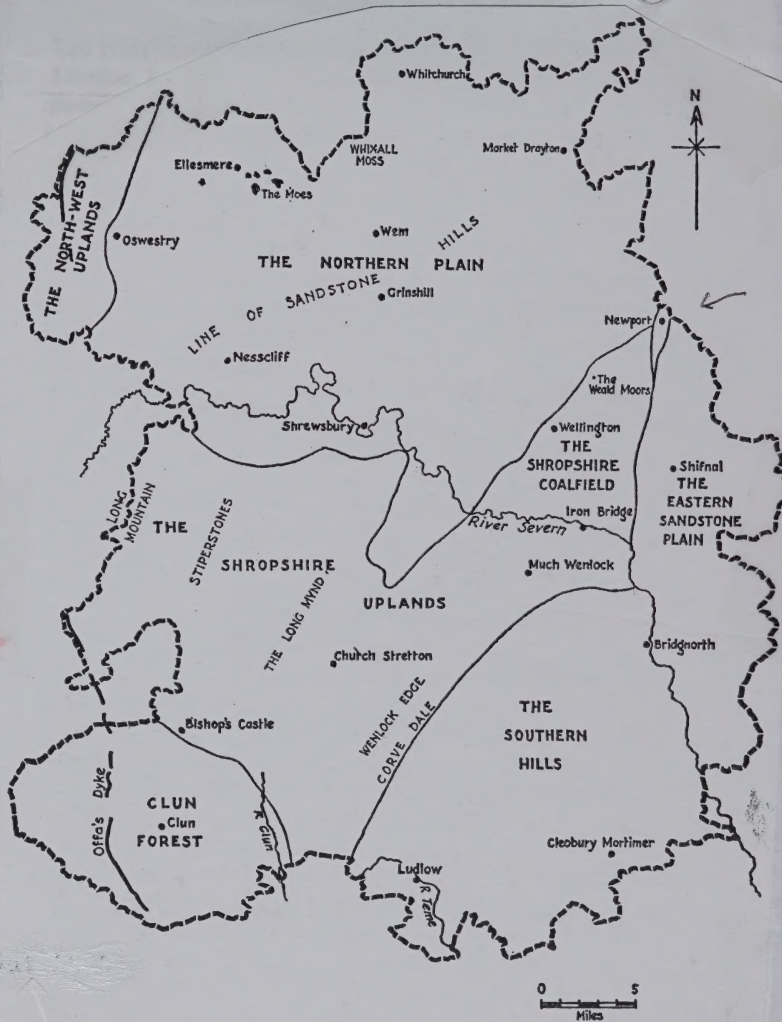


Fig. 1. Shropshire: natural regions

towns by the regular street-grid, the public law court and market, the large public bath-house and the provision of a water supply and drainage system.⁶ What is surprising about Wroxeter is that the size and apparent wealth of the town is hardly commensurate with the known state of the tribe in pre-Roman times, and we can only assume that our picture is at present far from complete.

The visible buildings at *Viroconium* represent part of a large bath-house complex with the famous 'Old Work' forming the bath entrance. It is one of the very few extensive lengths of civilian Roman walling to have survived in Britain (Plate 2). Outside the baths, the main lines of the grid-pattern street-plan with associated buildings have been identified from air photographs and earthworks (Fig 2). The total area of the town was about 180 acres, the fourth largest in Britain. The defences of the town have been identified largely from aerial photographs and Plate 3 shows the relationship between the town ditches and the ploughed-out medieval ridge-and-furrow. Although the original site of the fort at *Viroconium* was chosen for strategic reasons, it is almost certain that there already existed native British estates capable of producing food for the city. Furthermore, a considerable number of crop-marks within a few miles of *Viroconium* along the Severn, probably representing a system of Romano-British farms, have been identified.⁷ On these grounds a fairly well-developed Iron Age farming system in the area can be assumed.

Little light has yet been thrown on the physical collapse

⁶ *The Civitas Capitals of Roman Britain*, Ed. J. S. Wachter (Leicester, 1966).

⁷ Information from Mr J. Pickering. Current work on the military situation in the first century A.D. suggests that there are considerably more forts and marching camps in the county than had been previously realised. By inference there may well be many Romano-British civil sites awaiting discovery. See G. Webster, 'The Military situation in Britain between A.D. 43 and 71', *Britannia*, Vol. 1 (1970).



Fig. 2. Plan of *Viroconium*
Viroconium was the fourth largest town in Roman Britain. This plan shows the relationship of the village of Wroxeter to the town defences.

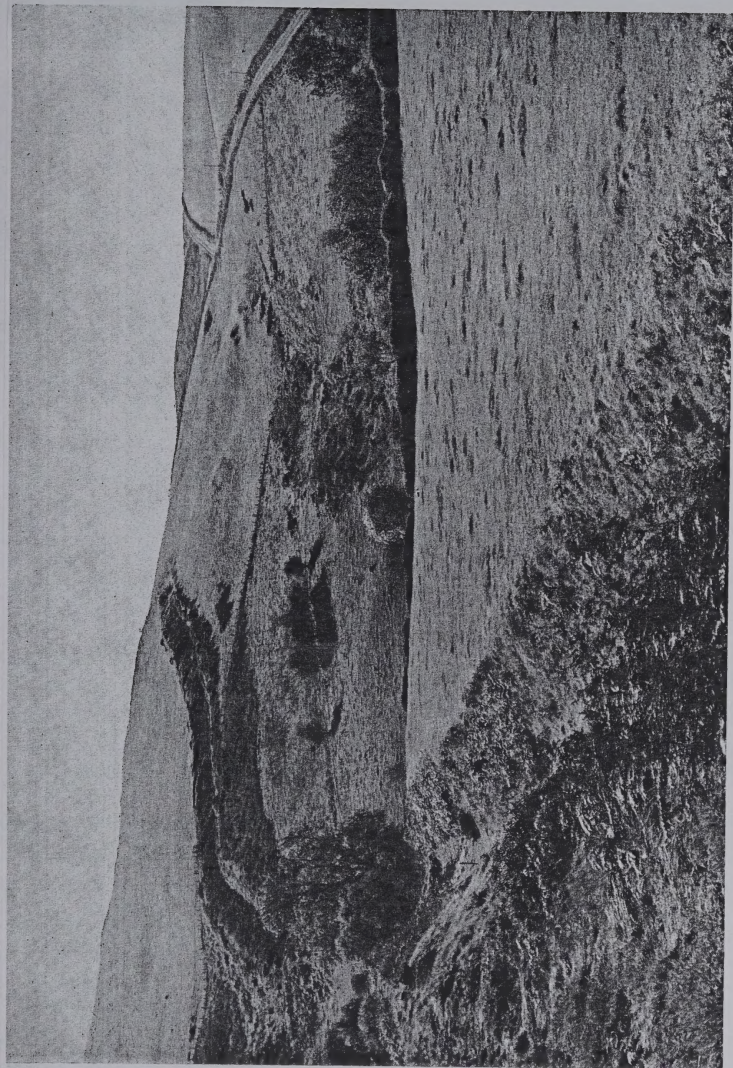


Plate 5 Offa's Dyke winding across open country in the Clun Forest. The line of the earthwork is mirrored by a ditch and road on the Welsh side.

Red Hill (*Uxacona*), Penkridge (*Pennocrucium*), and eventually London, has been preserved in the line of the A5. A minor detour from the Roman road at Overley hill formed part of Telford's improvements to the London-Holyhead road, early in the nineteenth century; the ancient road alignment is, however, preserved in parish boundaries. West of Shrewsbury, the Roman road joining *Viroconium* to the massive fort at Forden Gaer (*Lavrobrinta*) is preserved as a secondary road only as far as Westbury. The Roman road then proceeded westwards over the top of the Long Mountain, the line being demarcated for two miles by Westbury parish boundary. The modern road, however, follows the river Rea southwards, implying that during the Roman period the marshy Rea Valley did not provide convenient access into central Wales. The modern trunk road from Shrewsbury to central Wales lies a few miles to the north, reflecting the northwards movement of the trading centre in late Saxon times. The road from *Viroconium* to *Mediolanum* is preserved in short stretches as a modern road, but can be identified in field boundaries and from crop-marks. The road running southwards from *Viroconium* to Leintwardine (*Bravonium*) is easily identifiable on the ground running south-westwards through the Church Stretton gap. There is a remarkable stretch of Roman road between Craven Arms and Leintwardine which stands out very clearly in aerial photographs. Wistanstow church, a pre-Conquest foundation, lies on this stretch of road and the village appears to have developed along it.¹³

In the east of the county the line of the road running from *Pennocrucium* to *Mediolanum* can be traced in the modern road pattern. A stretch of this road, which crosses the flood plain of the river Tern to the south of Market Drayton, has been known as the 'Longford' since at least the thirteenth century. The name Pave or Pavement Lane, found in

¹³ See p. 77.

Symonds Lineage

Averill Ancestors

CONGREVE Line from Congreve of Stretton Visitations of 1614
Staffordshire (Cuddleston Hundred)

1. Robert le Champion of Little Sardon m. Agnes, widow of Sir Richard de Stretton. She died 1 EI (1273)

Note: Le Champion was a corruption of Campion, a Norman family

2. William le Campion, Jr. (his nephew) m. Alice, oldest daughter and co-heiress of Sir Richard de Stretton, who inherited the manor. William was called Lord of Stretton in 18 E3 (1325 AD)
3. Thomas le Campion m. one of the heiresses of Sir John Weston of Weston. Their daughter and sole heiress
4. Catherine de Campion m. Geoffrey de Congreve, styled Lord of Stretton in 45 E3 (1372)
5. Richard Congreve of Stretton m. Agnes, dau of John Harpur te, p H6 (reigned 1422-1461)
6. Ralfe Congreve of Stretton m. Agnes, dau of Hugo de Erdeswick (50500) and his wife, Elizabeth dau of John Harcourt of Ronton *
7. John Congreve m. Dorothy dau of Sir John Giffard of Chillington (she m 2) in 1536). (Giffards dwelt in their castle at Chillington for over 800 years, so it is said.)
8. Francis Congreve of Stretton m. (living 1614) m. _____ dau of (Roger?) Fawke of Brewood.

* It seems generation 6 is the latest which conceivably be ancestral to the Symonds, so a pedigree of Vernons/Erdeswicks is attached just in case, for those were very old noble families. It would be interesting if they were ours. The Congreves are listed on the chart as being 5 generations from Richard Symonds, Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds' father (died 1627). Thirty years per generation is considered average but less is possible.)

The Congreve Family eventually took their name from their manor. Domesday Book shows that in 1086 AD the settlement of Congreve in Staffordshire was then in possession of King William himself. At least that proves there was such a place, for no place dictionary or map of England nowadays mentions such a place. "Congreve of Congreve" in the peerages states, "This family was one of the most eminent in Staffordshire, claimss TO HAVE BEEN SETTLED AT CONGREVE BEFORE THE CONQUEST. That is a mistake. I could not even find Campion there that early. They grew rich by marrying heiresses!

See Coat of Arms over.

VERNONS BOOKS (TYPE 31)

Ancestral Roots (line 31)

Ricūs de Vernon, Baro de Shipbroc, co. Cestr., T.R.W.

Hugo de Vernon, = fil et h. Reg. de Bayliol
R. W. II. dom de Erdeswick et
Hulgreave (co. Cestr.).

Ricūs de Ver-
non, 24 H. I. Matth. de Ver-
non, 18 H. I. Willus = fil et h. Avenell
Vernon. de Haddon,
26 H. I. Warinus Ver-
non de
Shipbroc.

Willus, Bar. de = Adeliza fil
Wich. Malbanc. Beauchamp.

Hugo, Bar. de Malbanc, = Petronella.
fundavit Monast. de Cum-
bermere, A.D. 1133.

Willus, Bar. de Wich Malbanc.

Mattheus Vernon
de Hulgreave.

Willus de
Vernon.

Rob. de Ver-
non, mil.

Ricūs de Vernon
ob patre super-
stite.

Mattheus de
Hulgreave.

= Mabilia
de Banbury.

Willus
Cestr.

Just 14 H. III. miles.

Warinus Bar.
de Ship-
broc.

= Aditha, f. et
coh. Willi
Malbanc.

Hugo de Altari-
bus (maritus
primus).

Philippa ux. Tho.
Basset de Hed-
ington.

Alicia ux. Joh.
de Walleia,
ob. s.p.

Enora,
ob.
s.p.

Mattheus = Alicia fil
Hulgreave. Verdun.

Radus
Presbyter
hæc fratris.

Warinus =
Bar. de Ship-
broc.

= Margeria
fil Mun-
devill.

Nicholas
de
Whatecroft.

Mattheus cui
pater dedit
Brickhill (Bucks).

Hugo qui
vendidit
æs suas.

Mattheus
de
Hulgreave.

Ricardus = fil et hæc
dictus de Willi
Erdeswick. Leighton.

Tho. Erdeswick
de Leighton.

Tho. de = Beatrix fil et h.
Erdeswick. Nic. de Oulnton.

Tho. de Erdes-
wick, 16 E. I. = Margeria fil
Rici Minshull.

Alditha = Will Stafford fil a Hervei
fil et coh. Bagot et Melisantæ
de Stafford.

Will Stafford de
Sandon mil.

Will. Stafford de
Sandon mil.

Jacobus Stafford de = Margareta fil Edm.
Sandon mil. 31 E. I. Bar. de Stafford.

Margeria f. et coh.
ux. Ric. Wilbur-
ham mil.

Warins,
ob. s.p.

Roisia ux. Joh's Littlebury
(act. coh.).

Tho. de Erdeswick = Margareta, fil et coh., 12 E. III.

Marg. ux. Joh. Hardreshull de
Hardreshull (co. Warw.) mil.

Marger, ux. Joh. Deincourt, ob. s.p.

Tho. Erdeswick de Sandon, 35 E. III. = Helena, fil Hug. Venables Bar. de Kinderton, 3 R. II.

(3) Samson = Eleanor, fil et coh. Johis
Erdeswick, ob. s.p. de Flandres, relict Joh
de Hardwick, ob. s.p.

(4) Hen. de Erdes-
wick, 4 H. V.

Johanna fil
Twiford.

(1) Hugo = Thomasina fil
ob. s.p. Hugonis Mey-
niill.

Rob. = fil
ob. s.p. Malpas.

Eliz. ux. Johis
Kingsley.

= Hugo de Erdeswick, Vice-C. = Cecilia fil Willi
Staff., 2 H. VI. (ob. 1473). Basset de Bore.

Joha. ux. Ro.
Dorington.

Margaretta, ux. Radi
Macclesfield.

Eliz., ux. Willi Bowyer
de Knipersley.

Johēs.
Radūs.

Margeria, ux. Johis
Salwey de
Leacroft.

... ux.
Bereford.

Hugo de Erdeswick,
4 H. VIII., ob.
1500.

= Eliz., fil Joh's
Harcourt de
Ronton.

Alicia, ux.
Rob. Coyne de
Weston.

... ux.
Aulsop.

Hugo, ob. s.p.

Sampson Erdeswicke,
ob. 1544.

= Eliz. fil Humf. Grey
de Enville.

... ux. Radulf Congreve
de Sretton.

... ux. Kempsey.

... ux. Jordan.

(2) Johēs Erdeswick = Isabella fil Joh
Barbour de Flosbrock.

(1) Hugo Erdeswick
superstes 1580.

= Maria fil Rog. Leigh
de Ridge co. Cestr.

Anna ux. Sampsonis
Walkedein.

Francesca ux. Edw.
Swinerton.

Walterus = Ursula fil
Erdeswick Edw. dom
Stafford.

Johes de = Maria fil
Heley, ob. 1653. Joh
Griffith.

Jana ux.
Rob. Whitgreave.

Dorothea
ux. Will Ironmonger.

Eliz., fil Humf.
Dixwell de
Church-over
ux. 1.

Sampson = Maria, fil Fran. Neale de Prest-
de Sandon wold co. Leic., relict Everard
ob. 1603. Digby de Dristoke, co. Rut-
land, ob. Sept. 1629.

Francesca
ux. Radi Calverley.

Math.
Erdeswick.

Edwardus = Maria
Erdeswick, fil
ob. s.p. Vyse.

Sampson = Eliz. fil
de Hartley Tho.
Green, æt. 55, 1663. Whit-
greave.

Johes. Edw. = Dorothy
f. Tho. Stanton.

Richard. Matthew.

Ricūs Erdeswick = fil
vendidit Sandon. Orwell.

Jana,
ob. s.p.

Math.
Erdeswick.

Sampson, ob. æt.
1654.

Margareta ux. Hen.
Francis de Tyknoll.

Helena, ux. Tho.
Coyne de Weston.

Eliz., ob. s.p. 1602
(fracta cervice).

Maria, ux. Tho. Smith
de Ashby Folvill.

Margeria ux. Tho. Giffard
de Whiteladies.

☆ (John) Calvin Coolidge (Jr.)
Through (2) Mrs. Elizabeth St. John Whiting

- 1 Edward I, King of England, d. 1307 = Eleanor of Castile
- 2 Joan Plantagenet = Gilbert de Clare, 3rd Earl of Gloucester,
7th Earl of Hertford
- 3 Margaret de Clare = Piers de Gaveston, Earl of Cornwall
- 4 Amy de Gaveston = John de Driby
- 5 Alice de Driby = Sir Anketil Malory
- 6 Sir William Malory = ---
- 7 Margaret Malory = Robert Corbet
- 8 Mary Corbet = Robert Charlton
- 9 Richard Charlton = Anne Mainwaring
- 10 Anne Charlton = Randall Grosvenor
- 11 Elizabeth Grosvenor = Thomas Bulkeley
- 12 Edward Bulkeley = Olive Irby
- 13 Sarah Bulkeley = Sir Oliver St. John
- 14 Elizabeth St. John of Mass. = Samuel Whiting
- 15 Samuel Whiting, Jr. = Dorcas Chester
- 16 Samuel Whiting (III) = Elizabeth Read
- 17 Katherine Whiting = John Lane, Jr.
- 18 Susanna Lane = Nathaniel Davis

Proc. of Am. Ant. Soc.
pg 151

Ann. Charlton

Symonds Lineage

Averill Ancestors

GROSVENOR From line in The Commoners Vol _____ pg 406.
The Norman People, pp 271-2 claims the family originated in Normany as le Venur, an office they held as "huntsmen" of the Dukes of Normandy. Article attached.
Also Burke's Peerages

Gilbert le Grosvenor

Robert "

Henry "

Ralph "

Ralph "

1. Richard le Grosvenor m. Penna, dau of William Mowberley
(Mobberley in Cheshire?)

2. Sir Robert le Grosvenor, Lord of Hulme, m. _____ dau. of
Mainwaring of Pever

3. Ralph le Grosvenor

4. Sir Robert le Grosvenor defended his arms against Lord Scrope in a court battle lasting many years during the reign of Richard II but was forced to yield to his powerful rival.
He m. _____ dau pf Sir Robert Pulsford, Knight.

5. Sir Thomas le Grosvenor, Lord of Hulme, co. Chester m. _____ heiress of Sir William Phesant (le Paissant?)

✓ 6. Thomas Grosvenor, a younger son, of Drayton-in-Hales, S. _____ m. Isabella, dau of _____ & co-heir of Richard Peshall of Chetwynd

7. Randolph Grosvenor of Bellaport m. Margaret dau of Randolph Mainwaring of Caringham. ?? (Carrington?)

8. Randall Grosvenor (cl480-d.1559/60) in Bellaport, m. Anne dau of William Charlton of Arley, co. Salop. *

9. Thomas Grosvenor, this couple's son of Bellaport and Brand, m. Margery, dau of John Coates, Esq. of Woodcote. This Thomas is the last of the Grosvenors shown at Bellaport. (Son William sold Bellaport & dsp.)

Daughters' spouses are not mentioned in these sources.
If John Symonds married "the daughter of _____ Grosvenor of Bellaport, it must have been one of the Grosvenors listed above.

* Ancestral Roots by Frederick Lewis Weis gives a royal line (#31) through Anne Charlton, wife of 8th generation Randall Grosvenor above. (ca 1480-1559/60) of Bellaport. It seems to me that this is a little too late for them to be Symonds ancestors, but this is left in because "John Symonds of Stretton m. the daughter of Grosvenor of Bellaport." Generations #7, #8 & #9 are the only Grosvenors found at Bellaport.

Grosvenor, so named from the office of Venur, or Venator (hunter) of the Dukes of Normandy, borne by this family. Walter de Venur was eminently distinguished 960 at the battle of the Forde, between Lothaire, King of France, and the Normans, where he was rescued by Duke Richard I., and remounted by him on his best horse (Palgrave, Hist. Normandy, ii. 738). The name occurs about the same time in the Charters of the Gallie. Christiana. The ancient seat of the Le Venours appears to have been Venables, near Erreux, and they bore or, or argent, a bend azure (La Roque, Hist. Harcourt, ii. 1181), which was also borne by several of their English descendants, especially by the family under consideration. Three brothers of this family came to England with Hugh Lupus: 1. Gislebert Venator, or De Venables, ancestor of the barons of Kinderton, of whom Gisle-

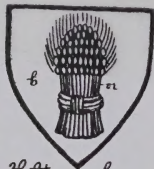
bert Venables of Cheshire is mentioned in Normandy 1180 as 'Gislebert Venator' (MRS). The French line of Le Venur, descended from him, bore argent, a bend azure, fretty or, for difference (Anselme, viii. 256). From another brother probably derived the Butlers of Chester, Barons of Warrington, who also bore or, a bend azure, differenced by the wheat sheaves of Chester. 3. Radulph, or Ranulph.

Ranulph Venator, a baron of Chester, held in capite from Hugh Lupus in 1086 (Domesd.). He witnessed the foundation charter of Chester Abbey, and was a benefactor to it (Mon. i. 201). His descendants all bore or, a bend azure, till the 14th cent. Robert le Venur, his son, received from Earl Hugh, t. Rufus, Over Lostock, Cheshire (Ormerod, iii. 82). His son Robert had, c. 1153, a grant of Budworth, with the office of forester or grand-huntsman

of Delamere Forest (Ormerod, ii. 115), from Earl Hugh Kevelioc. Robert Grosvenor 1178 witnessed a charter of John, Constable of Chester, for Stanlaw Abbey (Mon. i. 897). Ralph, his son, t. John (Ormerod, iii. 87), was ancestor of the Grosvenors of Cheshire. In the reign of Richard II., Lord Scrope objected to their use of their paternal arms, as his own ancestors had used the same, at which time it was proved that the G.s had borne their arms from the remotest ages; but the influence of Scrope obtained a decision depriving this family of their original arms. The Marquises of Westminster, Earls of Wilton, and Lords Ebury descend from this house.

HAZURE, A GARB OR

Grosvenor Arms.



*[Grosvenor, Sir Robert le, 1389—bore, azure, a garb or, on the determination of the Scrope and Grosvenor controversy.—Shirley.] F.

A long booklet about the Scropes vs. Grosvenor trial, which lasted in court intermittently for five years, Sir Robert lost his right to bear the family arms of many centuries standing, though his witnesses proved his family came with the Conqueror! and was old before that.

The newer Yorkshireman Scrope, was one of the most powerful men in England at the time. He claimed "azure, on a bend or."

Domesday Book shows several localities in Staffordshire in possession of Roger la Venatour in 1086 AD. The name means "the hunter."

Below: from Burke's Peerages

Right: from The Commoners

SIR THOMAS LE GROSVENOR, Lord of Hulme, m. a daughter of Sir William Peshant, knt. and had three sons, viz.

I. ROBERT, Lord of Hulme, who m. a daughter of Sir Jeffrey de Chidall, and left six daughters.

II. RALPH, who m. Joan, daughter of John Eaton, esq. of Eaton, and founded the family of GROSVENOR of EATON, now represented by ROBERT, MARQUIS OF WESTMINSTER.

III. THOMAS.

The third son, THOMAS GROSVENOR, espoused a daughter of Richard Peshall, esq. of Chetwyne, and had a son.

RANDOLPH GROSVENOR, whose son, by a daughter of Randolph Mainwaring, esq. of Caringham. RANDOLPH GROSVENOR, esq. of Bellaport, m. Anne, daughter of William Charlton, esq. of Appley, and had two sons, viz.

I. THOMAS, of Bellaport and Brand, who m. Margery, daughter of John Contes, esq. of Woodcote, and had issue.

William, who m. Anne, daughter of William Haywood, of Stoney Low, in Staffordshire, and left a son, William, who d. s. p.

Richard, who m. Ursula, daughter of Francis Charlton, esq. of Appley, and left a son, William, whose issue were living in 1640.

II. HENRY.

The second son,

HENRY GROSVENOR, esq. m. a daughter of Sir William Greaves, knt. of Burton, and was grandfather of

* Family of Grosvenor.

Mrs. Ryland's descent from the Grosvenor family is thus traced:

Gilbert le Grosvenor.

Robert le Grosvenor.

Henry le Grosvenor.

Ralph le Grosvenor.

Ralph le Grosvenor.

Richard le Grosvenor, m. Penna, daughter of William Mowberley.

Sir Robert le Grosvenor, Lord of Hulme, m. the daughter of Maynwaring de Pever.

Ralph le Grosvenor.

Sir Robert le Grosvenor. He defended his coat of arms against Richard Lord Scrope. He m. the daughter of Sir Robert Pulford, knt.

Sir Thomas le Grosvenor, Lord of Hulme, m. one of the co-heirs of Sir William Peshant, and had issue.

I. Robert, Lord of Hulme, who died without male issue.

II. Ralph, who m. Joan, sole daughter and heir of John Eaton, of Eaton. From this Ralph descends the Marquis of Westminster.

III. Thomas, who carried on the line with which we have now to do.

This THOMAS GROSVENOR, m. Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Richard Pershall, and had a son.

RANDOLPH GROSVENOR, of Bellaport, who m. a daughter of Randolph Mainwaring, and had

RANDOLPH GROSVENOR, of Bellaport, who m. Anne, daughter of William Charlton, by whom he had,

I. THOMAS, of Bellaport and Brand, who m. and had issue.

PESHALL of Horsley (from Extinct & Dormant Peerages pgs 406-7
& Visitations of Staffordshire 1614 & 1663-4)

Arms: Peshall - Argent, a cross formee flory sable, a canton gules charged with a wolf's head erased of the field
Chetwynd - Argent, two bars gemelles sable, over all a bend gules
Malpas - Gules, a chevron between three pheons argent
Praers - Vert, on an escutcheon argent charged with scythe sable, an orle of bucks' heads cabossed or

1. Sir Richard de Peshall, knight, m. Alice Swinnerton, dau of John Swinnerton ⁵⁴ H III) (1271)
2. Sir Richard de Peshall was a knight and person of great power in Staffordshire, having been high sheriff of great power temp 7 Edw. III (1334). He m. Margaret, daughter and heiress of Hugh, lord of Knighton. (Knighton is a village in Stafford near Ecclesfield.)
3. Sir Adam de Peshall, Sheriff in 15 Edw III (1342) grew rich by marrying two heiresses, Weston Lizard by the ~~last~~ ^{first}. He m. (1) Agnes, Agnes, D&H of John de Caverswell of Bishops Offey. (Caverswell, from which the name comes, is a town in Staffordsh.)
4. Sir Richard de Peshall living 17 E III (1344) m. Johanna d&h of Richard Chetwynd of Chetwynd. (the surname is from a place in Staffordsh.)
5. Sir Thomas Peshall (living temp 4 Richard III - 1381) m. Philippa ()
6. Richard Peshall m. Margareta d&h of Hugh Malpas of Checkley and his wife, () dau of Adam de Praers & Helen dau of Richard Blackenhall of Blackhall, Cheshire. (MALPAS)
7. Isabella Peshall m. Thomas Grosvenor

For next generation, go to GROSVENOR.

Re: Symonds

This article from The Genealogist about descent from Joan de Harley shows how easy it is to get confused and blunder when searching for ancient ancestors. We are not even close enough to finding our Symonds ancient ancestry to make such close searches, and we do not descend from this particular lady.

However, this Joan's grand-daughter married Hamo (or Hammond?) Peshall whose father or uncle may very well be a Symonds ancestor through the Grosvenours.

The last few pages of this article depict in a striking way, what a dangerous world these Peshalls lived in, where might made right and feuds were rife wherein each party might hire 300 men to stake out highways for the purpose of assassination on the way back from London.

Living where they did in Shropshire/Staffordshire in the 1300's and 1400's, our Symonds were in the thick of it, even if they did not join in. You will note that some of them still spoke Norman French instead of English at times.

These place-names have also changed--some spellings have changed & others are no longer on maps. It is a worthwhile lesson in sociology, if nothing else, to read this and learn what our ancestors lived through in those days!

Norma

ANOTHER LOOK AT JOAN DE HARLEY:
WILL HER REAL DESCENDANTS PLEASE RISE?

Paul C. Reed

A royal descent through Joan de Harley has long been claimed by descendants of Alice (Freeman) Tomson, Grace (Chetwode) Bulkeley,¹ (Rev.) William Sargent and (Rev.) John Oxenbridge, all settlers in New England, John Coke and the Throckmortons of Virginia, the Butlers of Maryland and Virginia, and others. An article by John G. Hunt and Henry Young published in the first issue of this journal² showed this purported descent, based mainly on interpretation of an early charter, to be unproven and unlikely. The authors passed over any question of "improbable chronology", preferring instead to analyze in great detail the relevant charter. They demonstrated that there were two Harley families, one in co. Salop and the other in co. Worcester. The charter was shown to relate to the family of co. Worcester, leaving nothing to connect the Harleys of this county to the Corbets of Moreton Corbet. In his summary of the argument, Walter Lee Sheppard stated:³

Due to the difficulty of anchoring the individuals firmly into their exact time frames, and due to the scarcity of related contemporary records, it was impossible either to prove or to disprove completely the descent as offered by Col. Throckmorton...

This is not the case. Sufficient contemporary evidence does exist to sever the purported connection both on chronological and on factual grounds. While the article by Hunt and Young demonstrates that there is no proof that the Besford family of co. Worcester married into the Harley family of co. Salop, their reasoning may not be clear to all readers. As the line has been published incorrectly in many places⁴ and continues to appear without change,⁵ and as it has been established that the immigrant to New England Robert Abell descends both from the Shropshire Harleys and from the Corbets of Moreton Corbet,⁶ a new examination of this family is warranted in order to lay to rest any lagging doubts that the Besford-Harley connection is completely false and also to provide further information concerning the ancestry of Robert Abell and other colonial American immigrants.⁷ The alleged Throckmorton descent from Corbet (as modified by A. E. Corbet⁸) is:

(Sir) Robert Corbet of Moreton Corbet, Kt. = Elizabeth
born 25 December 1304 le Strange

Robert de Harley = Joan Corbet⁹

John de Besford = Joan de Harley

Joan (1) = Alexander de Besford = (2) Beatrice

Thomas Throckmorton = Agnes de Besford

Says Abell had other royal lineage
besides this. (Abells of Roxbury MA
www.Avonillinnors)

Symonds

Avonill Ancestors

Peshall

taken in 1623 says that he had by Joan one son, Roger, who died without issue.⁵¹

In 1400 Joan had her estates settled upon herself for life, with reversion to her granddaughter Elizabeth and the latter's husband Henry de Grendon, apparently excluding John Darras and any issue by him.⁸¹ Henry and Elizabeth acted in the same year to recover the manors of Brampton and Buckton from Brian de Harley, perhaps induced by Joan's action. John Darras, who seems to have supported the failed cause of Owen Glyn Dwr, had "lately hanged himself at Neen-ton with a noose" shortly before 30 March 1408, when an inquiry was ordered into his goods and forfeiture.⁸² On 24 May 1408 a writ issued to determine what lands he held in co. Salop by knight service of Edmund, son and heir of Roger Earl of March, who was then a ward of the Crown.⁸³ After her second husband's demise, Joan resumed her first husband's surname; as widow of Robert de Harley she bore "six cross crosslets 3, 2 & 1 fitchee... a chief indented" in 1411.³⁵ She may have been living as late as 1419, when "Joan Harley" of co. Salop held a debt of £10 from John Parker, parson of the church of Berford, co. Warwick.⁸⁴

There remains for consideration Roger, illegitimate son of Joan (Corbet) de Harley. Joan was styled lady of Willeleye in 1380/1 and 1394/5.⁸⁵ In 4 Richard II [1380/1] Johanna de Harley, lady of Willeleye, granted all of her domain in Hatton to "Roger de Ylefeld my son".⁴⁸ In 1400 Joan granted the manors of Wilderthorpe and Hatton to "Roger de Williley son of Johan de Harley" and his wife Catherine [de Lutley]⁸⁶ in tail, remainder to John Daras and Joan his wife for life, remainder in tail to Henry Grendon and his wife Elizabeth, "daughter of Hamon de Peshale".⁸⁷ In 1406 Roger de Williley held the manors of Harley, Grettynton and Kenley by Joan's gift.⁸⁸

On 15 November 1406 John "de Arras" [Daras] and Roger de Williley were pardoned for trespass in acquiring a fourth part of a carucate of land in Worfeld and a moiety of the office of Forester of Morff (held in chief) and entering therein without license.⁸⁹ Roger Wyleley, Esq. was granted the office of keeper of the forest of Morff and Shirlet, co. Salop for life on 13 February 1413.⁹⁰ Joan and her son Roger were brought in suit against Richard and Elizabeth (Peshale) Lacon in 1409 concerning lands in Bold and Cherlcot.⁴⁹ Joan "who had been wife of Robert de Harley" was enfeofed by feoffees of "her son Roger de Williley" of lands in Wilderthorpe.⁹¹ The remainder included references to John and Thomas, two sons of Roger and Katherine de Williley. At the same time, Roger and Katherine were enfeofed of the manor of Hatton:⁴⁹

I, Johanna who have been wife of Robert de Harley have ordained Roger Williley my son, my attorney...

to give seisin of Hatton to John de Knightly and other feoffees in 1411/2 and for the manor of Hatton and the ham-

let of Wilderthorpe in 1412/3.⁴⁹ Joan de Harley, lady of Wyleley, granted to her son Roger de Willeley and Katherine his wife the manors of Wilderthorpe and Hatton on 20 June 1417.⁴⁴ Roger Wyleley, Esq. was mentioned on 22 May 1420,⁹² but the office of keeper of the forest of Morff and Shirlet was granted to John Bruyn on 18 May 1423,⁹³ probably after Roger's death.

Children of Robert and Joan (Corbet) de Harley:

3 i. Alesia (Alice), b. c.1359.

5. ALESIA (ALICE) DE HARLEY, born about 1359, dead by Easter term 12 Richard II [1389] when her husband and his second wife were sued,⁹⁴ married in or by 1380⁷² as first wife HAMO DE PESHAL, probably born about 1340, dead by 1399,⁹⁵ a younger son of (Sir) Adam de Peshall of Horsley and Bishops Offley, co. Stafford.⁹⁶

Peshall

The husband of Alesia grew to manhood in an atmosphere of violence and feud. His father was ordered arrested and brought in dead or alive by the King as

a common malefactor, notoriously accused of various homicides and other felonies... After being followed from place to place he was at length taken at Caynton in Shropshire and beheaded...

In 1346.⁹⁷ His elder brother (Sir) Richard de Peshall was Sheriff of Shropshire and Staffordshire and M.P., while his younger half-brother, (Sir) Adam de Peshall, also M.P. and Sheriff of Staffordshire, founded the Peshall family of Weston-under-Lizard.⁹⁸ Adam's wife Elizabeth was a sister of the wife of (Sir) Hugh de Wrottesley, with whom Adam became embroiled in lengthy litigation. In Easter term 48 Edward III [1374] this lawsuit was commenced; Adam managed to delay its course until the death of the King, which annulled the prior writs and forced the plaintiff to begin the suit anew. (Sir) Hugh's enmity developed into a carefully laid plot to murder (Sir) Adam. As the latter was returning from attendance at the new King's coronation in London (which had taken place 16 July 1377), his enemy

had made various ambushes of men armed and harnessed on the high roads between London and the country, and he had himself laid in wait with many armed men at a place called Foxhunt Ledegate, in the county of Worcester, with a view of killing and murdering the said Adam and his people.

Hamo was among his brother's men on this occasion and he participated in their retaliation against the Wrottesleys for this and other offenses:

...by reason of the enmity between them, the men of the said Adam had beaten his [Sir Hugh's] men and tenants at the Fair of Albrighton on the last day of St. Thomas [21 December 1377]... Haminet, the brother of Adam, armed and arrayed as for war, with others of his household and tenants to the number of sixty, arrayed and armed, went to Albrighton and drove the men of Sir Hugh out of the county of Salop as far as

71. The text of the decree or declaration of separation has not been preserved. Morris, p. 267, cites an abstract of the plea of Elizabeth Grendon and its result, which reads, in pertinent part, as follows: *Eadem Johe Harley per officium Diocesis Middelsex occasione frigiditatis sive impotencie naturalis Roberti mariti sui coeund sive carnaliter cognoscend mota ab eod Robto separata fuit. Et nunc ex supplicatione pfae Eliz Grendon ea separatu cassatur & annullatur & matrimoniae inter eos solidu et firmu declaratur per Instrumentu publicum datu A^o D^o 1400.* [The said Joan Harley had been separated from the said Robert by the act of an official of the Diocese of Middlesex on account of the coldness or natural inability of Robert her husband to mate with her or to know her carnally. And now by virtue of the prayer of the said Elizabeth Grendon her separation is quashed and annulled and the marriage between them declared to be in full force and effect by a public instrument dated A.D. 1400.] Whether or not Robert and Joan ever lived apart by virtue of a separation decree is not known, nor is the purpose of Elizabeth's application itself known to us.

72. Collins, p. 193, followed by Brydges 4:51, citing "Ex Collect. R. Glover, Somers, Feical."

73. References continued to be made to the heirs of Robert. For example, the inquisitions post mortem of Thomas, Earl of Stafford, taken Tuesday after St. Martin, 16 Richard II [12 November 1392] and of his brother William, taken on Thursday after the Purification, 22 Richard II [7 February 1398/9], both state that the advowsons of Worthyn, Wentenore and Shelve belonged one vacancy out of four to the Heirs of Robert de Harley. CIPM 17:97, 478, Nos. 215, 1260.

74. CPR 1388-92, p. 340.

75. VCH Salop 8:88, citing Barnard MSS., Raby Castle, box 1, bundle 29, no. 23.

76. Morris, p. 278.

77. MP, pp. 245, 267; CCR 1402-05, p. 520.

78. L&L, p. 188; CFR 1399-1405, p. 144.

79. CCR 1399-1402, p. 555.

80. Eyton 6:237.

81. VCH Salop 8:88, citing S.R.O. 1224 uncat., deed 1400; cf. S.P.L. Deeds 1715. The inquisition taken upon the forfeiture of Richard, Earl of Arundel in 1397 [C/145/263 (8-11)] stated that "Gretyndon dimid' feod' per Joh'em Darres". Caley and Bayley, *supra* note 56, 3:223, no. 1 hiki.

82. CPR 1405-08, p. 485.

83. CFR 1405-13, p. 120. As John Daras held no land in chief, no inquisition post mortem was taken on his own account.

84. CPR 1416-22, p. 225.

85. Morris, p. 266.

86. Katherine de Lutley was daughter and coheir of John de Lutley by his wife Elizabeth, daughter and an eventual heir of (Sir) William de Shreshull (Jr.). Katherine was of full age in 1400, in which year her

uncle (Sir) William Shreshull [III], died without heirs. CIPM 18:2 Nos. 50-52; see WSAS 16:73 (1895), (n.s.) 3:219, 228 (1900), and (3rd ser.) [1917] pp. 141-42. Some account of the Lutleys is found in TSANHS (4th ser.) 6:240-43 (1916/17). Another heir, (Sir) Richard Harcourt, had married Katherine's sister Margaret, as stated in the inquisition. See also "Pedigrees from the Plea Rolls", *The Gen* (n.s.) 16:37 (1899), 18:191 (1901). Roger and Katherine (Lutley) Wylyly and William and Joan (Peshale) Lee, Katherine's niece, confirmed their interests in the manor of Shreshull to Richard Harcourt in 1406. VCH Stafford 5:175. The manor of Patshull was granted by William and Joan (Peshale) Lee to Roger Wylyly for life in 13 Henry IV [1411/2]; WSAS 11:208, 215-16, 220 (1890). But by 1426 it was held for life by Richard Peshale of Patshull, brother of Joan's father Robert de Peshale; Richard Peshale's daughter Joyce married John Chetwynd who, on 28 June 1438, became steward of the forest of Morf and Shirlet, co. Salop, an office formerly held by Roger Wylely [CPR 1436-41, p. 190]. VCH Stafford 20:164; see also CFR 1399-1405, pp. 76-77. Stebbing Shaw, *The History... of Staffordshire...*, 2 (London, 1801), pp. 275-76 and 281-82, erroneously calls John de Lutley "John de Knightley".

87. Morris, p. 266, citing Jones's Evidences.

88. Morris, p. 266, citing Lacon Evidences, 3 November 8 Henry IV [1406].

89. CPR 1405-08, p. 271. John Darras "the king's esquire" was keeper of the forest of Morffe by 27 February 1407; *id.*, p. 296. But Richard Parlor received a pardon for acquiring for life the same land and moiety from John de Arras and Roger de Wileley on 5 April 1408. *Id.*, p. 426.

90. CPR 1408-13, p. 465. An *inspeximus* and confirmation of the grant issued 12 June 1413. CPR 1413-16, p. 22.

91. Morris, p. 266, citing Jones's Evidences.

92. CCR 1419-22, p. 73.

93. CPR 1422-29, p. 96.

94. TSANHS (2nd Ser.) 4:15-16 (1892).

95. Parker, p. 61. Madan states that she was called "Thomasina de Gresley" in 1398 and 1403; Madan, p. 51. No inquisition post mortem is found for him.

96. Rev. F. Parker, "Chetwynd's History of Pirehill Hundred, with Notes", WSAS [1914] pp. 1-184, chart at p. 45; (Rev.) Ernest R. O. Bridgeman and Charles G. O. Bridgeman, "History of the manor and parish of Weston-under-Lizard...", WSAS (n.s.) 2 (1899), chart facing p. 98.

97. *Id.*, p. 101.

98. Josiah C. Wedgwood, "Staffordshire Parliamentary History from the earliest times to the present day", WSAS (3rd ser.) [1917] 1:119-20, 134-35. Adam appears to be son and heir of Joan de Eyton, a second wife of (Sir) Adam.

99. Bridgeman and Bridgeman, *supra* note 96, pp. 86-89; George Wrottesley, "A History of the Family of Wrottesley of Wrottesley, co. Stafford", WSAS (n.s.) 6:146-49 (II, 1903).

Lacon* of Lacon, Willey, Thongland, etc.

Harl. 1396, fo. 201. Harl. 1241, fo. 11. Harl. 615, ff. 245, 246, 257^b.
S., ff. 176^a—180^b.

ARMS: Harl. 1396.—Quarterly of twenty-three: 1, Quarterly per fesse indented ermine and azure, LACON; 2, Argent, a lion rampant quevée fourchée sable, STANLOWE, SANTLOW [STANLAWET]; 3, Argent, a fesse engrailed sable between three mullets gules, COTTON, COETON; 4, Argent, on a fesse gules three plates, TITTLE; 5, Argent, three crescents sable, a canton gules, HEYTON; 6, Argent, a fesse between three mullets pierced azure, PASLOWE; 7, Argent, a cross fleury sable [on a canton gules a wolf's head erased argent], PESHALL; 8, Or, a bend cottised sable, HARLEY; 9, Or, on a chief sable three taws of the first, PRESTOPE; 10, Sable, three mullets of six points pierced argent, PYULDEN, PULISDON [PULESTON]; 11, Or, fretty azure, a canton gules, WILLEY; 12, Argent, on a bend sable three escallops of the field, REMLEIGH, KENLEY [sic]; 13, Or, two lions passant gules, BRAMPTON; 14, Or, two lions passant guardant gules, ST. VALOREY; 15, Barry of six vairée ermine and azure, and gules, BRUSE; 16, Gules, two bends, the upper one or, the other argent, MYLO; 17, Gules, five fusils in fesse or, NEWMARCH; 18, Gules, a bend fusilly or, MARSHALL; 19, Or, six lions rampant sable [two, two, and two], STRONGBOW; 20, Sable, three garbs argent—banded gules in Shrewsbury MS.—MACMOROUGH; 21, Azure, three round buckles or, REMEVILL; 22, Or, two ravens sable, CORBETT of CAUS; 23, Or, on a chief indented azure three annulets of the first [argent?], HEREFORD.

CREST.—A hawk close proper, beaked and belled or.

MOTTO.—CONOY VOUS MESME.

ARMS: Harl. 615.—Quarterly of six: 1 and 6, Quarterly per fesse indented ermine and azure; 2, Argent, a cross engrailed humettée sable; 3, Argent, a bend cottised sable [HARLEY?]; 4, Azure, three oval buckles or [REMEVILL]; 5, Argent, three chevronels gules, within a bordure engrailed sable.

Robertus Lacon de Lacon in co. Salop miles. . . .

Arms: Quarterly per fesse indented ermine and azure.

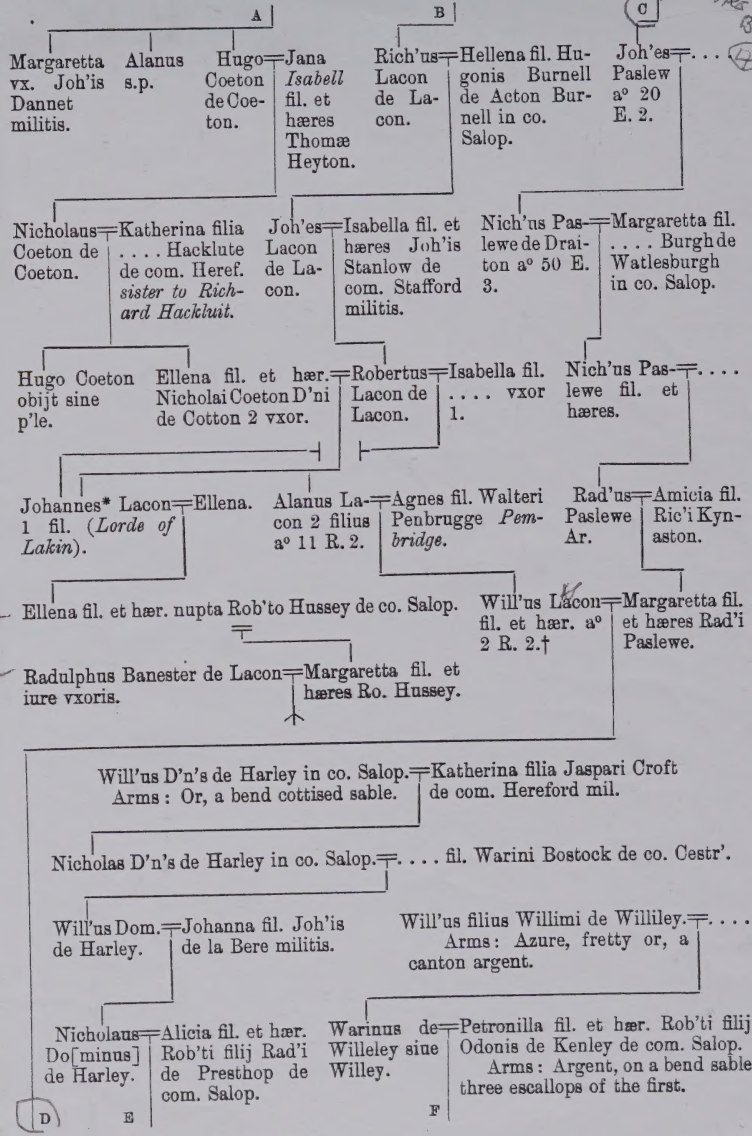
Richardus Lacon . . . fil. et hæres. Hamo Paslew de Drayton Paslew in . . . com. Buckingha'.

[Arms: Argent, a fesse between three mullets pierced azure.]

Hugo Coeton Cotton = Elizabetha de Coeton in co. Salop miles. [Arms: Argent, a fesse engrailed sable between three mullets gules.]
Henricus 2. Ricardus 3. Matilda fil. Ph'i Boterell de Aston Boterell in co. Salop.
Rad'us = Lucia. 2

Hugo Coeton miles Rhodard'. Will'us Coeton Decanus Wigornia. Alannus de Coeton. Matildis Acton filia Rogeri. Will'us = Elizabetha fil. . . . St Owen. Joh'es = Margareta. 3

* "Lakin" in Harl. 615.



* Harl. 615 makes him a son of Robert by Isabella.

† Omitted in Harl. 615.

Rival Pretensions.

"Of honourable reckoning are you both ;
And pity 'tis you liv'd at odds so long."

A HISTORY of the feuds of great Houses would fill volumes. Questions of chieftainship, quarrels of rival clans, cases of disputed rights, and contentions for precedence are fertile sources of curious incidents and curious information. A few instances will not fatigue the reader, and will illustrate to some extent the manners of the times.

Scrope and Grosbenor.



OWARDS the close of the fourteenth century there arose a memorable controversy between the two great houses of Scrope of Yorkshire, and Grosvenor of Cheshire. The point in dispute—the right to bear a certain coat of arms—was one of much importance in those mediæval times, and the litigation lasted nearly for five years, from the 17th of August, 1385, to the 27th of May, 1390.

The Court before which it was tried was the High Court of Chivalry, and the judges were those dignified officers of State, the Lord High Constable Thomas of Woodstock, Duke of Gloucester, youngest son of Edward III., and the Earl Marshal, Thomas de Mowbray Earl of Nottingham. Kings, Warriors, Mitred Abbots, Bishops, Statesmen and Poets appear on the scene. Four hundred witnesses, not one of lesser degree than "a gentleman having knowledge of arms," are called on to give evidence, and men that we love to read of such as John of Gaunt, Geoffrey Chaucer, Owen Glendower, and Hotspur, are, as it were, realized, and seen to speak to us with their own lips.

The question before the Court was simply the right to bear the particular coat of arms, "*Az. a bend or.*"

One can easily imagine how picturesquely Sir Walter Scott would have described the circumstances of the trial, with what life-like animation, in rivalry of Froissart, he would have reproduced the whole judicial drama, and how graphically he would have placed before us the actors in it. But even the unadorned narrative has in itself so much to interest, such freshness of detail and reflects so clearly the men and manners of a far distant age, that we peruse it, like the report of some curious contemporary investigation.

To preface the trial, it may be well to introduce the litigants :—

The PLAINTIFF was SIR RICHARD LE SCROPE of Bolton, one of the most illustrious characters of his time, whether regarded as soldier, statesman, or judge. The friend and comrade of the Black Prince, he gained fame at Cressy and Najarra, and in almost every great

battle fought by his gallant leader. He enjoyed the especial regard of John of Gaunt, and was the favourite of the Sovereigns under whom he served. He filled the office of Lord High Treasurer, *temp.* Edward III., and was twice Lord Chancellor under Richard II. He had a summons to Parliament as a baron, and his eldest son, Sir William le Scrope, was made Earl of Wilts., and King of the Isle of Man, and held such broad lands and potent sway that Shakespere says—

"The Earl of Wilts hath the realm in farm."

Such was the great noble against whom the DEPENDANT, SIR ROBERT GROSVENOR, a Cheshire knight, boldly entered the lists, to do battle for the coat of arms, which he and his ancestors had borne on their banners in many a tented field. Sir Robert was the chief of a family then little known out of its own county, but he was of knightly descent, and could show a pedigree coeval with the Norman Conquest.

It was, as I have already stated, on the 17th of August, 1885, that the controversy began. On that day proclamation was made throughout the English army, then in Scotland, requiring all persons who had any question to submit to the cognizance of the Lord High Constable, to appear at Newcastle-on-Tyne, within three days from the date thereof. Consequently, on the 20th of August, when the Court of the High Constable sat in that town (the Lord FitzWalter acting as lieutenant for the Constable), Sir Richard le Scrope alleged that Sir Robert Grosvenor, then and there personally present, had borne the Scrope arms, contrary to law. Sir Robert Grosvenor rejoined that the Coat of Arms he carried was his own proper bearing, and that he was ready to defend his right. There were several preliminary hearings to adjust details; but at length the trial was opened in due form, at the Whitehall, in Westminster, on the 24th of November.

The Lord High Constable presided in person, and the Earl Marshal was represented by his lieutenant, Sir John de Multon. Divers learned counsel, and many great lords were present, and the two litigants appeared in person. Immediately after the Constable had taken his seat, Sir Richard le Scrope asserted orally what he had affirmed at Newcastle, that the coat AZURE A BEND OR, did of right, and by the usage of arms, belong to him; and Sir Robert Grosvenor maintained, with equal earnestness, that these were his Arms, and that he was prepared to uphold his title thereto. Many adjournments followed. At length, on the 16th of May, 1386, the Constable sitting in Court with divers assessors, and Sir John de Multon acting again for the Earl Marshal, it was ordered peremptorily that there should be adduced by the contending parties, on the 26th of January following, proof derived from muniments, chronicles, toms

Symonds

Atwill and

GROSS VALUE

paintings, glass windows, vestments, &c., and by the evidence of abbots, priors and others of Holy Church, and also by the testimony of lords, knights and esquires of honour, and of gentlemen "having knowledge of arms." The judges at the same time appointed commissioners to examine witnesses in the various counties in England, and directed them to make their returns by the day appointed. The princes and earls were to answer "on their knightly honour," those of lesser rank "on their oath." The interrogatories put to the deponents on the side of Scrope were to this effect: "Do the arms 'Azure with a bend or' belong, or ought they of right to belong, to Sir Richard Scrope? Have you heard, or can you from your own knowledge state, that the ancestors of Sir Richard have used the said arms; and by what title or authority? Can you name the first ancestor of the plaintiff who bore the coat? And, finally, are you of kin or blood of Sir Richard?"

In obedience to the Court's direction, the various commissioners entered upon the task assigned them; several of them examined the Abbeys of Nottley, Whitby, Abbotsbury, and various others; and three of the commissioners, Lord FitzWalter, Sir John Marmyon and Sir John Kentwode, sat in the Monastery of the Carmelite Friars at Plymouth, and there took the evidence of John of Gaunt. The deposition of that eminent personage will interest every one:

"John, by the grace of God, King of Castile and Leon, Duke of Lancaster, being prayed, and according to the law of Arms required, by the proctor of the Richard le Scrope, to testify the truth between the said Sir Richard and Sir Robert Grosvenor in a controversy between them concerning the arms 'Azure, a bend, or,' do verily testify, that at the time when We were armed in battles and other journeys in divers countries, We have seen and known that the said Sir Richard hath borne his arms 'Azure, a bend or,' and that many of his name and lineage have borne the same arms on banner, pennon, and coat armour, and that We have heard from many noble and valiant men, since deceased, that the said arms were of right the arms of his ancestors and himself at the time of the Conquest and since. And, moreover, We say and testify, that at the last expedition in France of our most dread Lord and father, on whom God have mercy, a controversy arose concerning the said arms between Sir Richard le Scrope aforesaid, and one called Carminow of Cornwall, which Carminow challenged those arms of the said Sir Richard, the which dispute was referred to six knights, now as I think dead, who upon true evidence found the said Carminow to be descended of a lineage armed 'Azure a bend or' since the time of King Arthur; and they found that the said Sir Richard was descended of a right line of ancestry armed with the said arms,

'Azure a bend or,' since the time of King William the Conqueror; and so it was adjudged that they might both bear the arms entire. But We have not seen or heard that the said Sir Robert, or any of his name bore the said arms before the last expedition in Scotland with our Lord the King."

Depositions of lords and knights, abbots, and priors followed, and then came one of the most remarkable witnesses of all, Geoffrey Chaucer, the Homer of English poetry:—

"What say you, Geoffrey Chaucer? does the coat, 'Azure a bend or,' belong of right to Sir Richard le Scrope?"

"Yes," replies Chaucer. "I saw him so armed in France, before the town of Retters; and I saw Sir Henry Scrope armed with the same arms, with a white label, and with banner; and I further depose that the said Sir Richard was armed in the entire arms during the whole expedition, until I myself was taken."

Being asked how he knew that the arms appertained to Sir Richard? he replied:—"That he had heard old knights and esquires say that they had had continual possession of the said arms; and that he had seen them displayed on banners, glass, paintings, and vestments, and commonly called the arms of Scrope." Being further pressed as to whether he had ever heard of any interruption or challenge made by Sir Robert Grosvenor or his ancestors? he said: "No; but that he was once in Friday Street, London, and hanging through the street, he observed a new sign hanging out with these arms thereon, and inquired, 'What inn that was that had hung out these arms of Scrope?' and one answered him, saying, 'They are not hung out, sir, for the arms of Scrope, nor painted there for those arms; but they are painted and put there by a knight of the county of Chester, called Sir Robert Grosvenor,' and that was the first time that he had ever heard speak of Sir Robert Grosvenor or his ancestors, or of any one bearing the name of Grosvenor."

To reproduce the testimony of the various other deponents for Scrope would be too lengthy and tedious. In addition to those already mentioned, there were examined Edmund of Langley, Duke of York, uncle of the king, Sir John Holand, afterwards Duke of Exeter, the king's half-brother, the Earls of Derby, Arundel, and Northumberland, the Lords Poynings, Basset, Clifford, Dacre, D'Arcy, Grey of Ruthven, and Scales, besides many abbots, knights, esquires, and gentlemen. The most prominent figure is that of Harry Percy, Hotspur, "the all-bepraised knight." But there is one deposition, too remarkable to be altogether omitted:—

"John Thirlewalle, of the age of fifty-four, armed thirty-two years and more, being asked whether the arms 'Azure a bend or,' belonged to Sir Richard

Scrope? said, Certainly, and that he would well prove it by evidence; for the grandfather of the said Sir Richard, who was named William le Scrope, was made a knight at Falkirk, in Scotland, under the banner of the good King Edward with the Longshanks, as his (the deponent's) father told and showed him before his death; for his father was through old age bed-ridden, and could not walk for some time before his decease; and whilst he so lay, he heard some one say that people said that the father of Sir Richard was no gentleman, because he was the King's Justice; and his (deponent's) father called his sons before him, of whom he the said John was the youngest of all his brethren, and said, "My sons, I hear that some say that Sir Henry Scrope is no great gentleman because he is a man of the law; but I tell you certainly, that his father was made a knight at Falkirk in these arms, Azure a bend or, and that they are descended from great and noble gentlemen; and if any one say otherwise, do ye testify that I have said so of truth, upon faith and loyalty; and if I were young I would hold and maintain my saying to the death." And his (the deponent's) father, when he died, was at the age of seven-score-and-five, and was, when he died, the oldest esquire of all the north, and had been armed during sixty-nine years, and has been dead forty-four years."

Sir Robert Grosvenor called Owen Glendower, whose residence on the Welsh borders must have made him well acquainted with Cheshire arms, and whose testimony went to prove that Grosvenor bore the arms from the time of the Conquest. There appeared besides for Grosvenor the Stanleys, the Breretons, the Davenports, the Leycesters, the Massys, the Mainwarings, the Domvilles, the Leghs, the Traffords, the Holfords, the Vernons, and a phalanx of other northern squires, who, with the *esprit de corps* for which our country gentlemen are to this day famous, stood up boldly for their neighbour. Old Sir Ralph Vernon could of his own knowledge go back to a distant time, and he gave most important evidence. In length of years, the Countess of Desmond alone may be adduced as his rival. Styled in Cheshire Collections "the old liver," he is stated to have survived to the age of one hundred and fifty, and, according to an entry of Augustine Vincent, preserved in Woodnoth's Collections, is described as "Sir Raufe Vernon, olde, who lived seven score years and ten."

"On the part of Sir Robert Grosvenor," says Ormerod, "were examined nearly all the knights and gentlemen of Cheshire and Lancashire, with several of the abbots and other clergy, all of whom deposed to the usage of the arms by the Grosvenors, and to having seen them painted on windows, standards, and monuments in twenty-four churches, chapels and monasteries in Cheshire. The family charters and deeds, with seals appendant, exhibiting the same bearing, were produced before the Court; and it was stated

on the authority of chronicles and monastic record that all the ancestors of Sir Robert Grosvenor had used the same coat from time immemorial, and more particularly that it was used by Gilbert le Grosvenor at the Conquest; by Raufe le Grosvenor, at the battle of Lincoln; by Robert le Grosvenor, in the crusade under Richard I.; by Robert le Grosvenor, in the Scotch wars under Edward II.; by another Robert at Cressy, and in other battles under Edward III.; and by the defendant, Sir Robert himself, as harbinger to Sir Thomas d'Audley, lieutenant to the Black Prince, and at Blank in Berry, at the capture of the Tower of Brose, at the siege of Rockisrion, in Poitou, in Guienne at Viers, in Normandy, at the battle of Poitiers, at the battle of Najarra in Spain, in 1367, and, lastly, at the battle of Limoges, in 1370, in the service of the Black Prince."

In point of fact, it appears from the various depositions of the famous men on either side, by the examination of tombs, by chronicles, by cathedral windows, and by the evidences of Holy Church, that the coat of arms in question had been borne by both families time out of mind, and that their pedigrees were coeval with the Conquest. It is amusing to observe how Scrope's witnesses ignore the existence of Sir Robert Grosvenor and his family, while some of Grosvenor's deponents, in retaliation, pretended that they had never heard of Sir Richard Scrope! However, Sir Thomas Percy, K.G. (afterwards Earl of Worcester), brother of the Earl of Northumberland, admits that he was aware Sir Robert Grosvenor was a gentleman of high degree; and Sir William Brereton, another Scrope witness, but a Cheshire kinsman of Grosvenor, refused, point blank, to answer any question, and had a fine of twenty pounds imposed on him.

The evidence on both sides having been closed, the Lord High Constable gave judgment on the 12th of May, 1389. He acknowledged that on the part of Sir Robert Grosvenor the strongest presumptive evidence had been adduced in support of his defence; but conceiving that Sir Richard Scrope had more fully and sufficiently proved his claim, and that Sir Robert had not, in any respect, disproved the evidence of the said Sir Richard, the Court awarded, pronounced, and declared that the entire, pure arms, "Azure a bend or," appertaining to Sir Robert Grosvenor, "within a plain bordure argent," should be assigned to Sir Robert Grosvenor. The Court also condemned the defendant in the costs of the suit.

Sir Robert, scorning to accept the arms with "a difference," at once refused to submit to the award, and in three days after appealed direct to the King. The appeal was heard, and the King's judgment given in the great chamber of Parliament, within the royal palace at Westminster. There were present with His Highness the Dukes of Guyenne and Gloucester, the

uncles; the Bishop of London, the Lords John Ro-
Raufe Nevill, and John Lovell; John Devereux, Stewar
of the Household; Thomas Percy, Vice Chamberlain
Henry Percy, his son; Matthew de Gourney, Hug
Zoouch, Bryan de Stapleton, Richard Adrebury, and Will
liam de Faryndon, knights, and others. The royal decre
bore date 27th of May, 1390, and was to the effect tha
the arms, Azure a bend or, should remain, in their sim
plicity, wholly to Sir Richard Scrope and his heirs, and
that Sir Robert Grosvenor should have no part thereof.

Thus defeated, Sir Robert gave up the "*bend*," and
took in its place a "*garb*," retaining, however, his
colours, *azure* and *gold*.

It is obvious that the Cheshire knight was not
powerful enough to withstand the influence and cha-
racter of the great warrior-statesman, his opponent.
The judges were not only Scrope's companions in arms,
but also his personal friends; and the leaning of the
Court was from the beginning altogether in his favour.

Symonds

Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds was of ancient Norman descent. Visitation of Essex calls him "of gentle birth" and gives the following early generations.

- ① Raungwelder of Moax and the Oresles ^(Orkney Islands off the NE coast of Scotland)
9th century had later descendants:
- ② Simon, Lord of St Sever (Sauveur-la-Vicente) Normandy
near Cherbourg) d. 1090 AD
- ③ Adam Fitz Simon († 1118 AD) held lands in Norfolk & Hants from
Ariston Odo (the Emperor's half brother)
- ④ Richard Fitz Simon (d. 1160) said to be a founder
of the order of the Garter - of Hants & Essex m.
Edith, dau of Richard de Penesther, Norfolk.
- ⑤ Adam Symonds of Suffolk m. Joan de Pepper of Cley by the
Sea (Cley next the sea - W. of (Peppes) Norfolk)
- ⑥ William Fitz Simon m. ——— in Legh (Stratford) ——— He received lands in
Salop from King John
- ⑦ John Symonds (in Copley, Lancashire) m. ——— dau of Sir William Cording, Knight (C. R. DENN)
(there is a Cordington in Shropshire.) (N.D. suggests this is Cordun)

Group

This is about the brother of our Judith³ (Jesse
Parker who married Nathaniel Brown, and whose^{Joh 1}
son, our Aunt Anna's John Brown migrated to
the same part of Connecticut as Jesse Ansell &
the Corbells.

Overpopulation is one reason for migration, but
we think ^{they} went when they did.

This stick was cut in 1894 only 1/2 half up,
before it was found on Parker's farm near
Hillman, Wisconsin, at Woodstock.

Symonds

Less is known so far about the Congreve family than
of ~~some of the other~~ said by Burke to have been
"one of the most eminent in Stafford, claims to have
been settled ~~at~~ at Congreve before the Conquest."
Domesday book shows a settlement at Congreve in
Staffordshire, sold of the king himself in 1086. The town
is no longer shown or listed in any place list or
atlas. Perhaps it has been swallowed up by some city.
It is obvious that the family took its name from its
manor. ^{James} Foster's Federal Codes of Arms shows their arms
(lilies to the core) ~~and~~ from Edward II () and
says they are the arms of Champion.

The one & a half hours - "Esthete" near Penbridge near a Brown road and by Barton-a-
Trent - also by Roman Road, Clay Mills, etc.

Chillington Hall is on the site of a Castle where the Giffards who came
to England with W the C lived for over 500 years.

James

James was born in 1792, the son of a poor
man, and was educated at the school of
St. John's, Cambridge. He was a very
able man, and was elected to the
chair of Natural Philosophy in 1820.
He was a very popular lecturer, and
his lectures were attended by a large
number of students. He was also a
very able writer, and his works were
very popular. He died in 1842, and
was buried in the church of St. John's.

He was a very able man, and was elected to the
chair of Natural Philosophy in 1820. He was a
very popular lecturer, and his lectures were
attended by a large number of students. He was
also a very able writer, and his works were
very popular. He died in 1842, and was
buried in the church of St. John's.

3 gen in
Nearly 6 centuries
age of
sons
back
1478
1090
+3
600
52
80

Look for the families underlined

(a couple of generations must have been omitted)

SYMONDS

13 generations in 6 centuries is not enough - some obviously are missing

The Viking Raengwelder of Moax and the Anarch Fifth Century had descendants

1. Simon, Lord of St Saviour, Normandy d. 1090. 2 sons, Robert de Reg, Vicar of Acheres &

2. Adam Fitz Simon, holder of 1 acre under Bishop Odo -

Penesthorpe Richard Fitz Simon (d. 1168) m. Elsie, da. Sir Richard de Penesthorpe

Reppes Lt. Adam Symonds of Saffield m. da. of William de Reppes, Clayby the strips - clay next to the sea, Norfolk

5. William Fitz Simon m. — in Leighton ^{Shropshire where he} died great for King John (also date)

6. John Symonds of Craft, Lancr. m. da. of Sir William Cardon, (Cardon, Norfolk)

7. Robert Symonds went into Staffordshire m. da. of Congreve of Stratton (See Congreve data) ^{Walter C?}

8. John Symonds of Stratton m. da. of Grosvender ^{File Port, Volo?} (See Grosvender data.)

9. Thomas Symonds of Stratton m. da. of Thos. Worthington, Gent.

10. John Symonds of Neapton con Selg m. Margaret, da. of Thos. Magnart

11. John Symonds, d. (1574) m. — m. (Parr, da. of Thos. Bendshaw) (d. 1597)

12. Richard Symonds (d. 1560) m. Elizabeth (d. 1618) da. of Robert Plebe of Yelcham Hall. (The Park came out of Staffordshire, a daughter of the Cheney m. Elizabeth (d. 1618) da. of Robert Plebe of Yelcham Hall.

13. Samuel Symonds - to New England 1637

10 over Norman People Maynard - N. Marmont or Marmont - Regis, John and the
 of 327 estate of the Marmonts, Normandy 1180-85.
 (not in c.o.c.) Richard Marmont England 1198. From this family the Viscount Maynard -

of Ashbury (Hants.)

Endowed of Shroton

Gift of William

Maynard

Worthington

Gift of Arms - Gift of Harper

John Harper

de Regis

Corden / Cording

Symonds

Norman People p.210 Cording. See CORDEN

Cording - Korday Symonds.

Corden - a corruption of Corda. See CORDEN

p.198 - CARDEN in some cases or English local names, also a form of Corden.

Relat, Richard, Robert, Pagener Carden or Corden were of Normandy 1100-25

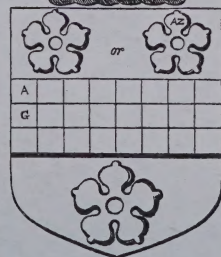
William Carden held land in Essex in 1086. In 1165 the family was settled in

Herts, Norfolk, Ayles & Lincoln; then (King) John in Bucks. In 1325 Adam Carden
 was MP for Herts. Hence the Beaverts Carden

? c.o.c. - name of church but Sir Balgon Corden (S.M. in Ashford 1880) was a judge of the
 1745 - or a chief indicted (due to) the class - consists of the fairs

Symonds

Cooke.



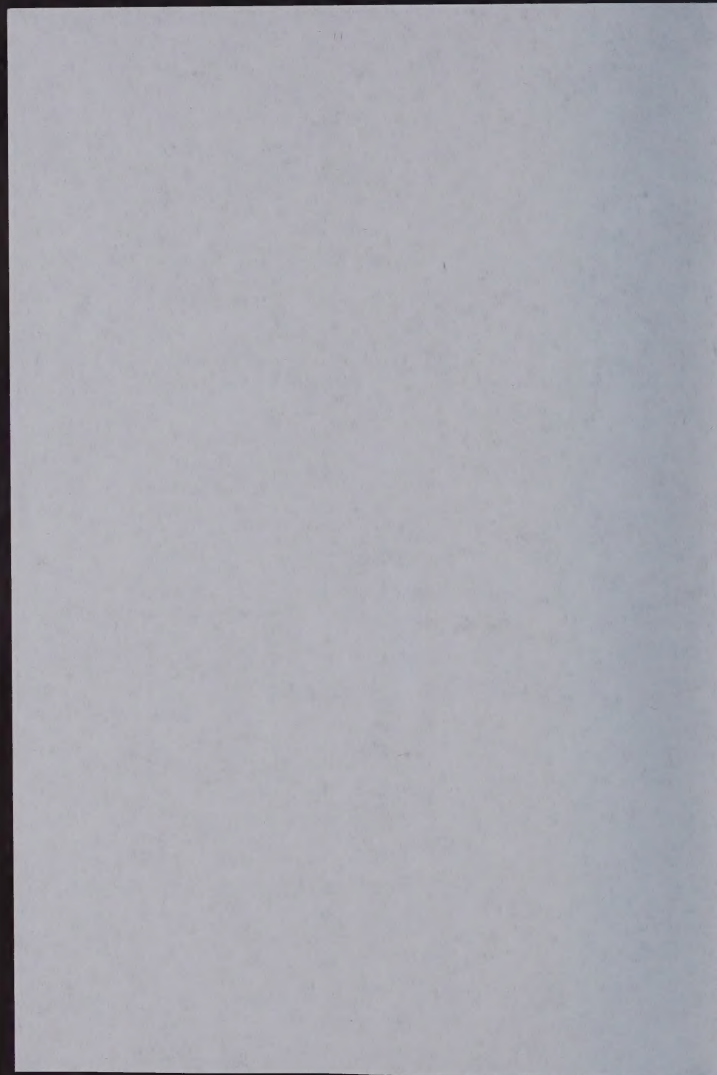
John Cooke of Colchester=
in the Countye of Essex

Robert Cooke of Huntingdon Esq. one of the Justices of peace for that Towne = Frances da. of Thomas Knowles of Bramton in com. Huntingdon

1 Henry Cooke = Bridget	2 Robert Cooke	1 Anne
M ^r of Arts & da. of	of London	—
Rector of Edward	bachelor of	2 Mary
Allhallows in Browne	law register	—
Huntingdon of Stamford	of Westminster	3 Frances
	and one of the	
	Proctors of	
	the Arches	
	living 1634	

ROB: COOKE.

12
10



(Signs) -

Ben how (Newpat G. 561)

Se - 2 string-haws endorsed in pale or,
gemished gu. betw. 2 handles of arms in fave, 3 in each of the rest,
bordered and heeded ar., bend of the third.

Cost: ~~A figure per arm, a chief of gold~~ A harpy close or,
face ppr. her head wreathed with a chaplet of
flowers gu.

Clayton Family

46

In the early years when folks started adopting surnames, these ancestors took their names from their manors, as lords of hill settlements at Thornmill and Savell Hill, the one with thorn trees, the other with some sort of shrubbery (perhaps) with some sort of savory or ~~salve~~ properties. ~~It must be emphasized that one cannot rely implicitly on visitation pedigrees, but in this case that is all we have to go on, so we will benefit on what we can.~~ *as much as we can.*

Sir William Dugdale declared that the Thornhill pedigree here is definitely accurate. Richard Thornhill because he did declare

3- Adam #12
5 12/14

or. *Crest*—Out of a ducal coronet or, a hand holding a dagger ppr.

Grosset, or **Grossett**. Ar. nine trefoils in cross vert.

Crest—Four arrows points downwards and a string bow in saltire all ppr.

Grossome. Or, a bend chequy ar. and sa.

Grosvenor. Az. a garb or. In the time of Richard II. a protracted litigation arose between Sir Robert Le Grosvenor and Sir Richard le Scrope, relative to the bearing "Az. a bend or," which both used. The dispute, known as the Scrope and Grosvenor Controversy, was decided in favour of Scrope. *Crest*—A talbot statant or. *Supporters*—On each side a talbot ramp. regard. or, gorged with a plain collar az. *Motto*—Nobilitatis, virtus, non stemma character.

Grosvenor (*Duke of Westminster*). Quarterly, 1st and 4th, az. a portcullis with chains pendent or, on a chief of the last in pale, the arms of King Edward the Confessor betw. two united roses of York and Lancaster, being the arms of the city of Westminster, granted to the duke's ancestors as a coat of augmentation; 2nd and 3rd, az. a garb or, the family arms of Grosvenor. *Crest*—A talbot statant or. *Supporters*—On each side a talbot ramp. regard. or, gorged with a plain collar az. *Motto*—Virtus non stemma.

Grosvenor (*Baron Ebury*). Az. a garb or, a mullet for diff. *Crest*—A talbot statant or. *Supporters*—On either side a talbot regard. or, gorged with a plain collar az. charged on the shoulder with a mullet of the second. *Motto*—Virtus non stemma.

Grosvenor (co. Chester). Quarterly, ar. and sa. a cross fretty counterchanged.

Grosvenor (co. Dorset). Az. a garb or. *Crest*—A horse courant, saddled and bridled all ppr.

Grosvenor (Leek, co. Stafford). Paly of ten gu. and or, a cross moline ar. betw. four crows sa.

Grosvenor (co. Stafford). Gu. a bend or, a bordure erm.

Grosvenor (Bushbury, co. Stafford. Visit. Stafford, 1533). Az. a garb or, betw. three bezants. *Crest*—A talbot statant or, collared gu.

Grosvenor (Sutton Coldfield, co. Warwick. Visit. Warwick, 1619). Same Arms and Crest.

Grosvenor, or **Grawenor** (High Grosvenor, Whitmore, Bridgnorth, and Dalicott, co. Salop, &c. The heiress of the Grosvenors, of Dalicott, SARAH, only child of WILLIAM Grosvenor, of that place, m. in 1709, EDWARD SMITH, son of JOHN SMITH, Esq., of Hilton, and was buried at Claverley in 1763, leaving issue WILLIAM SMITH, Esq., of Dalicott House, who m. ELIZABETH, dau. and co-heir of SAMUEL HURTLE, Esq., of Sutton, and d. in 1792, aged 80, leaving issue a dau. and heir, MARY, m. to ROBERT WILKES, Esq., by whom she had issue (with sons who d. issueless), a dau. and heir, ELIZABETH, m. in 1805 to THOMAS WORRELL GRAZEBROOK, Esq., of Stourton Castle, co. Stafford. Mr. GRAZEBROOK d. in 1816, and was s. by his only son, the late THOMAS WORRELL SMITH GRAZEBROOK, Esq., of Dalicott and Stourton, on whose decease *anno*, in 1846, the Dalicott and Stourton estates devolved upon his only sister, ELIZABETH, wife of GEORGE MCKENZIE KETTLE, Esq., now of Dalicott *jure uxoris*). Az. a garb or, betw. three bezants. *Crest*—A talbot pass. or, collared gu.

Grosvenor. Sa. a cross patee ar.

Grosvenor (Wade's Mill, co. Herts). Az. a garb or, betw. three bezants.

Grosvenor (co. Leicester). Az. a fesse betw. three garbs or, banded gu.

Grote (GEORGE GROTE, Esq., formerly M.P. for the city of London, eldest son of GEORGE GROTE, Esq., Sheriff of Kent in 1809). Ar. on a mount vert three pine trees ppr. a dexter side or. *Crest*—A pine tree betw. two elephants' proboscides erect ppr. *Motto*—Prolessem quam conspici.

Groat (granted to JOSEPH GROUT, Esq., of Hackney, co. Middlesex). Per chev. ar. and or, on a chev. gu. betw. two tigers' faces in chief ppr. and an eagle displ. in base sa. a boar's head erased of the second, betw. two spear heads erect of the first. *Crest*—On a mount vert a dexter arm embowed in armour ppr. garnished or, the hand grasping a javelin in bend sinister, point downwards, surmounted by two branches of oak all ppr.

Grovall. Gu. a chief dancette or.

Grove (Grove Place, co. Bucks, and London). Erm. on a chev. engr. gu. three escallops ar.

Grove (Agmondesham, co. Bucks). Same Arms.

Grove (Walbury, co. Essex). Same Arms. *Crest*—A talbot pass. sa. collared ar.

Grove (co. Wilts). Same Arms. *Crest*—A talbot pass. sa. collared ar.

Grove (Groveshot). Same Arms.

Grove (Ferrie, co. Wilts, bart.). Erm. on a chev. engr. gu. three escallops, the centre one or, the other two ar. *Crest*—A talbot statant sa. collared ar. *Motto*—Ny desux ny desoux.

Grove (Rev. CHARLES GROVE, and HENRY THOMAS GROVE, Esq., of Oldstock, near Salisbury). Erm. on a chev. engr. gu. three escallops or. *Crest*—A talbot pass. sa. collared ar. *Motto*—Ni desux ni desoux.

Grove (Nuneham-Courtenay Church. Visit. Oxon. 1566). Gu. a chev. betw. three pineapples or (another, tinctures reversed). *Crest*—A hand holding a thistle ppr.

Grove (Dunhead, co. Wilts). Erm. on a chev. engr. gu. an escallop or, betw. two others ar. *Crest*—A talbot pass. sa. ducally collared or.

Grove (Shenston Park, co. Stafford). Ar. a chev. engr. gu. betw. three steps of three eradicated and erased or, quartering, ar. on a chev. betw. three martlets gu. as many estoiles or. *Crest*—On a mount vert a dragon statant ppr. collared and chained or, charged on the shoulder with an estoile gu. *Motto*—Lauda manentem.

Grove. Ar. a sun gu.

Grove. Ar. (another, or) a bend engr. az.

Grove. Per bend vert and gu. an eagle displ. or.

Grove (Rowley Regis, co. Stafford. Monument at Aldridge). Ar. three leaves vert on a canton gu. three crescents of the field.

Grove (Fun. Ent. Ireland, 1597). Ar. on a chev. az. betw. three cocks vert as many roses or.

Grove (co. Donegal; Fun. Ent. 1681, THOMAS GROVE, of that co., buried in St. John's Church, Dublin). Ar. on a chev. engr. gu. three escallops of the field.

Grove (Dublin; Fun. Ent. 1597). Ar. on a chev. betw. three cocks az. as many roses or.

Grove (Castle Grove, co. Donegal; Reg. Ulster's Office). Erm. on a chev. gu. three escallops ar. *Crest*—A lion ramp. gu. *Motto*—Gloria finis.

Grover. Per bend gu. and or, a pale vair. *Crest*—Out of a cloud, in the sinister, an arm embowed holding a garland of flowers all ppr.

Grovyll. Gu. a chief indented or.

Groze. Gu. a cross or, in the dexter chief quarter a lion ramp. supporting an anchor cabled all gold.

Grubb (North-Mims Parsonage, co. Herts). Erm. on a chief embattled gu. three roses or. *Crest*—A griffin's head erased per pale ar. and gu. charged with a rose counterchanged.

Grubb (Horsenden, co. Bucks). Quarterly, 1st and 4th, erm. on a chief embattled gu. three roses or, for GRUBB; 2nd and 3rd, ar. two bendlets engr. sa. surmounted by a label of three points gu. for RATCLIFFE.

Grubb (Potterne, co. Wilts). Vert on a chev. ar. betw. three demi lions ramp. or, as many crosses crosslet sa. *Crest*—A lion's head az. ducally crowned or.

Grubb (co. Wilts). Same Arms. *Crest*—A lion's gamb. az. holding a rose gu. stalked and leaved vert.

Grubbam. Gu. a lion ramp. erm. vulned on the shoulder ppr. *Crest*—A cock ppr.

Grubham (Bishop's Liddard). Same Arms. *Crest*—A rose gu. stalked and leaved vert.

Gruffe (Wales). Chequy or and az. on a fesse gu. three leopards' faces of the first.

Gruffeth (Wicknor, co. Stafford, and Wigmore, co. Warwick). Gu. on a fesse indented ar. betw. six lions ramp. or, three martlets sa. *Crest*—A demi woman habited gu. face ppr. hair or.

Gruffith ap Kadwgan. Or, a lion ramp. az. langued gu.

Grull, or **Grall** (Grace Court; Reg. Ulster's Office). Quarterly, gu. and vert. a lion ramp. erm.

Grumley (Reg. Ulster's Office). Ar. on a fess cotised az. betw. three pelicans ppr. a mural crown or.

Grumley (Ireland). Vert a bend or, betw. two anchors ar. *Crest*—A vine branch ppr.

Grumstead. Ar. on a fesse betw. two bars nebule sa. a lion pass. of the field. *Crest*—An antelope's head coupé ar. attired or.

Grundie (Turgarton, co. North am). Ar. on a cross engr. betw. four lions pass. guard. gu. five martlets or. *Crest*—A demi leopard ramp. guard. sa. bezantée.

Grundy (The Oaks, co. Leicester). Same Arms. *Crest*—A demi leopard affrontée ppr. bezantée. *Motto*—In Deo solo salus.

Grungfield (Tressenfield, co. Suffolk). Or, on a chief az. three dexter gauntlets of the first. *Crest*—A gauntlet or.

Grushill. Ar. a fesse betw. six martlets sa.

Gry. Sa. a crescent betw. two mullets in pale ar.

Gry. Ar. a fesse sa. betw. three mullets ppr.

Gryce (co. Norfolk). Quarterly, or and az. on a bend sa.

three boars pass. or. *Crest*—A boar ar. du. hooped and armed or.

Grymth. Az. a boar ar. betw. ten trefoils s. second.

Grymthe. Erm. a bend gu. cotised or.

Gryffydd (Bachy-saint, co. Carnarvon, and co. Merioneth; MARGARET, only dau. and heiress of GRUFFITH, Esq., High Sheriff of Merioneth in 1541 OAKLEY, Esq.). Ar. on a chev. sa. t. pierced of the field.

Gryffyth ap Cynan (*Prince of North Wales*). Lions pass. in pale ar. armed and langued az.

Grylls (Rev. RICHARD GREYVES GRYLLE, of Hen wall. In the confirmation to WILLIAM GRAY, Viscount, of the Peerage, dated 13 June, 1511, following remarks: "I, Robert Cooke, Clerk of the Privy Seal, being required of WILLIAM GRYLLE, Esq., of Devon, Armo. to make searche in the records of myne office, for the aunciente arm belonging to the name and family, whereof he wh'upon at his requeste, I have made search and doe finde that he mai lawfully beare, as heretofore have borne, hereafter following," &c. three bendlets enhanced gu. quartering, BEE BONATHLACK, TREVELYON, TREVANION, GLYBORN, &c. *Crest*—A porcupine pass. ar. agminis unius habet.

Grylls (Tavistock, co. Devon. Visit. 1620). A. enhanced or.

Gryme (Athingham, co. Norfolk). Az. thr. or.

Gryme (Reg. Ulster's Office). Same Arms.

Gryme. Ar. three pilgrims' staves in pale Roman fasces ppr.

Gryme. Az. five crosses patee or.

Gryme. Ar. on a cross az. five crescents of the chief of the second three bezants.

Grymer. Vert three eagles displ. or.

Grymes, or **Grymelles**. Or, on a cross of six points pilled of the field.

Grymes (Sir GEORGE GRAYES, knighted at Dr. Sir George Carey, Lord Deputy, 1603). Gu. pommel and hilt or, surmounting a battle as headed of the second in saltire, on a chief of the escallops of the last. *Crest*—A griffin's head or of escallops or.

Grymesby. Ar. three chev. sa.

Grymsby, or **Grensbj** (co. Essex). Per ch. in chief three cinquefoils of the second. *Crest*—A hand holding a bow ppr.

Grymsby. Per chev. sa. and ar. in chief (another, the chev. ar.).

Grymsby. Per chev. ar. and sa. two chev. or.

Grymsby. Gu. a fesse dancette betw. six c. or.

Grys (Wakefield, co. York). Quarterly, gu. bend ar. three boars pass. sa. armed or, a bord.

Grys. Quarterly, gu. and az. on a bend ar. the sa. armed or. *Crest*—A lion sejant sa. collared.

Gryse (co. Norfolk). Quarterly, gu. and az. three boars sa.

Guales. Quarterly, or and gu. four lions charged.

Guay. Or, a lion ramp. regard. sa.

Gubbay (granted to MOSES GUBBAY, of Poon). Gu. three keys erect or, on a chief ar. a rose leaved, surmounted by a branch of palm ar. willow, saltirewise all ppr. *Crest*—A pelican a rose branch slipped ppr. and charged on a key gu. *Motto*—Probitas fons honoris.

Gubbins. Vert a fesse erm. betw. six bezant ar. charged from the elbow vested, holding a holy br.

Gube. Gu. a chev. erm. betw. three pine app.

Gubyon. Or, a lion ramp. sa. depressed b. charged with three escallops ar. *Crest*—A de sa. charged with three escallops ar.

Gubyon. Gu. a cross patee ar. over all a lal.

Gueriet. Az. an eagle displ. or, debruised by a fess.

Guerin (a noble French family, established in Isle of France, and Auvergne, from which de J. GUERIN, of Norton Fitz-Warren, near T. three lions ramp. sa. langued, armed, and or.

Guerin (Guernsey). Lozengey ar. and sa. a b.

Guest (Dowlass, co. Glamorgan, bart.). Az. betw. three swans' heads erased ppr. as many sa. *Crest*—A swan's head erased ppr. gorged or, and underneath charged with a cross m.

Simonds.

Harl. 1552, ink fo. 241^b, pencil 236^b.

ARMS.—... a dolphin naiant, embowed ..., swallowing a fish ..., a mullet for difference.

1 wife, Margaret da. of ... = Rob. Simonds = 2 wife, Elizabeth da. Calthrop of Norfolk. Vide of Suffeild in of Rob. Smith of ante, fo. 116. co. Norfolk. Norfolk.

4. John. 5. Thomas. Elizabeth ux. Beales of a da. ux. Northelman [North Elm- Gossard ham ?] in Norfolk. of Essex.

1 wife, Elizabeth da. of Jeffrey = 3. Richard Simonds of = 2 wife, Catherine da. of Hildwell of Cantlye in Nor- Suffeild, 1st son by the John Playford of Brun- folk. second wife. ton in Norfolk.

A

B

THE VISITATIONS OF NORFOLK, 1563, 1589, AND 1613. 251

A

B

1. Thomas = Elizabeth da. of Cutbert Simonds of Leverton of Worsted in Suffeild. Norfolk.

2. William.

Mary ux. Edmond Webster of Baningham in Norfolk.

Dionis ux. Nicholas Wolsey of North Walsam in Norfolk.

Anne ux. Stephen Durant of Suffeild.

Elizabeth ux. Stephen Bardwell of Midleton in Norfolk.

Jane ux. Nicholas Lilley of Witton in Norfolk.

Catherine ux. John Lawrance of Suffeild.

3. John.

4. Henry.

5. Nicholas.

6. William Simonds = Elizabeth da. of Giles Gildersley of Norwich.

1. Robert.
2. Josua.
3. Samuel.

4. John.
Nathaniel.

Nathaniel.

Elizabeth.

Hanna.

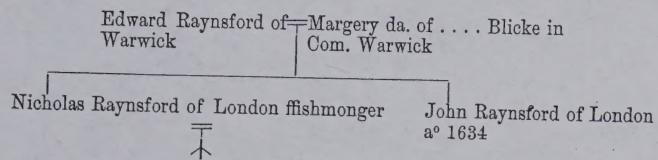
All s.p.

Croft, Sir Hugh, of Salop—bore, at the first Dunstable tournament 1308, quarterly per fess indented azure and argent (in the first quarter) a lion passant gardant or (F.) and Parly. Roll—H. 6137 fo. 27^b. In Harl. MS. 4033 the tinctures are reversed, the lion appearing in the second quarter. In the Ashmole Roll it is erroneously tricked per pale and a chief indented, &c.

Raynsford.

Candlewick Street Ward.

Respit⁴ for the Armes



JOHN RAYNSFORD.

Read.

Tower Ward.



Gerard Reade = da. of de la Vall of Sea-ton de la Vall in Northumberland

Martyn = Ann da. of Fenwick Sir William Ogle of East Cassey Parke Hadwyn

Thomas Reade of Haughton in Com. Northumberland = Elenor da. of Martin Fenwick of East Hadwyn in Co. Northumberland

Lawrance Reade of London 4 sonne Merch^t & free of the Skinners now liuing 1633

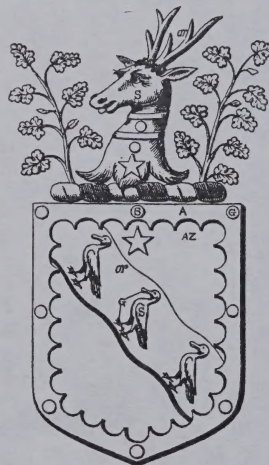
1 John 2 George 3 Cuthbert

LAWRENCE READ.

Synnds²

Read.

Faringdon W^{ain}.



John Read of Weston Com. Suffolke = Vrsula da. of W^m Cooke of Linsted Co. Suff.

Thomas Reade of Weston in Com. Suff. = Anne da. of S^r Thomas Gaudy K^t one of y^e Judges of the Kinges bench

1 Henry Read = 3 Clipsbe Reade of London Grocer 3 sonn liuing a^o 1634

Andrey wife to Astley Brampton of the Excheq^r gent. Dorothey

CLIPSBY READ.

Vide the Visitacon of Suffolke

Reade.

Faringdon Within.

B. a griffin or. p^r M^r Clarenceux. To M^r Philpot for these Armes.

William Reade of ffolkston in Com. Kent = Rebecca da. & heire of Mince

Mathew Reade of Folkstone eldest sonn = Mary da. of Ambrose Ward

John 2^d son died s.p.

Richard Reade of London Grocer 3 sonn liuing a^o 1634

Joane da. of John Dale

W^m Read = da. of y^e Mich. Hene-age

1 Rebecca Elizabeth

RICHARD READE.

see Perle 34/40
get Congreve, now Grosvenor, Berbow,

The

Visitation of Staffordschire

MADE BY

Robert Glover, al's Somerset Herald,

MARESCHALL TO

William Flower, al's Norroy King of Arms,

ANNO D'NI 1583.

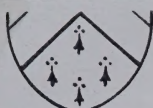
EDITED BY

H. SYDNEY GRAZEBROOK, Esq.

LONDON:

MITCHELL AND HUGHES, 140 WARDOUR STREET, W.

1883.



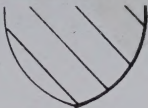
Touchet



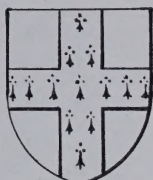
Pype



Tamhorne



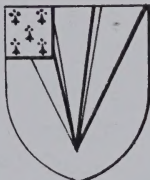
Mawissin



Beeke



Gyffard



Wrottesbury



Congreve



Chetelton



Boffrey



Wirley



Waringe



Iowe



Lewson



Sutton



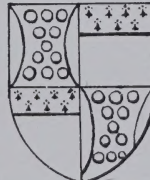
Watter



Sheldou



Bromfeild



Spilman



Spilman

46
19066
81
940
D59
Symonds

arville.	Argent, two lions passant in pale sable, crowned or.
le Strettay.	Argent, three buck's heads cabossed or attired gules.
Swinerton.	Argent, a cross formé flory sable within a border engrailed gules.
de Ruggeley.	Argent, on a chevron sable three pierced mullets of the field. Crest: A stag's head erased or.
s de Aston.	A blank shield.
d de Verdon.	Argent, fretty sable, on a canton gules a martlet of the first.
de Touchet.	A blank shield.
as Mawreward.	A blank shield.
le Pye. §	A blank shield.
s de Tamhorne.	A blank shield.
; Mawissin.	Bendy gules and argent.
s Beeke.	Gules, a cross ermine.
lyffard. ¶	Or, a cross engrailed sable.
Wrottesbury. **	Or, three piles sable, a canton ermine.
rendon.	A blank shield.
y Congreve. ††	A blank shield.

MS. 6128 and other MSS. give the field sable and the lions argent, quartered by Comberford. See Harl. MS. 1439, etc.

is, a chevron gules. (Harl. MS. 6128.)

eward" in Harl. MS. 1570.

in Harl. MS. 6128, where the following arms are given—Azure, two pipes conjoined in chevron of the last. Erdeswick says that "Sir Ipe, who lived 28 Edw. III., sealed with a chevron in a bordure plain," father, Robert, bore the arms above described.

t, a bugle horn strung between three escallops sable. (Harl. MS.

is an undoubted mistake. The coat is that of *Ufford*. In the Harl. shield is blank; in MS. 1570 "al's Ufford" is added. It is curious old stated to be of the reign of Edward I., the same coat is ascribed to Hiffard, though in the margin is written "credo Ufford." Stilesley *alias* Wrotlesley in Harl. MS. 6128. a chevron between three battle axes argent. (*Ib.*)



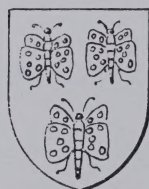
Bentley



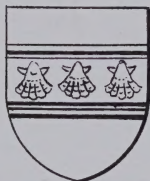
Swinerton



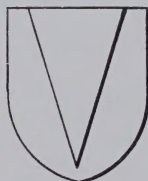
Newport



Audley iadis



Bushbury



Chaudois



Hyde



Butler



Cariswall



Gresley



Benet



Aston



Hampton



Bentley



Hewet



Harville



Strettay



Swinerton



Ruggeley



Verdon

The Heraldic
Visitations of Staffordshire
IN 1614 AND 1663-64.

942.46
D839r

Congreve of Stretton.*

Cuddleston Hundred.

ARMS.—Quarterly—1 and 4, Sable, a chevron between three battle-axes argent [CONGREVE]; 2 and 3, Argent, a chevron engrailed between three mullets pierced sable. On an escutcheon of pretence the arms of FITZHERBERT, viz., Argent, a chief vair or and gules, over all a bend sable.

Richard Congreve of Stretton, — . . . † dau. of . . . Harpur
co. Staff., temp. H. 6. of Rushall, co. Staff.

Ralph Congreve of Stretton, — . . . † dau. of . . . Erdeswick of Sandon.

John Congreve of Stretton, — . . . † dau. of . . . Giffard
temp. H. 8. of Chillington.

Francis Congreve of Stretton, — . . . dau. of . . . Fowke of Brewood.

Thomas Congreve of Stretton, — Elizabeth, dau. of . . . †
now living 1614. Fouke of Gunston.

Isabell, ux. Robert Elizabeth, ux. Mary, ux. Edward Margaret.
Peirse. Tho. Whillon. Reeve.

* There is a copious pedigree of this family in Berry's 'Pedigrees of the County Families of Berkshire.' The Congreves represent, through coheiresses, Champion, Stretton, and Weston of Weston. Robert le Champion of Little Sardon married Agnes the widow of Sir Richard de Stretton, who was dead 1 E. 1. Robert's nephew, William le Champion (son of his brother William), married Alice the eldest of the coheiresses of Stretton, and is styled lord of Stretton in 18 E. 3. Thomas le Champion, son of William and Alice, married one of the coheiresses of Sir John Weston of Weston, and their da. and heir Catherine married Geoffrey de Congreve, who is styled lord of Stretton in 45 E. 3. (Ex inf. Gen. Wrottesley.)

† Agnes, da. of John Harpur. (Berry's 'Berkshire Pedigrees'.)

† Agnes, da. of Hugh Erdeswick. (Ib., and Glover's MS. pedigree of Erdeswick.)

§ Dorothy, da. of Sir John Giffard. (Ib., and Vis. of 1583.) She was married secondly in 1535 to Francis Shirley. ('Stemmata Shirleiana,' p. 62.) The Visitation of Warwickshire, 1619 (Harl. Soc. edit., p. 45), erroneously calls her da. of "S^r John Forde, Knt.," and states that she had issue by Congreve three daughters, viz., Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Underhill of Ettington; Ursula, wife of William Underhill of Hunnington; and Dorothy, wife of Robert Brokesby of co. Leicester.

|| She was daughter and coheir of Roger Fowke of Gunston, and sister of Joan, wife of Roger Fowke of Brewood.

A
Francis Congreve of Stretton, — Dorothy, da. to Richard 2. Roger.
co. Staff., Esq., ob. 19 May Brook of Lapley, co. Staff.
1619. Son and heir 1614. 3. Thomas.

5. John Congreve, mar. Virtue, da. of . . . Worke- man of . . . in Ireland.	1. Mary, wife to Thomas Chetwind, a younger son to Thomas Chetwind of Rugeley, co. Staff.	2. Dorothy, wife of Thomas Windsor of Wolverhampton.	3. Elizabeth, wife of Anthony Colwich of Stede, co. Derby.
--	---	--	--

1. Richard Congreve of Stretton, co. Staff., Esq., æt. 53 ann. 6 April 1663. 1 son and heir æt. 4 ann. 1614.	— Anne, da. to Anthony Fitzherbert of Norbury, co. Derby, Esq., and sister and coheir to Sir John Fitzherbert, Knt.	2. Edward. — 3. Thomas. — 4. Francis.	} Ob. s.p.
--	---	---------------------------------------	------------

1. Elizabeth, wife to John Gaywood of Bishop's Otley, co. Staff.	2. Martha. — 3. Mary.	4. Frances. — 5. Gertrude.	6. Anne. — 7. Carola.
--	-----------------------	----------------------------	-----------------------

1. John Congreve, * s. and h., æt. 26 ann. 6 April 1663.	— Mary, da. of Thomas Nicholls of Boycott, co. Salop.	2. William. — 3. Thomas.
--	---	--------------------------

1. Anne, æt. 1 anni et amplius 6 April 1663. 2. Mary.

Certified by RICHARD CONGREVE, Esq.

Stone, 6 April 1663.

* Besides the two daughters named above, John Congreve had (*inter alios*) two sons, John his heir, and William (fourth son), whose grandson, Col. William Congreve, was created a baronet in 1812. The issue and descendants of John, the eldest son, will be found in the various editions of Burke's 'Landed Gentry,' the present representative of the family being Capt. William Congreve, Chief Constable of Staffordshire.

† This William was father (by Mary his wife, da. of Walter Browning) of William Congreve the poet and dramatist, who was bapt. at Bardsey, co. York, 10 Feb. 1669, and died unm. 29 Jan. 1728-9. (Berry, *ut supra*.)

Peshall of Horsley.*

[1614.]

ARMS.—Quarterly of six—1, *Argent, a cross formée flory sable, a canton gules charged with a wolf's head erased of the field* [PESHALL]; 2, *Argent, two bars-gemelles sable, over all a bend gules*; 3, *Azure, a chevron between three mullets or* [CHETWYND]; 4, *Gules, a chevron between three pheons argent* [MALPAS]; 5, *Vert, an inescutcheon argent charged with a scythe sable, an orle of buck's heads cabossed or* [?PRAERS]; 6, *Gules, two lions rampant combattant argent* [WISTASTON].

Joh'es Swinnerton, miles, D'n's Manerii de Peshall, 55 H. 3.

Ricardus Peshall, miles, Margeria, filia et hæres Hugonis
aº 55 H. 3. Knighton, D'ni de Knighton.

Agnes, filia et hæres Jo. Caverswell. Adam Peshall, Dominus de Peshall. . . . filia et hæres Joh'is Weston, D'ni de Weston sup. Lizard. Ricardus Peshall.

Ricardus Peshall, miles, aº 17 E. 3. Johanna, filia et hæres Reginaldi Chetwynd, filii et hæred. Joh'is Chetwynd, militis. Adam Peshall de Weston sup. Lizard.

Robertus Peshall de Weston.

Adamus Peshall, miles, D'n's de Weston, 19 R. 2; obiit 1489. Jocosa, filia et hæres Jo. D'ni Botetort de Weley, ob. 1455.

Margareta, ux. Will'i Mitton. Johanna, ux. . . . Bermingham.

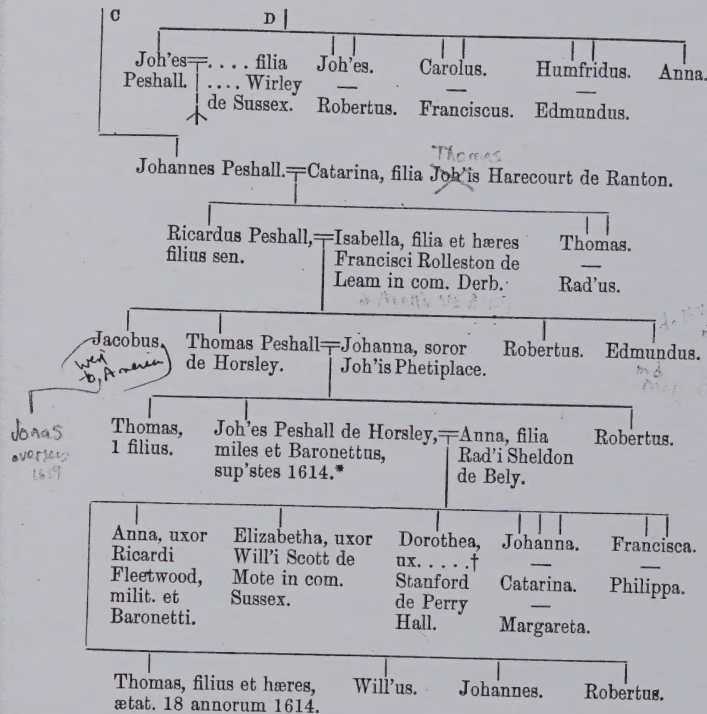
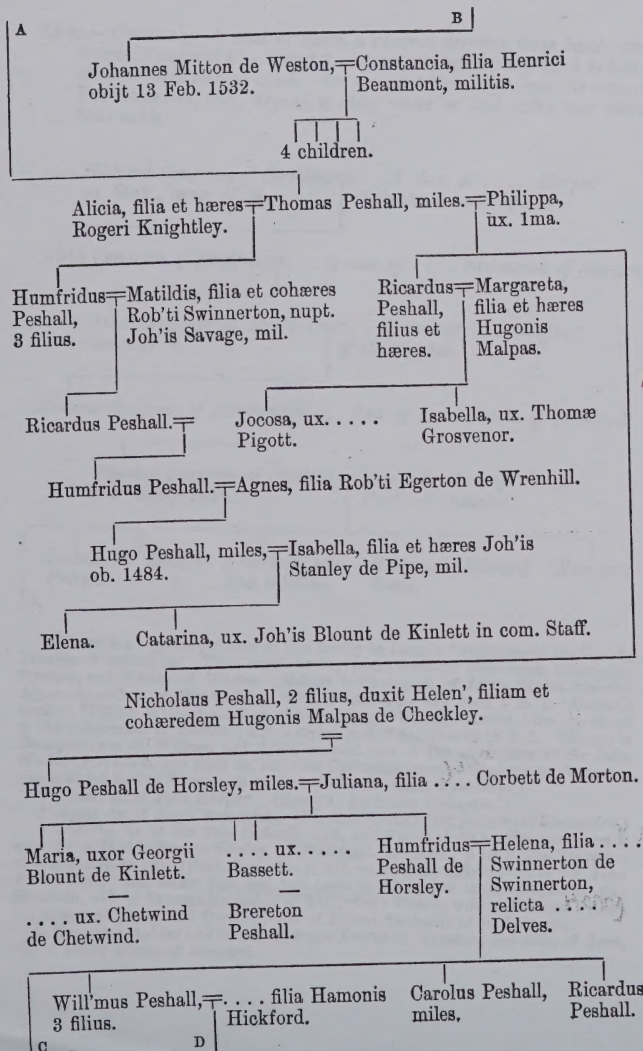
Will'mus Mitton de Weston. Margareta.

Agnes, filia . . . Swinnerton. Joh'es Mitton de Weston, obiit 1489. Margaret, obiit 1463.

A

B

* See 'Staff. Coll.' i., 336, 345, etc., and iv., part 2, 73 et seq.



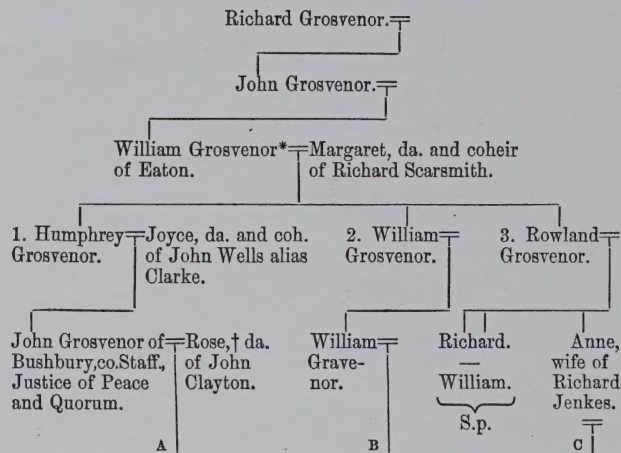
* He was created a baronet 25 Nov. 1614. The title became (apparently) extinct on the death of Sir Thomas, the third baronet, in 1712, but about the year 1770 the Rev. John Pearsall (the descendant of a respectable yeoman family seated for several generations at Hawn in the parish of Halesowen, co. Worcester) changed his name to Peshall, and assumed the style and designation of "Sir John Peshall, Bart.," alleging his descent from one Humphrey Peshall, whom he affirmed to be the second son of the first baronet. The pedigree of this reverend baronet is given in *extenso* in the 'Baronetage' of Kimber and Johnson, pub. 1771, vol. i., p. 113 et seq.

† William Stanford. See that pedigree.

Grosvenor of Bushbury.

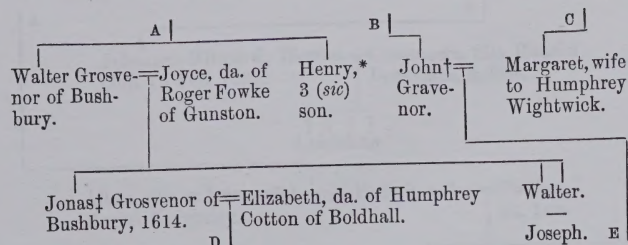
[1614.]

ARMS.—Quarterly—1 and 4, Azure, a garb or between three bezants [GROSVENOR]; 2, Argent, a bend sable between three mullets gules [CLAYTON]; 3, Argent, on a fesse cottised sable three escallops of the field [BUSHBURY].



* William Grosvenor, here styled "of Eaton," was really of Broughton in the parish of Claverley, co. Salop. He was the son of Thomas Grosvenor, and grandson of John Grosvenor; which John was a younger son of Thomas Grosvenor, or Gravenor, of High Gravenor in the parish of Claverley. "Richard Sharesmyth de Penne," father of Margaret the wife of William, attests a Penn charter of temp. H. 6, and was one of the collectors of the Staffordshire subsidy in the same reign. Humphrey Grosvenor, son of William, was of Farnote in Claverley parish in 22 E. 4 (1482) and 16 H. 7 (1500). In the former year his father William settled upon him and Joyce his wife a messuage and lands in Farnote. See an elaborate pedigree compiled from documentary evidence by the late Joseph Morris of Shrewsbury in the 'Herald and Genealogist,' v., 33 et seq., where the alleged descent of this family from the Grosvenors of Eaton, as asserted by the Heralds, is shewn to be erroneous.

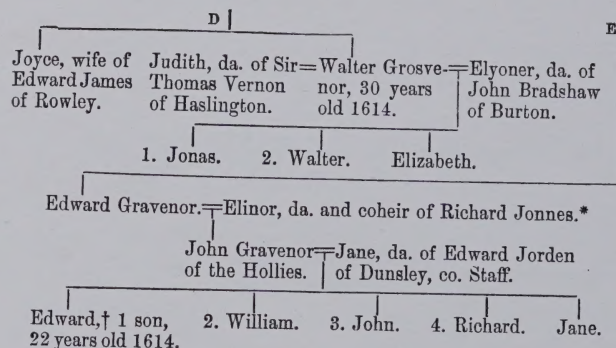
† Rose was da. and coheir (with her sister Ellen, wife of William Leveson) of John Clayton of Harwood Parva, co. Lancaster, by Rose his wife, da. and heir of Richard Bushbury of Bushbury. In 5 H. 8 John Gravenor and Rose his wife grant a messuage in Seisdon to Henry Barnesley, and in 4 E. 6 Rose Gravenor, widow of John Gravenor, releases to Thomas, son of Henry Barnesley, all right to a messuage in Seisdon, late the lands of Humphrey Gravenor and Joyce his wife. (Shaw, ii., 208; Dugdale's 'Warwickshire'; and 'Herald and Genealogist,' v., 42.)



* According to the Visitation of 1583 this Henry was fourth son of John and Rose, and died s.p. In some pedigrees he is stated to have married Alice Whitgreave of Burton; but see the pedigree of Grosvenor of Hungersheath.

† According to the original Visitation of Herts in 1572 (G. 17, Coll. Arm., fo. 31^b) John Grosvenor "of Enfield" had issue three sons, viz., Edward, son and heir; 2, Robert; and 3, William. Robert, the second son (who entered and signed the pedigree), was of Wade's Mill, Herts; he married Elizabeth, da. of . . . Farnfold of Sussex, and had issue Jane, Mary, and Elizabeth. In 1578 Robert Grosvenor of Wade's Mill and Richard Farnfold were defendants in a Chancery suit brought by the collectors for the poor of the parish of Steyning. It appears that Jane Waller, the defendant Grosvenor's mother, left the rents of certain lands for charitable purposes, and directed her son the said Robert Grosvenor to make distribution of the same after her death for the benefit of the said poor, but he endeavoured to avoid the same by connivance with Farnfold the other defendant. In the MS. G. 17 above named the wife of John Grosvenor, and mother of Robert, is simply called ". . . da. of . . . of Staffordshire."

† The pedigree given by Shaw (ii. 178) and that compiled by Mr. Joseph Morris assign two other sons, Thomas and Edward, to Jonas and Elizabeth Grosvenor. Thomas, the second son, was the alleged ancestor of a personage who styled himself "William Le Grosvenor," a licentiate of the College of Physicians, of Bewdley, co. Worcester. In the year 1776 Dr. Grosvenor printed a pamphlet, now extremely rare, in which he claimed to be the "head and heir-male" of the Grosvenors of Eaton, in right of his descent from William Grosvenor who, he says, "is registered in the Heralds' College as William Grosvenor of Eaton," and who must therefore have possessed that estate. He gives the descent from Humphrey to Jonas from the Visitation pedigree. Jonas Grosvenor, he says, had by Elizabeth *née* Cotton three sons, Walter, Thomas, and Edward. "The male issue of Walter, the eldest son, became extinct after three generations, viz., in the year 1732 by the death of John Grosvenor, or Le Grosvenor, of Wolverhampton, Esq^r. Walter Grosvenor, or Le Grosvenor, the grandfather, Jonas the father, and Jonas and Archibald the two eldest brothers of this John lived chiefly at Newbridge, at or near Tottenhall, though they sometimes resided at Wolverhampton, and sometimes at Bushbury." Shaw informs us that the Bushbury estate was sold in 1721 by Archibald Grosvenor, great-grandson of Walter and Eleanor *née* Bradshaw. This Archibald married Frances Hale, who, in one of Hadfield's MSS. in the William Salt Library, is stated to have been granddaughter of Lord Chief Justice Sir Matthew Hale. Archibald Grosvenor, after he had sold his estate at Bushbury, resided at Hale Hall, near Cheshire, a house which he built and so named in honour of his wife. He died s.p. in 1725, and she in 1736. "Thomas, the second son of the before-mentioned Jonas (continues the Doctor) married, and settled at a place called 'The Stockings' in the parish of Codsall, . . . and had issue William Grosvenor of the Stockings, gent., his son and heir, who married Elizabeth, sole daughter and heir of Richard Marshall of Codsall aforesaid, by whom he had issue William Grosvenor of the Stockings, gent., his son and heir, who in the year 1685 married Mary, sole daughter and heir of Thomas Chermie of Withington, in the county of Salop, gent., by whom he had three sons, all born at Withington, viz., (1) Thomas,



(2) Richard, and (3) William, all of whom died unmarried except William, the third son, who married and died at Kidderminster in the lifetime of his father and brothers. This William, the third son, married Sarah, the eldest daughter of Henry Sanders, or Saunders, of Stourbridge, in the county of Worcester, gent., by whom he had issue one only son, viz., the said William Le Grosvenor, now living in Bewdley aforesaid. He is a physician by diploma from the President and elect Fellows of the Royal College of Physicians, London.² It appears clearly to him and others that he is the heir-male of the before-mentioned Gilbert Le Grosvenor, and of the famous Sir Robert Le Grosvenor, and of Ralph Le Grosvenor and Joan his wife, the heiress of Eaton; and therefore he cannot but be of opinion that he hath a right to call himself, and be called, by the name and appellation of *William Le Grosvenor*, and to bear the Grosvenors' arms pure. . . . In consequence of his being an orphan at about five years of age, by the loss of his father at Kidderminster, he has been privately surrounded by an infernal crew of villains and wolves in sheeps' clothing, who have found means to rob him of his property, to get possession of, and to withhold from him the greatest part of his inheritance, and to obstruct justice while he was using his best endeavours to obtain it, and particularly with respect to the Stockings estate. Some of these villains have formed many schemes, and made several attempts to deprive him of his life; and they have lately burnt down his house and barn at Codsall. The Stockings, Withington, and Bushbury estates have been withheld from him; and in the opinion of many people he hath a better right to the Eaton estate than Lord Grosvenor, its present possessor. He is the undoubted heir-male of the Grosvenor family of the Stockings, Withington, Tottenhall, Newbridge, and Bushbury, and, with submission, he is also the heir-male of the Grosvenor family of Eaton, near Chester."

* There is a pedigree of the Jonnes family in the Harl. MS. 6128. It appears that Richard Jonnes of Dudley (son of Roger and grandson of John Jonnes, both of Dudley) married Clare, da. and h. of Cornelius Coleborne, and had issue by her (with two sons, Henry, who died s.p. 12 July 1557, and Geoffrey, who likewise died s.p.), three daughters and coheirs, viz., Eleanor, wife of . . . Gravenor of Enville; Katherine, wife of Richard Shawe; and Elizabeth, wife of Richard Bendy of Kingswinford.

† See Dyson pedigree, ante p. 120. In the Visitation of Shropshire, 1623, Ellen,

¹ William Grosvenor (who was an Apothecary) and Sarah Sanders were married at Oldswinford (Stourbridge) 5 Aug. 1751. She was of the same family as the Rev. Henry Sanders, author of the "History of Shenstone in Staffordshire." See the Introduction to that work.

² He was admitted an extra Licentiate of the College 8 Aug. 1770. (Munk's Roll, ii., 45.)

Grosvenor of Hilton.

Seisdon Hundred.

ARMS.—*Azure, a garb or between three bezants, a canton of the second.*

This canton was assigned by me W^m DUGDALE, Norroy, for a difference to Solomon Grosvenor and his descendants from the other branches of this family.

Walter Grosvenour of Bushbury, co. Staff., Esq. =

Jonas Grosvenour
of Bushbury, Esq.2. Walter Grosvenour
of Hilton, co. Staff.,
gent. Died about the
year 1620.Anne, da. and sole
heir of Humphrey
Hill of Hilton,
co. Staff.1. Marcia, wife
of Francis
Wood, clerk.2. Grace, wife of
Thomas Hall of
Sedgley, co. Staff.3. Anne, wife of
William Fox of
Bentley, co. Staff.4. Joyce.
5. Mary.1. Solomon Grosvenour of
Hilton, æt. 57 ann.
27 April 1664.Sarah, da. to William
Rogerson of Stocton,
co. Salop.

2. Joshua, ob. unm.

Walter Grosvenour,* æt. 20 ann.
27 April 1664.Sarah, wife of Thomas Astley,
Citizen of London.

Certified by Mr. SOLOMON GROSVENOR.

Stafford, 27 April 1664.

da. and coheir of Francis Farmer of Endon Burnell, is stated to have married "Edward Grosvenor de Hollis, co. Staff.," but *Jane*, wife of Edward Gravenor, was buried at Enville 1653. He probably had two wives, but he certainly died s.p. I have not been able to discover how he was related to Robert Gravenor who entered his descent in the Visitation of London in 1634, and is there described as brother of John Gravenor, and second son of "William Gravenor of Hollis in the parish of Enville in com. Stafford," by Frances, da. of Edward Clarke. Robert Gravenor m. Joan, da. of Richard Nichols of Hendon, Middlesex, and had issue Robert, Mary, Sarah, and Elizabeth.

* The will of Walter Grosvenor of Hilton, gent., is dated 24 March 1689. He gives his lands in trust to John Huntbach of Fetherston, gent., and William Peak of Bushbury, clerk. Mentions his wife, his two daughters Sarah and Elizabeth (then under 21), and his son Solomon. Gives £50 to "my sonn Walter, to be raised as soon as he shall be adjudged fit to be put apprentice, in case he shall not receive the lands devised to him by my aunt Rogerson's will." He also mentions "my younger children." Administration, with will annexed, was granted at Lichfield to Elizabeth Grosvenor the relict, John Huntbach "the only executor"

Grosvenor of Hungersheath.

Pirehill Hundred.

ARMS.—*Azure, a garb or between three bezants, a canton of the second for distinction.*

Randolph Grosvenor* of Bellaport, co. Salop. =

1. . . . † Grosvenor
of Bellaport.2. Henry Grosvenor of
The Hill in the parish
of High Offley, co. Staff.Alice, da. of . . . †
Whitgreave of
Burton, co. Staff.William Grosvenor of Bella-
port, co. Salop, sold
Bellaport, and died s.p.William Grosve-
nor of The Hill. = Bridget, da. of
Edmund Braddock
of Adbaston,
co. Staff., Esq.1. Henry Grosve-
nor, Citizen of
London.2. Robert Grosvenor of
Hungersheath in the
parish of Ashley,
co. Staff., æt. 57 ann.
7 April 1663.Mary, da. of
William
Brian of
Sambrooke,
co. Salop.3. William
Grosvenor
of New-
port,
co. Salop.

having renounced. The inventory is dated 24 and 25 April 1696, and amounts to £163 9s. 4d. The testator's "aunt Rogerson" was probably Dorcas Rogerson of Hilton, spinster, who in 13 Charles II., 1661, was defendant in an Exchequer suit with Solomon Grosvenor and John Worsey of Rushall as to a tenement in Hilton. It appears from the proceedings that Dorcas Rogerson then had a considerable estate in Hilton and Essington.

* Randolph Grosvenor married Anne, da. of William Charlton of Apley, co. Salop. He was son of Randle Grosvenor of Bellaport, by Margaret, da. of Randle Mainwaring, and grandson of Thomas Grosvenor of Drayton-in-Hales, co. Salop, by Isabella, da. and coheir of Sir Richard Peshall of Chetwynd; which Thomas Grosvenor was a younger son of Sir Thomas Grosvenor of Holme, co. Chester, and brother of "Rawlings vel Radulphus" Grosvenor, ancestor of the Duke of Westminster. A complete pedigree, continued to the year 1867, has been registered in the College of Arms, and will be found, *in extenso*, in the 'Herald and Genealogist,' vol. v., p. 504 *et seq.*

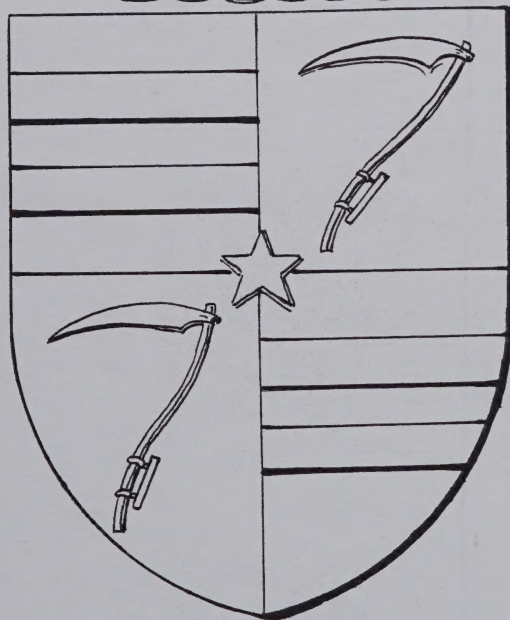
† Thomas Grosvenor. He married Mary, da. of John Cotes of Woodcote, co. Salop, and had issue two sons, (1) William, whose son William sold Bellaport and died s.p.; and (2) Richard, of The Brand, co. Salop, who by Ursula his wife, da. of Francis Charlton of Apley, had issue a son William, who married Anne, da. of John Shirley of Stanton Harold, co. Leicester, and died in June 1641 without surviving issue. ('Herald and Genealogist,' v., 322 and 505.)

‡ In Lord Hatherton's MS. copy of the Staffordshire Visitation of 1583 Alice, da. of Robert Whitgreave of Burton, is stated to have married "Henry Gravenor, a younger brother of Bushbery;" and in the Vis. of Warwickshire in 1619 (Harl. Soc., p. 387) Henry Grosvenor, (there called *second*) son of John Grosvenor of Bushbury, is stated to have married "Aliciam filiam Rob'ti Whitgreave de Burton," and to have died s.p. *Vide ante*, p. 160.

Mainwaring of Whitmore.

ARMS.—Quarterly—1 and 4. *Argent, two bars gules.* [MAINWARING.]
2 and 3. *Gules, a scythe argent.** In the centre a mullet for difference.

CREST.—An ass's head erased proper, bridled argent, charged with a mullet for difference.



Mainwaring.

Sr John Mainwaring=Catherin, da. of Will'm
of Pever, K^t. Honforde of Honforde.

Sr Randolphe Edmond, Will'm, Sr John, Peres, Thomas
Mainwair- 2 sonne, s.p. 4 sonne, a preist, 6 sonne, Main-
inge of Piver, — s.p. 5 sonne. s.p. wairinge
Knight. Nicholas, of Can-
3 sonne, s.p. terbury.

Three da.

Phillippe Mayn=Anne, da. of Edwarde Mainwair=Alice, da. & heire
wairinge, 7 sonne, Sr Raulf inge of Whitmore in of Rob't Boghey
Lord of Pyver, Leicester. Com. Staff., nowe of Whitmore in
1583. livinge 1583, Esq^r. Com. Staff.

Randulphe Edmonde, 2 sonne. Edwarde=Jane, da. of Anne, mar.
Mainwair- — Mathew to Thomas
inge, estat. Thomas, 3 sonne. wairinge, Cradocke Roose of
xi annor' — sonne & of Staff., Weston
1583. Edwarde, 4 sonne. heire. merchant. in Com.
Notts.

Edwarde, eldest John, 2 Mary, Elizab., Alice, 3 da. Anne, 4 da.
sonne. sonne. 1 da. 2 da.

EDWARD MAINWARINGE.

* This quartering is usually stated to be for *Boghey*, but it is manifestly *Praers*. There was a match temp. Edw. III. between a coheiress of Praers and an ancestor of Edward Mainwaring, but as the issue of this marriage, failed, and the line was carried on by the descendants of a second marriage, the coat of Praers could not be legitimately quartered by this family. But as a matter of fact it was so quartered, and the Heralds seem to have definitely assigned it to Boghey, and thus accounted for its appearance in the Mainwaring achievement. It was allowed by Dugdale at his Visitation in 1663 to the then Edward Mainwaring of Whitmore.

D |
 Thomas de Greseley, Ar., D'n's de Castle Greseley, Colton, et Drakelow, modo sup'tes an^o D'ni 1583. = Catherina, filia Tho. Walsingham de Skadbury in Com. Cantiae, militis. 2 filius. Simon, 2 filius. Jana, 1 filia. Elizabeth, 3. Gracea, 4. Maria, 2. Hastin-gus, 3 filius.

Henricus de Greseley, primogenitus, ætatis 4 annorum an^o 1583. Georgius, 2 filius. Catherina, 1 filia. Joh'es, 3 filius. Catherina, 2 filia. Will'm's, 4 filius.

Grosvenor of Bushbury.

ARMS.—Quarterly—1 and 4. *Azure, a garb or between three bezants, two in fesse and one in base.* [GROSVENOR.] 2. *Argent, a bend sable between three mullets gules.* [CLAYTON.] 3. *Argent, on a fesse cottised sable three escallops of the field.* [BUSHBURY.]

Humfrey Grosevenour, a yonger brother* = . . . † da. and heire of . . . of the familie of Grosevenour of Eton in Clerke of Typton in Com. Stafford. Com. Cestr.

John Grosevenour of Bushbury = Rose, da. of John Clayton, by his wife in the Countye of Stafford, Esq', the da. and heire of Richarde Bush-bury, and heire to them bothe. Justice of the peace & quorum.

* It is clear from the researches of the late well-known genealogist, Mr. Joseph Morris of Shrewsbury, that the Grosvenors of Bushbury were not, as here and elsewhere stated, a junior branch of the Grosvenors of Eaton. Humphrey Grosvenor, who heads this pedigree, was of Farncote, Co. Salop, the son of William Grosvenor, or Gravenor, of Broughton, in the parish of Claverley, and the descendant of a family which derived its name from a place called *Gravenor* in the same parish. A complete pedigree from Mr. Morris's MSS. will be found in the "Herald and Genealogist," iv., 481, and v., 33.

† According to the Visitation of Warwickshire in 1619 this lady was "Jocosa filia et coh. Joh'is Welles, al's Clarke, de Tibbington in Com. Staff." See also Harl. MS. 6128, fo. 25^o. Her sister Joan married Thomas Dudley of Tipton.

A |
 James, 2 sonne, sans yssue. Henry,* 4 sonne, sans yssue. Elizabeth, married to Thomas Newman of Honsworth in Com. Stafford. Richarde, 3 sonne.

Walter Grosevenor of Bushbury in Com. Stafford; nowe livinge 1583. = Joyce, da. of John (? Roger) Foulke of Gunston in Com. Stafford.

Walter, 2 sonne. Thomas, 4 sonne, sans yssue. Solomon, 5 sonne. Sarah, eldeste. Gertrude, 2. Hester, 3. Venice, 4 da. Joseph, 3 sonne. Gawin, † 6 sonne.

Jonas, † eldeste sonne. = . . . da. of . . . Kinnersley of Locksley.

Walter, eldest. . . . 2 sonne. Joyce.

p^r me WALTERUM GROSVENOR.

Harcourt of Clenhall.

ARMS.—*Gules, two bars or.*

CREST.—*In a ducal coronet or a peacock proper.*

MOTTO.—*Le bon temps viendra.*

Agnes, filia . . . = Symon Harcourt de Staunton = . . . uxor s'c'da, Darrell de Scoteney, uxor prima. Harcourt in Com. Ox., miles. relicta . . . York, militis.

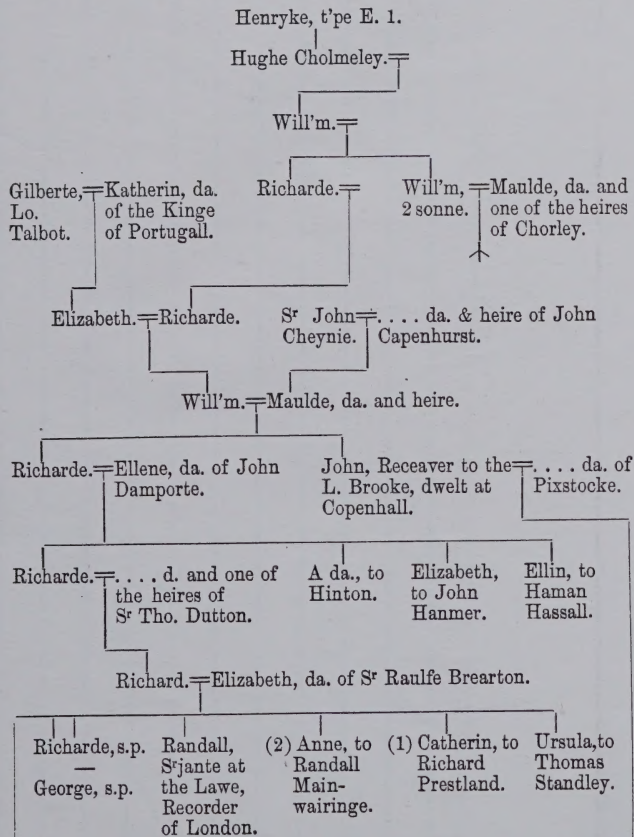
* Married Alice, dau. of Robert Whitgreave of Burton, Esq., and died 93. (Hatherton MS., and Vis. Warw., 1619.)

† He was of Sutton Coldfield, and recorded a long pedigree at the Visitation of Warwickshire taken in 1619, being then aged 53.

‡ The wife and issue of Jonas Grosvenor have evidently been inserted since 1583, for at the next Visitation of this County (taken in 1614) Jonas appeared and recorded his descent, stating his wife to be *Elizabeth, daughter of Humphrey Cotton of Bold Hall*, and his son by her (Walter) to be then aged 30. According to the

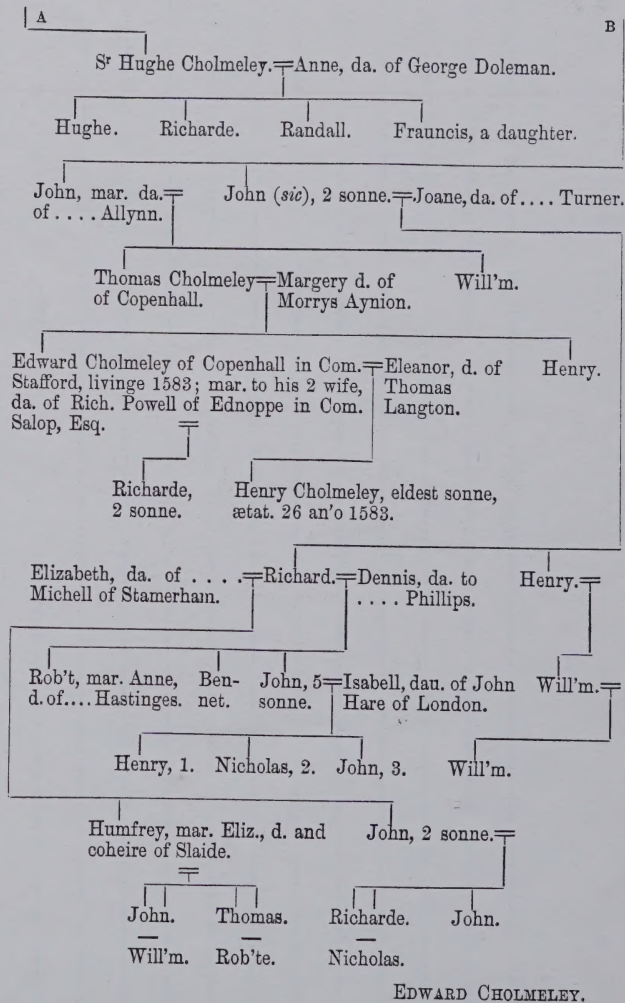
Cholmeley of Copenhall.

ARMS.—Quarterly—1 and 4. *Gules, two close helmets in chief argent, and a garb in base or.* [CHOLMELEY.] 2. *Lozengy argent and azure, a bend or, fretty gules.* [CHEYNY.] 3. *Argent, three cocks, 2 and 1, sable* [CAPENHURST]; *in the centre a crescent for difference.*



A

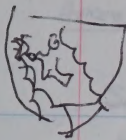
B



Working Notes

Emma sur; (Said to be) for first indicated, or + out

Re do neatly



or a bird engaged after 3 lines pass at org

Unit: A four square unit began to
holding a little one

gabs back of
for the whole

First Red Emma from Durham.

for ~~Armstrong~~ ^{Armstrong}

high staff of ~~Wetherburne~~ ^{Wetherburne}

Charles & Darden 186-12/4

As. Philip of Peter etc

124-5 187-9

of Foxton

and of Bonagate

Red goats and

for the unit

Sigands

Plan 2: ~~As. Argent~~ ^{As. Argent} a band or x gables between
2 borders unit

Unit: A silver Argent gable (colored)

Red 12: a silver & a central

Unit: a silver's head ^{above} a Z, back & end or

Or:

Code: A2 - 3 borders or

Unit: a cockatrice stat ^{or great} wings or, beaked & can be g.c

Sigands, Azure, a chevron ^{glided} ~~extruded~~ between 3 ~~trapezoid~~ ^{trapezoid}

Unit: out of a more even ~~clay~~ ^{clay} or + A2
C band head of a

tasks or a more subtle

(Spans of ^{band} ~~band~~ in
S. ~~Shoreline~~ ^{Shoreline} had ~~band~~ ^{band}
above 3 ~~trapezoid~~ ^{trapezoid} or)



Handwritten notes on lined paper, including a large heading "The first part of the book" and several paragraphs of text. The handwriting is somewhat cursive and difficult to read in places. There are also some small diagrams or sketches interspersed with the text.

Handwritten notes on lined paper, including a heading "The second part of the book" and several paragraphs of text. The handwriting is similar to the first section.

Handwritten notes on lined paper, including a heading "The third part of the book" and several paragraphs of text. The handwriting is consistent with the previous sections. There are also some small diagrams or sketches interspersed with the text.

Symbols
(Grosvenor)

Ancestry of Chamberlain & Grant, Vol. III p. 508 (Scrope) says

Scrope was one of the Great Council to take the oversight of the Kingdom, 19 Nov 1306. His celebrated controversy with Sir Robert Grosvenor as to the right of bearing the arms "Azure, a bend gold" was finally decided in ^{his} favor by the Constable (Thomas, Duke of Gloucester) whose judgment was confirmed by the King, 27 May 1390. He got his adversary excused a fine incurred by non-payment of the costs, and the two were publicly reconciled before the King in person. This famous lawsuit, in which most of the distinguished men of the day were called to testify, lasted almost five years.

A few English language sermons or poems may have existed shortly before, but Geoffrey Chaucer (1343-1400) was the first ~~English~~ poet to write in English ~~any work not religious in nature~~.

was fit to publish a book, Cantebury Tales, in ~~the~~ the ~~English~~ English dialect. Forliss Tales was used before that.

Over in Shropshire and Stafford (the old Synod) over his own diocese, many of the gentry still spoke a ~~home~~ dialect Norman French dialect instead, though they probably understood English as well. But each section of the country spoke a different dialect. A man from Derham would have to listen hard if he wanted to understand our Synods or Reverend or Bendows ("Bendows" they pronounced it).

When the Synods moved from Salop to Exeter, being well helped compensated for the change in environment.

We have this long visitation list written by the heralds for our the old Butler of our Diocese from Small Synods of Mass. By Gley, also were our third son, but in those times, even in this new place, even Reverend deared to their "betters" and granted them for blowing to the land gentry, let them lead and granted them extra land.

An effort is being made to use the heralds' pedigree to figure out the sons of our early Synods (the third) enacted one. But ~~the~~ there in Virginia and other places the family lives - like Belmont on Salop and Stratton ^(Stratton) are long vanished from maps. Some have changed so much as to be unrecognizable - Phesant for the Perseus, Ordin - ston as Fordis is Ranky Order.

Maybe we'll never find it out but we'll never know if we don't try.

~~This is not~~ It is obvious and then some that our Synods (presumed "Simmons") were Roman! But the Herald may have made up Remigius of the Ordo ad Mass (nothing like off the VE fig of 5000) and it is obvious several families were left out in earlier generations for the truth (30 th ~~year~~ ^{year} or so) to not add up.

The old dates seldom give dates. Most have at other the dates moved - even first name of wives.

But if nothing else, this is some one a lawyer's leaning sociology of those days - what people and times were like for those of us who like to know what they - and did - make people believe they were and are. For instance - among our persons is an article about a certain John Healy who is not one - ~~but~~ but - by great degree married a Parbell - what a cruel, mixed up world they lived in! With really if any ~~for~~ to learn what times were like at that time and place near the Welsh marches.

Maybe the first of our Synods line really was Simon of St. Ewan, namely in 1098 AD. It fits!

1-93 45

3

31-33 84

22

5/11

11/11

33 88

11/11

31-1059

3

Jan 7 24 1900
Harris the first of the
Jan 7 24 1900

(Barker's list may be more modern than version long found's master's clerk)

B



Denbow (Newport, co. Derby) See two string beas endorsed in pale or, garnished gu. betw. two bunches of arrows in fess, three of each, of the second, beaked and bearded or. bent d. of the third.

Crest - a hepp close or, fess per, how head wreathed with a chylat of flower gu.

same - Barker - The General Coventry

(This is confusing. Both a pale & a fess? Which was dominant? In heraldry a hepp was a grotesque monster having a woman's head and trunk and a bird's tail, wings and talons. I'm not that good an artist.)

Cording/Kording not found in that book.

Magnard may listed - seems wrong. More info needed
Pennarthap not found

Congreve of Walton, co. Stafford. Subtle, & chevron between three little axes or. Crest - a falcon, wings expanded per. Over it the motto: Parvus. Motto non imitatur Cujus vivit. (heritor)

9065

SHROPSHIRE
ARMS AND LINEAGES:

COMPILED FROM

The Herald's Visitations

AND

ANCIENT MSS.,

BY THE

REV. FRED. W. KITTERMASER, M.A.,

*Hon. Chaplain of the Shropshire Artillery Volunteers,
and sometime Vicar of Edgton.*

Not

Shropshire

LONDON:

WILLIAM MACINTOSH, PATERNOSTER ROW.

SHREWSBURY:

J. O. SANDFORD, HIGH STREET.

MDCCLXIX.

1869

6 Shropshire Arms and Lineages.

Baugh.—Gu., a fefs vair betw. three mullets arg.
Crest: Out of a ducal coronet or., a talbot sejant fa.

Confirmed, 1583, to Thomas Baugh, of Aldencourt, son of John
Baugh, of the same place. *Her. Vis.*

Bayllie.—Vert, a chev. or., betw. three unicorns' heads
craised arg., armed of the second.

Confirmed, 1584, (with 1 quartering) to John Bayllie, of Shrewsbury,
grandson of John Bayllie. *Harl MS.*

Beeton.—Arg., a bend betw. six bees fa.

Confirmed to Randall Beeton, of Salop, son of Richard Beeton, of
the same place, and grandson of Randall Beeton, of Beeton, Cheshire.
Harl MS.

Beist.—Gu., three bundles of arrows arg. Crest: An
arm embowed holding a bow.

Confirmed to William Beist, of Acham, son of Roger Beist, of the
same place. *Her. Vis.*

Bembow.—Sa., two stringed bows endorfed in pale or.,
garnished gu., betw. two bundles of arrows, five and
four, in fefs or., barbed and headed arg., tied up gu.
Crest: A harpy close or., face ppr., her head wreathed
with a chaplet of flowers gu.

Granted by William Camden, Clar.

Confirmed to John Bembow, of Newport and of London, 4th in
descent from Roger Bembow, of Newport. *Her. Vis.*

Benion or ap Einion.—Erm., a chev. fa., in chief or.,
a lion pass gu.

Confirmed as the arms of Richard ap Einion, of Salop.

Harl MS.

14 Shropshire Arms and Lineages.

Burnell.—Arg., a lion ramp. fa., ducally crowned or.,
within a border az.

Confirmed as the arms of Hugh Burnell, Baron of Holgate, temp
Hen. V., whose d. and h. Catherine m. Sir John Ratchiff. Hugh
Burnell was 12th in descent from Robert Burnell, who came to England
with William the Conqueror, and was buried at Buildwas 1087.

Also to Richard Burnell, son of Robert, who died 1593, and who was
13th from Hugh Burnell. *Her. Vis.*

Burton.—Per pale az. and purp., a cross engr. or., betw.
four roses arg. (counterchanged.) Crest: A dexter
gauntlet ppr., showing the inside of the hand.

Granted by John Wrythe, Norroy, May 22, 1478, to Robert Burton,
Co. York.

Confirmed to Thomas Burton, son of Edward Burton, of Longner,
a grandson of Edward Burton. This Edward Burton was the son of
Robert, temp. Hen. VII., and came out of Yorkshire.

Sheriffs: John, 1353; Edmund, 1371.

Add. MS. Morris MS. Blakeway.

Pr. Rep.: Through the female line—Robert Lingen Burton, Esq.,
of Longner Hall.

Butler.—Gu., a fefs chequy arg. and fa., betw. six crosses
formée fitchée of the second.

Arms of Butler, Baron Wenne.

Harl MS.

Chambers or Chambre.—Az., an armed arm, embowed or.,
issuing from the finifter, holding a red rose, flipped and
leaved ppr. Crest: A greyhound's head craised arg.,
round the neck a collar az., ring and buckle or.

Confirmed (with 2 quarterings) to Arthur Chambers, of Petton,
grandson of Richard Chambers, of the same place, son of Jenkin Chambers,
of Burton, who was 3rd son of William Chambre, and 8th in descent
from John de Chambre. *Her. Vis.*

Pr. Rep.: Through the female line—Robert Chambre Vaughan, Esq.,
of Burton.

✓ Charlton.—Or., a lion ramp. gu. Crest: A leopard's face erased at the neck or.

Confirmed (with 2 quarterings) to Robert Charlton, of Tern, grandson of Richard Charlton, 2nd son of William Charlton, of Apley.

Also the arms of Edward Charlton, Lord of Powis, ob. 1420, whose d. and co-h. Johanna m. Sir John Grey, Lord of Powys.

Sheriffs: Robert, 1472; Thomas, 1567; Andrew, 1590; Francis, 1626. *Her. Vis. Blakeway.*

Pr. Rep.: St. John Chiverton Charlton, Esq.

Chelmick or Chelmswyke.—Vert, three lions ramp. guard. or. Crest: A lion sejant guard. or., holding in his dexter paw a shield vert.

Confirmed to William Chelmick, of Chelmick, grandson of William Chelmick, of Chelmick and Ragdon. *Her. Vis. 1623.*

Clench.—Gu., a saltire or.

Arms (with 1 quartering) of William Clench, of Bridgnorth (son of Nicholas Clench, of Dublin), who m. Frances, daug. of Richard Cresset, of Upton Cresset. *Add. MS.*

Chetilton.—Arg., on a chev. gu., five bezants all within a border engr. of the second.

Arms of William de Chetilton, whose daug. Amabilia m. William Bromley, of Badington. *Harl MS.*

Church.—Arg., on a chev. gu., betw. three greyhounds' heads erased sa., as many bezants. Crest: A greyhound's head erased, collared and ringed or.

Confirmed to William Church, of Betton, grandson of William Church, of Nantwich, Co. Chester. *Her. Vis. 1623.*

✓ Manwaring.—Arg., two bars gu. Crest: Out of a ducal coronet or., an als' head in a hempen halter ppr.

Confirmed to Arthur Manwaring, of Ightfield, 6th in descent from William Manwaring, of the same place, temp. Hen. VII.

Sheriffs: George, 1505; Richard, 1532; Arthur, 1563, 1577.

Her. Vis. Blakeway.

Marston.—Sa., a chev. indented erm.

Confirmed to Edward Marston, of Asfcot, 5th in descent from John Marston, of the same place, and 9th from Robert de Marston, of Marston, Co. Lincoln, temp. Edw. I. *Harl MS.*

Marston.—Sa., a fess dancettée erm., betw. three fleurs-de-lis arg. Crest: A demi-greyhound sa., gorged with a collar dancettée erm.

Confirmed to Richard Marston, of Heyton, descended from Marston, of Marston. *Her. Vis. 1623.*

Mason.—Or. (vert), two lions combatant sa. (or.)

Confirmed to Edward Mason, of Diddlebury, grandson of Richard Mason, temp. Hen. VII., who was 3rd from Richard le Mason, temp. Ric. II. *Harl MS.*

Mavison.—Az., a chev. engr. betw. three mullets sa.

Confirmed to Adam Mavison, of Berwick, (5th in descent from Adam Mavison, of Mavison,) whose d. and h. Edith m. Thomas Wycombe, Co. Somerset. *Her. Vis.*

Meire.—Arg., a ship sa. Crest: A mermaid ppr., crined or.

Confirmed (with 3 quarterings) to John Meire, of Bowbridge and of Claverky, 2nd son of John Meire, of Meire, Co. Chester.

Her. Vis. 1623.

Readen Paper - Fotherell, Mering, &c

INDEXED G. S.
m. 1946

JUN 1 1946

COLLECTIONS

FOR A

HISTORY

OF

STAFFORDSHIRE

EDITED BY

The William Salt Archaeological Society.

VOLUME XII. NEW SERIES.

GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY

OF THE CHURCH OF JESUS CHRIST

OF LATTER-DAY SAINTS

"And in this undertaking, the Reader may see what Furniture (though it lie dispers'd) our Publick Records will afford for History; and how plentifully our own may be supplied and improved, if pains were taken therein: for what is hitherto made publick, hath been collected, chiefly out of old Annals, and they filled with few things but such as were very obvious, nay the Annalists themselves (for the most part residing in Monasteries) too oftentimes byass'd with Interest, and Affection, to Times and Persons: But on the contrary, in our publick Records lye matter of Fact, in full Truth, and therewith the Chronological part, carried on, even to days of the Month. So that an industrious Searcher may thence collect considerable matter for new History, rectifie many mistakes in our old and in both gratifie the world with unshadowed verity."—(Asmole's *History of the Garter*.)

442.46
B44c
N.S. Vol 12

31608

LONDON:

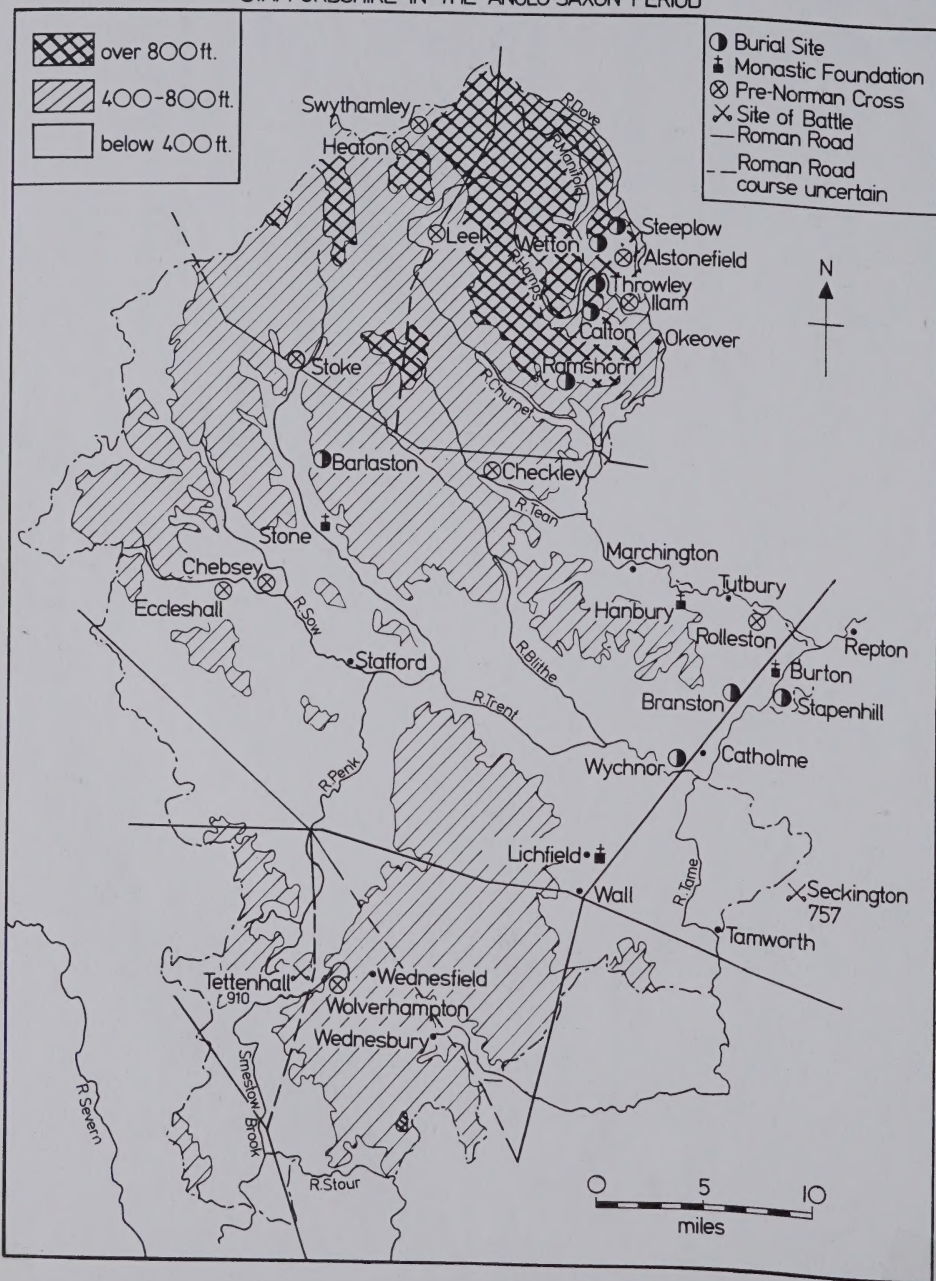
HARRISON AND SONS, ST. MARTIN'S LANE,

Printers in Ordinary to His Majesty.

1909.

Haib.
B44c
a
H. 12

STAFFORDSHIRE IN THE ANGLO-SAXON PERIOD



Alan de Hanley, who seems to be the leading landowner here in the subsidy roll of A.D. 1332, may be his descendant. Richard de Peshale, son of Adam de P. and husband of Joan de Chetwynd, the daughter of Reg. de Chetwynd (parson of Chetwynd and son of John de C.) had land here. In 47 Ed. III. (Vol. XIII, p. 99) Richard de Colclough sues Sir Ric. Peshale, kt., to warrant to him Hanley manor, which Wm. de Kynardsle claimed; Ric. de P. did not appear, but in 16 Ric. II. (Vol. XV, *Staff. Hist. Coll.*, p. 54) Joan, Sir Richard's widow, sued John Colclough for one-third of 6 messuages, 100 acres of land, 40 of pasture and 100s. rent in Hanley. Joan was an heiress on whom the manors of Weston, nr. Assheleye, and Chetewynde were entailed, and, failing her issue, then on her uncle, Wm., s. of Sir John de Chetwynde (Vol. XI, p. 187, 17 Ed. III.). In 22 Ric. II. she was again at law for this Hanley dower, but now as the wife of one William Lepe. In 29 Eliz. John Coyne had property here entailed on him and his heirs, as had also John Lovatt. The Colclough descent is traced (by Ward) down to the heiresses of Thomas Swinnerton of Butterton, the husband of Margaret Colclough. Sir Thomas Colclough held this manor in 1615. He removed to Ireland, and was buried at Tintern Abbey, co. Wexford, in A.D. 1642, aged sixty. "Colclough" is in "Oldcott," the name being still preserved in "Colclough Lane." As the site of Hanley manor survives in "Old Hall" (Ward). Shelton in 1857 was incorporated with Hanley, and now forms the borough of Hanley. The Duchy of Lancaster, Sir Tho. Boughey, A. Armitstead, Esqre., C. Homer, Esqre., C.E., and the N. Staffs. Railway Company are the chief landowners.

HANCHURCH.

Follows Handford in the survey, as "Hancece," the property of Pata, T.R.E. It also formed part of Ric. Forester's estate, estimated at one and a half virgates, with arable for two plough teams, one acre of meadow, 20 acres of wood, and now valued at 5s. Robert de Mere gave sole right of multure in Hanchurch to Trentham Priory c. A.D. 1230. In 1260 (Vol. IV, p. 144), Ric. le Brun, who had from the king the wardship of Robt., s. of Rob. de Mere, sued Ric. le Riche, and nine other villein tenants, here, for suit and service; three years later Iseult, widow of Rob., s. of Robt., sued Nich. de Mere for one-third of lands in Norton, Mere, and Aston; and one-third of 100s. rent in Hanchurch, etc. Wm. de Mere had a freehold here at this time. Vol. VI (p. 51) there was a plea whether Edmund, the king's son, Ralph de Burg, and eight others, had deprived Wm. de Mere of 12 messuages, 12 bovates, and 10 acres, besides four of pasture in Hanchurch. Vol. VI, 127, shows (11 Ed. I., A.D. 1283) Adam de Hanchurch charging Tho. de Mere, John, s. of Alexander de Mere, Thomas, s. of John, s. of Alexander de Mere, of breaking open the manor house door of Wm. de Mere, at Mere; and robbing it. 35 Ed. I., a fine between Wm. de Mere and Alexander de Norton (de Mere?) settled Hanchurch manor on Wm. de M. for his life, remainder to Hugh, his son; failing his issue, to John, s. of Nich. de Thyknes; then to Wm., s. of Robert Joke; failing

them, and their issues, to Wm. de Mere's right heirs. The Trentham Chartulary records an agreement between Edmund, Earl of Lancaster, and John de Swinnerton, on one side, and John Prior, of Trentham, and his tenants in Hanchurch, A.D. 1280, concerning their mutual claims here.

Thomas, s. of John Jorce, of Brekenock, Esqre., petitions A.D. 1454 (Vol. VII, N.S., p. 251), that being seised of the manors of Hanchurch, Blortum, and Kyvyell-hill in Staffs., John having arranged for settling them by trustees on Margaret, his wife, for her life, and then to Thomas, "the remaining two trustees, Thurston Collyer, and Tho. Bromwiche, declined to do so." The case was to be investigated by Roger Draycote, of Draycote, Esq., and John Wyot, of Stone; evidently the fine of 35 Ed. I., had brought Hanchurch to the Jorce family; for, previously, in A.D. 1330 (Vol. II, p. 326), Wm. Jorce, Lord of Hanchurch, gives the priory a messuage and serf of his (*nativum meum*) with all his belongings, to Trentham Priory; and five grants from him to the same follow, etc. But 29 H. VI. (Chetwynd's MSS.) Guy Forde, and John Ford, remit to, Humfrey Cotes and Thurstan Collyer, all rights they had in half Hanchurch manor. These Cotes were of Cotes near Swinnerton, and had lands in Milneese, Chorleton, and Eccleshall (1 H. VI.).

Apparently they had succeeded in keeping Thomas Jorce out of his father's estate here.

The other moiety, Delves land (Vol. VI, N.S., p. 111), John Brown recovered; consisting of one-half of 10 messuages, 500 acres of land, 100 of meadow, 20 of wood in Hanchurch, from Elena Delves, widow, the capital lady of the fee. This was a *collusive* suit (General W.). The Collyers were gradually acquiring land here (see fines, Eliz. and James I.).

In 37 Eliz. (Vol. XVI, p. 150) Richard Leveson, Esq., lets on lease for 99 years, to Julius Caesar, Dr. of Laws, considerably more than 1,000 acres; he paying £20 12s. 2d. yearly rent, after the decease of Sir Walter Leveson, Ric.'s father, in Trentham, Hanchurch, etc., on certain terms specified.

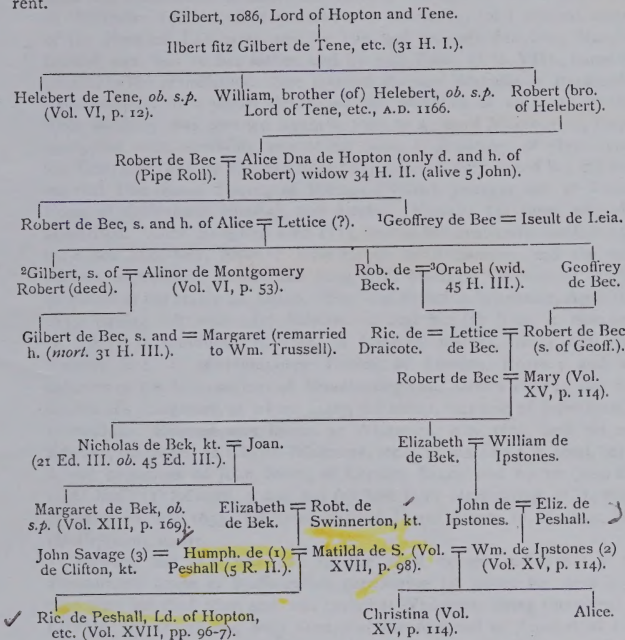
Hanchurch is now included in Trentham; an inclosure, surrounded by yew trees, still shows the site of the original church. The property is the Duke of Sutherland's.

SHELTON.

In King John's time the enclosed part of the Park (not a royal forest, as before stated) adjoining N.-Castle, was called the "Haye of Clive," and the Custos had land in Shelton by this serjeantry (Vol. I, p. 98). Alviat, a Saxon, held it, T.R.E., it was a waste tainland in 1086, with arable for two plough teams. Eyton observes, "It probably remained in the Crown till Henry II.'s time." In A.D. 1211 William Murel held a virgate here. This William Murel, or William Fitz-Muriel, left a widow, Alice (Vol. IV, p. 26), who, in A.D. 1223, sues William FitzWilliam, her son probably, for one-third virgate of land in Aspele, and for one-third of a messuage and carucate of land in N.-Castle (Shelton?) as her dower, and Thomas FitzMuriel for one-third of three messuages and four acres in N.-Castle. William and Thomas denied her right, because her husband, William Muriel and herself had entered the

Sir Robert Beke, kt. (son of Robt., son to Leticia before mentioned), who had issue another Robert, father to Sir Nic.

sisters; a Huntbach deed (lost in the fire at Wrottesley) showed Gilbert de Tene living, c. A.D. 1150, with two surviving sons, William and Robert, the former being the Liber Niger owner, the latter the father of Alice, who married Rob. de Beck. By fine of 7 R. I., the Prior of Kenilworth remitted to Alice de Hopton and her son and heir, Robert, all his claim to the advowson of Checkley, for a rent of 20s. In 22 H. III., another prior complains that Alice's grandson, another Robt. de Bek, had deprived the Priory of this rent.



¹ Geoffrey de Bec, husband of Iseult de Leia, was apparently a cleric; whether he was the rector of Checkley, or not, appears doubtful. I think he was.

² The trial of 21 Ed. I., Vol. VI, p. 225, for presentation to Hopton Church, calls Gilbert de Bek (I) son of Alice, which is obviously wrong (*v.* deed).

³ Orabel had a second husband, a Draycote, and a third, William Wyther (Vol. VII, p. 31).

de Beke, kt., who, 43 Ed. III., was certified to hold two kts. fees in Hopton and Teane, with Free-Warren in all his demesne lands there, being then likewise possess of ye manors of Dover and Repindon, Merthon and Mounselon, co. Derb. and Salop, together with 100 acres of land in Tillington, and several burgages in Stafford, most of which descended to Helena,¹ his daughter and heir, who, by marrying Sir Robt. de Swinnerton of Swinnerton, kt., brought a faire additional revenue to that ancient family, which was again transferred to ye Peshalls in ye next generation by Maud Swynerton, their only daughter and heir, first ye wife of Humphrey, third son to Sir Thomas Peshall, kt. (by whom she had issue Sir Ric. Peshall, father to Sir Humphrey), and after married to Sir John Savage of Clifton, co. Cestr., kt., and by him mother to another Sir John: betwixt which last Sir John and Sir Humph. Peshall, there arose great suits and conditions about the Beke lands, which were at last so compounded that Hopton (*inter alia*) fell to Sir Humphrey's allotment; from whom it came by descent (as appears by ye following pedigree) to Sir Hugh Peshall, kt., who gave it in marriage with Catherine his daughter and heir, to Sir John

The *Testa de Nevil* states that the heir of Gilbert de Beck holds two fees in Hopton and Tene of the de Stafford Barony. When in Kirkby's quest (c. 1285) Ric. de Draicote is returned as holding a fee in Hopton of Nicholas de Stafford, it was through his wife Lettice and by the courtesy of England only. A Plea of 20 Ed. I. (Vol. VI, p. 209) throws much light on the Beck pedigree, which is continued by the Plea Roll of 2 H. IV. (Vol. XV, p. 114), and those of 4 H. IV. (Vol. XVI, p. 40), and (Vol. XVII, pp. 96-8) of 2 H. VI., which are too lengthy for insertion here, though interesting in enabling us to trace the family history and to understand the difficulties which beset heiresses in those days.

Chetwynd has not mentioned the fight at Hopton Heath, March 19th, 1643, between the Royalists under the Earl of Northampton and the Parliament's forces led by Sir Wm. Brereton and Sir John Gell. In spite of considerable inequality of numbers victory fell to the former, but although 200 prisoners were taken and eight pieces of cannon, it was far too dearly purchased by the Earl's death, who was slain fighting bravely, and refusing quarter, having had his horse shot under him in a second charge. The Earl of Shrewsbury is lord of the manor.

¹ Elizabeth (?) *v.* Vol. VII, pp. 2, 24, etc.

lordships of Buckenhall, and Bidulph; the rents and services of Thomas de Underwood, Rob de Bidulph, Tho. le Bowyer, and Ric de Greenway, with certain lands, tenements, rents and services, in Annesly, near Burton, were, upon ye partition of his estate then made, allotted to ye said James Boghay in right of

and Christopher B. of Shelton, Staffs., who had a s. and h., Humphrey B., living 1549, ancestor of the Shelton branch.

Humphrey Boghay (altr. Boughey, which spelling they now began to use), died A.D. 1539; his eldest s. and h. was Robert B., married to Anne, d. of Ric. Sandford, of Sandford (Shropshire): he had an only d. Alice, Lady of Whitmore and the other manors; who married (1) John Ireland, Esqre., of the Hutt, co. Lancaster, and by him had an only daughter, Margaret Ireland, sole heir to her father, and by Inq. P.M., 37 H. VIII., found her general to her grandfather. She married Richard Wakelin, of Backfordby, Leicestershire, from whom descended the Wakelins of Tatenhill (Staffs.), Alice Boughey was married again in 1545, to Edward Mainwaring, Esqre., ninth, but third surviving, son of Sir John Mainwaring, of Over-Peover (co. Cestr.), kt., and by him had issue: (1) Edward, only s. and h.; (2) Anne married Tho. Roos, Esqre., of Weston (Notts.), younger son of Francis Roos, of Swinhead (Staffs.), and Laxton (Notts.); (3) Jane, who died unmarried. Alice Boughey died 1573, and on her husband's death in 1586, their son and heir, Edward Mainwaring, of Whitmore, and the other manors, succeeded; he married Jane, d. of Matthew Cradock, of Stafford merchant of the staple at Calais. She was buried at Whitmore, April 16th, 1635, having left issue: (1) Edward, s. and h.; (2) John, a merchant, ob. s.p.; (3) Randolph, b. 1588, of London, mercer, living 1634, who married Eliz., d. of Humphrey Hawes, of London, Esqre.; and was ancestor of the Mainwarings of Bromborough and Oteley Park; there were besides ten daughters, of whom Mary, the eldest, was wife of John Brett, of Dimesdale. Edward was buried at Whitmore, A.D. 1604, and his son, Edward, succeeded as lord of Whitmore, etc.; he married A.D. 1600, Sarah, d. and co-heiress of John Stone, of London, Esqre., and by her (who died 1648) had: (1) Edward, s. and h.; (2) Rev. John Mainwaring, D.D., rector of Stoke in A.D. 1633; (3) Jane, married James Abney of Masham Hall (Derbyshire), Esqre.

Edward, the heir, was one of the most devoted adherents of the Parliament's cause in Staffordshire, garrisoning his house for them in the civil war: he died 1647, and was buried at Whitmore, being succeeded by Edward, his eldest son, born 1602, and the husband of Anne, d. of Geo. Lomax, of Clifton (Notts.), Esqre., by whom he had six sons and five daughters; of these the eldest son, Edward, Lord of Whitmore, etc., married Elizabeth, d. of Thomas Heneage, of Battersea, Esqre., by whom he had two sons and seven daughters; four of these died in infancy, leaving Bridget, Anne, and Elizabeth survivors.

his wife: all which, after divers generations, passed away in marriage with a daughter and heir to Edw. Mainwaring, third brother of Sir Randolph Mainwaring, of Pever, co. Cestr., kt., from whence they are descended to Edw. Mainwaring, now of Whitmore, Esqre.

Edward Mainwaring married a second time to Bridget, d. of Sir Thomas Trollope, of Casewick (Lincolnshire), Bart., having by her: (1) Edward, s. and h.; (2) Mary; (3) Bridget. He served as High Sheriff in 1679, and was buried at Whitmore, 1704. The Edward who next inherited was also married twice: (1) Jemima, d. of Edmund Pye, M.D., of Faringdon, Berks, by whom he had issue: (1) Edward, s. and h.; (2) Rev. Henry, M.A., rector of Etwell (co. Derby), besides six other sons, and one daughter. His second wife, Martha, d. and coheirress of Wm. Lloyd, of Halton (co. Flint), Esqre., and widow of Sir Tho. Mainwaring, of Pever, had no children.

Edward of Whitmore, born 1709, succeeded, who by his wife, Sarah, d. and coheirress of Wm. Bunbury, Attorney-General for Cheshire (second son of Sir Henry Bunbury), had (1) Edward, s. and h., and (2) Wm., of London, merchant. On his death in 1795, aged 85, his eldest son, Edward, born in 1736, inherited Whitmore, etc. He had no children by Anne, his wife, d. of Sir Philip Touchet Chetwode, Bart., and himself died in A.D. 1825.

Whitmore Hall, standing below the church and village, in a large park, has a fine avenue of trees. It is occupied by Michael Daintry Hollins, Esqre., D.L. Mrs. Cavenagh, the lady of the manor, and Ralph Sneyd, Esqre., of Keele, were recently the principal landowners. The Rectory is in the gift of F. R. Mainwaring, Esqre. (Directory).

MADELEY.

About two miles westward from Sow there lyeth the manor of Madeley (under Lime) ye ancient domains of ye Barons of Stafford.¹

MADELEY.

King Eadgar's grant to Bishop Athelwold of Winchester, A.D. 975, is probably the earliest mention of Great Madeley. It conveyed three hides free of all services, save the well-known "trinoda necessitas" (expeditione pontis, arcisve restauratione) and gives the following limits:

¹ Bar. Ang., Vol. I, p. 153

Springs

(stand 1E1 = 1273)

- ① Robert le Champion of Straton m Agnes ~~widow~~ of Sir Robert de Straton.
- ② William le Champion, Jr (his nephew) m Alice, eldest dau of the 6th baroness
of Straton 183 E3) F Straton
- ③ Thomas le Champion m one of the daughters of Sir John Martin of Vernon
(1325)
- ④ Theinck (Catherine) Choin m. Geoffrey de Congreve Lord of Straton
45 E 116) F of Straton Viscount of HARPUR
(Catherine Howard)
- ⑤ Richard Congreve of Straton m Agnes, dau. John Hargreaves
116 (1422 + 1461)
- ⑥ Ralph Congreve of Straton m Agnes, daughter EDESWICK
- ⑦ John Congreve " m. Dorothy dau of Sir John Gifford
(she m. 21936 Francis Stinky)
- ⑧ Francis Congreve " m. Elizabeth dau of John Fiske of
Bressard
- ⑨ Thomas " " m Elizabeth, dau of John Fiske of
Living 1614 (dau of Fiske) of Bressard

HP
240
240
240

①

Best of Charles of Saxe-Altenburg (1823-1893) (2nd of 12 children of 2nd Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

②

William I (1797-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

③

Theresa (1805-1864) (1st Duchess of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

④

Richard (1805-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

⑤

Ralph (1805-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

⑥

John (1805-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

⑦

Theresa (1805-1864) (1st Duchess of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

⑧

Richard (1805-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

⑨

Ralph (1805-1864) (1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg) (1st of 12 children of 1st Duke of Saxe-Altenburg)

A Genealogical Dictionary of the First

Clippings

Founders of American Families - Meredith Cole p. 244

PLUM, PLUMB, PLUME

JOHN Dorchester (Mass.) 1635, Wethersfield 1636, Branford 1644. d. Branford July 1648. Merchant. Town clerk. Deputy. Coat of arms enrolled 391. Plumbs, 2nd ed., 1893; McArthur-Barnes 1964.

(Not sure this man was a relative, though our John was also living in Dorchester) He was, however, a distant cousin of our Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds of Topsfield-MA Bay Colony.

Is it possible he was father of our John Plum? Since our John was so early & his only son killed by the Indians, the genealogies may ignore him.

MARK, Ipswich, in 1634 was call. 50 yrs. old, freem. 2 May 1638, d. 28 Apr. 1659. By Joanna, wh. d. 29 Apr. 1660, he left Susanna, w. of John Ayres, or Ayers; Abigail, w. of Robert Pierce, or Pearce; Priscilla, w. of John Warner; and gr. childr. by d. Mary, first w. of Edward Chapman, wh. d. bef. her f. †† *SAMUEL, Ipswich, a gent. of ancient fam. at Yeldham in Co. Essex, where, Morant tells us, he was a Cursitor in the Chancery, and he m. a. 1620, Deborah Harlakenden, of the old gentry of Earl's Colne, prob. sis. of Roger, and had ten ch. bef. com. over to us in 1637. He owned an est. in the adjae. parish of Toppesfield, and prob. left some ch. certain. John, at home; but we may not exact. discern the names of all he brot. tho. of William, Harlakenden, and Samuel, perhaps Dorothy, and Eliz. only of the ds. can we be justifi. in guess. that they accomp. the f. Being adm. freem. Mar. 1638, he was rep. at the first succeed. Gen. Ct. and very oft. aft. m. Martha Epes, a wid. from Co. Kent, prob. had by her Martha, Ruth, and Priscilla, perhaps 2d Samuel; but by some rec. it appears, that ano. w. Dorothy was liv. 1645; yet she may have been w. of his first s. Samuel, for, strange as it seems, he had two Samuels then liv. Farmer gives him other ds. Susanna, and Dorothy, wh. m. he says, Joseph Jacobs; and Mary, wh. m. Peter Duncan. But of the last we find that she was nam. Epes bef. m. so d. of his w.'s former h. and the two others were ch. of his s. William, prob. tho. it is said a d. Dorothy had early m. Rev. Thomas Harrison, wh. came from Virg. 1648. In 1643 he was chos. an Assist. and so serv. until 1673, when Leverett being rais. to be Gov. he was made success. as Dept. Gov. in wh. place he d. 12 Oct. 1678, during the sess. of the Gen. Ct. His wid. Rebecca d. 21 July 1695, in her 79th yr. She was third, possib. fourth w. had been wid. of Rev. William Worcester, and bef. him, of John Hall, and bef. him, of Henry Byley. She was so happy in find. hs. that wh. was her f. has not been told. But one of his ws. was not (as frequent. has been boasted), a d. of the first Gov. Winthrop, wh. had only one of four ds. that outliv. two yrs. and she m. Samuel Dudley. The mistake arose from the use of the word sis. S. in the letter 30 Sept. 1648, of first Winthrop to his s. John wh. had been a mem. of the ch. at Ipswich, and may refer only to Christian relat. Under Truesdale will be found correct. of an error of Farmer aris. in the same way. Yet possib. the sec. w. of S. was a d. of Col. Edward Reed of Essex Eng. and so sis. of the sec. w. of the younger John Winth. Of his ds. Eliz. m. 20 May 1644, Daniel Epes, and d. 7 May 1685, aged 60. Dorothy m. as above; Martha m. first John Denison, and next Richard Martyn of Portsmouth; Ruth m. 1659, Rev. John Emerson of Gloucester; and Priscilla m. Capt. Thomas Baker of Topsfield. SAMUEL, Ipswich, s. of the preced. b. in Eng. d. prob. unm. in his will of 22 Nov.

1653, nam. four brs. and three unm. sis. beside
SAMUEL, Salem, s. of John, m. 14 Apr. 1662. Eliz.
art. of Topsfield, had Eliz. b. 12 July 1663. SA-
mon. Samuel, b. on this side of the water, prob. ye
of his br. Samuel, was of H. C. 1656, and the sol
prob. unm. for in his will, 18 Dec. 1668, he ment. no
for m. sis. viz. Eliz. Martha, Ruth, and Mary, v
wh. was not ch. of his f. but of mo. by a former h.
m. Perhaps this last nam. sustains my conject. th
ame mo. with her. SAMUEL, Boxford 1680, may
Mon. Samuel. THOMAS, Braintree, had Joan, b. 8 M
all, 8 Nov. 1640, wh. d. 30 May 1642. THOMAS
WILLIAM, Ipswich 1635, is perhaps the same wh. wa
w. Haverhill and Bradford, of Haverhill 1659.
WILLIAM, Concord 1636, had, by w. Sarah, wh. was
Judith, wh. m. John Barker; and Sarah, wh. m. Jo
stable 1645, and rem. perhaps, says Farmer, to
1650. WILLIAM, Woburn, m. 18 Jan. 1641. Ju
Wayard, had Sarah, b. 28 July 1644; Judith, 3 M
1647; Caleb, 11 Oct. 1649; William, 15 Apr.
1652; Benjamin, 18 Mar. 1654; Tabitha, 20
y; Joshua, d. soon; James, 1 Nov. 1658, d. soon
1659; and Huldah, 20 Nov. 1660; was freem. 1670
8 Jan. 1690; but he had d. 7 June 1672. * W
mon. Samuel, b. in Eng. m. Mary, d. of Jonathan Wa
anna, b. 3 Jan. 1669; Dorothy, 21 Oct. 1670; M
and Eliz. 20 July 1678; and d. next yr. was bur. 27
gr. jury 1659, and again 1662, freem. 1670, as F
rob. that man was of Woburn; then prob. overseeing
that region, and was rep. 1676 for Wells, but no do
bef. had come back to Ipswich, and went not mor
assoc. with Danforth and others to hold a county C
Joseph Jacobs; and Eliz. m. an Allen.
TABOR, or TABER, * PHILIP, Watertown, in 163
d. the galley for secur. of the harbour, and was ma
that yr. yet was one of the first sett. at Yarmouth
first assemb. of Plym. Col. in 1639 and 40 for Y.
7, shows. But he was aft. at the Vineyard, and
New London and in 1656 I find him among the free
and not long aft. at Providence, of wh. he was r
at Tiverton. Prob. he was progenit. of a num
how; but he had John, bapt. at Barnstable, 8 N

THE FOLLOWING IS FOR RESEARCH
PURPOSES ONLY, IN CASE SOME
CONNECTION SHOWS UP LATER!

From: A Roll of Arms, NEHGR Oct 1953,
pages 267-8

391.

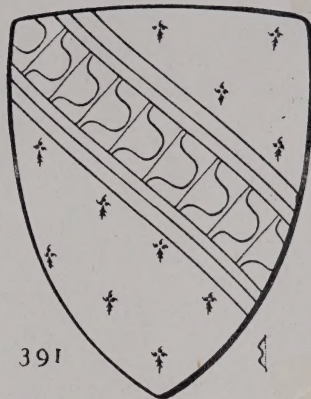
PLUMB, John, 1594-1648

of Great Yeldham, Essex, England;
of Dorchester, MA and of Wethers-
field & Branford, CT

Arms : Ermine a bend vairy gold
& gules cortised vert.

Crest: A sitting talbot gules,
collar and line gold.

Motto: Vere vada.



The John Plumb who used the above arms apparently came to Dorchester Massachusetts Bay Colony about the same time as our John Plumb (Plum) and was of an appropriate age to have been his father or uncle, but I have seen nothing in writing to connect them.

Our John Plumb (Plum) stayed in Dorchester until late in life, when he moved to Attleboro. Apparently he had only two children, John Jr. who was killed in King Philip's War, leaving no descendants to carry on the Plum family name (and thus no Plumb genealogy of his line!) and a daughter Mercy who married our Thomas Chub, Jr.

Incidentally, the crest is the same and the arms almost the same as those of Elizabeth Plumb (Plumme) of Great Yeldham, Essex, mother of Deputy Governor Samuel Symonds of Mass. Bay Colony, our ancestor in the Averill Lines. It seems almost certain John and Elizabeth Plumb were related in some way.

